

BT 810 .E3 1831

Edwards, Jonathan, 1703-  
1758.

An inquiry into the modern  
prevailing notions















AN  
INQUIRY

INTO THE

MODERN PREVAILING NOTIONS

RESPECTING THAT

FREEDOM OF WILL

WHICH IS SUPPOSED TO BE ESSENTIAL TO

MORAL AGENCY, VIRTUE AND VICE, REWARD AND  
PUNISHMENT, PRAISE AND BLAME.

✓  
BY JONATHAN EDWARDS, A.M.

—  
A NEW EDITION:

WITH

AN INTRODUCTORY ESSAY,

BY THE

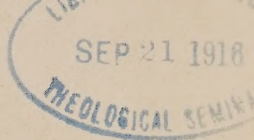
AUTHOR OF "NATURAL HISTORY OF ENTHUSIASM."

(Isaac Taylor)

—  
LONDON:

JAMES DUNCAN, 37, PATERNOSTER ROW.

—  
M.DCCC.XXXI.



THE END.

LONDON:

J. MOVES, TOOK'S COURT, CHANCERY LANE.



## PREFACE.

---

MANY find much fault with the calling professing Christians, that differ one from another in some matters of opinion, by distinct *names*; especially calling them by the names of particular men, who have distinguished themselves as maintainers and promoters of those opinions: as the calling some professing Christians Arminians, from Arminius; others Arians, from Arius; others Socinians, from Socinus, and the like. They think it unjust in itself; as it seems to suppose and suggest, that the persons marked out by these names received those doctrines which they entertain, out of regard *to*, and reliance *on*, those men after whom they are named, as though they made them their rule; in the same manner as the followers of Christ are called Christians, after his name, whom they regard and depend upon as their great head and rule. Whereas, this is an unjust and groundless imputation on those that go under the fore-mentioned denominations. Thus (say they) there is not the

least ground to suppose, that the chief divines who embrace the scheme of doctrine which is, by many, called Arminianism, believe it the more, because Arminius believed it: and that there is no reason to think any other, than that they sincerely and impartially study the holy Scriptures, and inquire after the mind of Christ, with as much judgment and sincerity as any of those that call them by these names; that they seek after truth, and are not careful whether they think exactly as Arminius did; yea, that in some things they actually differ from him. This practice is also esteemed actually injurious on this account, that it is supposed naturally to lead the multitude to imagine the difference between persons thus named and others to be greater than it is; yea, as though it were so great, that they must be, as it were, another species of beings. And they object against it as arising from an uncharitable, narrow, contracted spirit, which, they say, commonly inclines persons to confine all that is good to themselves and their own party, and to make a wide distinction between themselves and others, and stigmatise those that differ from them with odious names. They say, moreover, that the keeping up such a distinction of names has a direct tendency to uphold distance and disaffection, and keep alive



mutual hatred among Christians, who ought all to be united in friendship and charity, however they cannot in all things think alike.

I confess, these things are very plausible. And I will not deny, that there are some unhappy consequences of this distinction of names, and that men's infirmities and evil dispositions often make an ill improvement of it. But yet I humbly conceive these objections are carried far beyond reason. The generality of mankind are disposed enough, and a great deal too much, to uncharitableness, and to be censorious and bitter towards those that differ from them in religious opinions; which evil temper of mind will take occasion to exert itself from many things in themselves innocent, useful, and necessary. But yet there is no necessity to suppose, that the thus distinguishing persons of different opinions by different names, arises mainly from an uncharitable spirit. It may arise from the disposition there is in mankind (whom God has distinguished with an ability and inclination for speech) to improve the benefit of language, in the proper use and design of names, given to things which they have often occasion to speak of, or signify their minds about; which is to enable them to express their ideas with ease and expedition, without

being encumbered with an obscure and difficult circumlocution. And the thus distinguishing persons of different opinions in religious matters may not imply, nor infer, any more than that there is a difference, and that the difference is such as we find we have often occasion to take notice of, and make mention of. That which we have frequent occasion to speak of (whatever it be that gives the occasion), this wants a name: and it is always a defect in language, in such cases, to be obliged to make use of a description instead of a name. Thus we have often occasion to speak of those who are the descendants of the ancient inhabitants of France, who were subjects or heads of the government of that land, and spake the language peculiar to it; in distinction from the descendants of the inhabitants of Spain, who belonged to that community, and spake the language of that country. And therefore we find the great need of distinct names to signify these different sorts of people, and the great convenience of those distinguishing words, *French* and *Spaniards*; by which the signification of our minds is quick and easy, and our speech is delivered from the burden of a continual reiteration of diffuse descriptions, with which it must otherwise be embarrassed.

That the difference of the opinions of those who, in their general scheme of divinity, agree with these two noted men, Calvin and Arminius, is a thing there is often occasion to speak of, is what the practice of the latter itself confesses; who are often, in their discourses and writings, taking notice of the supposed absurd and pernicious opinions of the former sort. And therefore the making use of different names in this case cannot reasonably be objected against, or condemned, as a thing which must come from so bad a cause as they assign. It is easy to be accounted for, without supposing it to arise from any other source than the exigence and natural tendency of the state of things; considering the faculty and disposition God has given to mankind, to express things which they have frequent occasion to mention, by certain distinguishing names. It is an effect that is similar to what we see arise, in innumerable cases which are parallel, where the cause is not at all blameworthy.

Nevertheless, at first, I had thoughts of carefully avoiding the use of the appellation *Arminian* in this treatise. But I soon found I should be put to great difficulty by it; and that my discourse would be so encumbered with an often-repeated circumlocution, instead of a name,



which would express the thing intended as well and better, that I altered my purpose. And therefore I must ask the excuse of such as are apt to be offended with things of this nature, that I have so freely used the term *Arminian* in the following discourse. I profess it to be without any design to stigmatise persons of any sort with a name of reproach, or at all to make them appear more odious. If, when I had occasion to speak of those divines who are commonly called by this name, I had, instead of styling them Arminians, called them *these men*, as Dr. Whitby does Calvinistic divines; it probably would not have been taken any better, or thought to shew a better temper or more good manners. I have done as I would be done by in this matter. However, the term *Calvinistic* is, in these days, among most, a term of greater reproach than the term *Arminian*; yet I should not take it at all amiss to be called a Calvinist, for distinction's sake: though I utterly disclaim a dependence on Calvin, or believing the doctrines which I hold, because he believed and taught them; and cannot justly be charged with believing in every thing just as he taught.

But, lest I should really be an occasion of injury to some persons, I would here give notice, that though I generally speak

of that doctrine, concerning free will and moral agency, which I oppose, as an Arminian doctrine ; yet I would not be understood as asserting, that every divine or author whom I have occasion to mention as maintaining that doctrine, was properly an Arminian, or one of that sort which is commonly called by that name. Some of them went far beyond the Arminians ; and I would by no means charge Arminians in general with all the corrupt doctrine which these maintained. Thus, for instance, it would be very injurious, if I should rank Arminian divines in general, with such authors as Mr. Chubb. I doubt not, many of them have some of his doctrines in abhorrence ; though he agrees, for the most part, with Arminians in his notion of the freedom of the will. And, on the other hand, though I suppose this notion to be a leading article in the Arminian scheme, that which, if pursued in its consequences, will truly infer, or naturally lead to all the rest ; yet I do not charge all that have held this doctrine with being Arminians. For whatever may be the consequences of the doctrine really, yet some that hold this doctrine may not own nor see these consequences ; and it would be unjust, in many instances, to charge every author with believing and maintaining all the real consequences of his avowed doctrines. And I

desire it may be particularly noted, that though I have occasion, in the following discourse, often to mention the author of the book, entitled "An Essay on the Freedom of the Will in God and the Creature," as holding that notion of freedom of will which I oppose; yet I do not mean to call him an Arminian: however, in that doctrine he agrees with Arminians, and departs from the current and general opinion of Calvinists. If the author of that Essay be the same as it is commonly ascribed to, he, doubtless, was not one that ought to bear that name. But however good a divine he was in many respects, yet that particular Arminian doctrine which he maintained is never the better for being held by such an one, nor is there less need of opposing it on that account; but rather is there the more need of it; as it will be likely to have the more pernicious influence, for being taught by a divine of his name and character; supposing the doctrine to be wrong, and in itself to be of an ill tendency.

I have nothing further to say by way of preface, but only to bespeak the reader's candour, and calm attention to what I have written. The subject is of such importance as to *demand* attention, and the most thorough consideration. Of all kinds of knowledge that we can ever obtain, the knowledge of God, and the knowledge of

ourselves, are the most important. As religion is the great business, for which we are created, and on which our happiness depends; and as religion consists in an intercourse between ourselves and our Maker, and so has its foundation in God's nature and ours, and in the relation that God and we stand in to each other; therefore a true knowledge of both must be needful, in order to true religion. But the knowledge of ourselves consists chiefly in right apprehensions concerning those two chief faculties of our nature, the *understanding* and *will*. Both are very important; yet the science of the latter must be confessed to be of greatest moment; inasmuch as all virtue and religion have their seat more immediately in the will, consisting more especially in right acts and habits of this faculty. And the grand question about the freedom of the will, is the main point that belongs to the science of the will. Therefore, I say, the importance of this subject greatly *demand*s the attention of Christians, and especially of divines. But as to my manner of handling the subject, I will be far from presuming to say, that it is such as *demand*s the attention of the reader to what I have written. I am ready to own that in this matter I depend on the reader's *courtesy*. But only thus far I may have some colour for putting in a *claim*; that if



the reader be disposed to pass his censure on what I have written, I may be fully and patiently heard, and well attended to, before I am condemned. However, this is what I would humbly *ask* of my readers ; together with the prayers of all sincere lovers of truth, that I may have much of that Spirit which Christ promised his disciples, which guides into all truth : and that the blessed and powerful influences of this Spirit would make truth victorious in the world.

# CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
INTRODUCTORY ESSAY .....	xvii
Notes.....	CXXX

## PART I.

WHEREIN ARE EXPLAINED VARIOUS TERMS AND THINGS  
BELONGING TO THE SUBJECT OF THE ENSUING DIS-  
COURSE.

SECT. I.—Concerning the Nature of the Will .....	Page 1
SECT. II.—Concerning the Determination of the Will ...	6
SECT. III.—Concerning the Meaning of the Terms Necessity, Impossibility, Inability, &c. and of Contingence.....	19
SECT. IV.—Of the Distinction of Natural and Moral Neces- sity and Inability .....	30
SECT. V.—Concerning the Notion of Liberty and of Moral Agency .....	40

## PART II.

WHEREIN IT IS CONSIDERED, WHETHER THERE IS OR CAN  
BE ANY SUCH SORT OF FREEDOM OF WILL AS THAT  
WHEREIN ARMINIANS PLACE THE ESSENCE OF THE  
LIBERTY OF ALL MORAL AGENTS; AND WHETHER ANY  
SUCH THING EVER WAS OR CAN BE CONCEIVED OF.

SECT. I.—Shewing the manifest Inconsistence of the Armin- ian Notion of Liberty of Will consisting in the Will's self- determining Power .....	46
SECT. II.—Several supposed ways of evading the foregoing Reasoning considered .....	52
SECT. III.—Whether any Event whatsoever, and Volition in particular, can come to pass without a Cause of its Ex- istence .....	59
SECT. IV.—Whether Volition can arise without a Cause, through the Activity of the Nature of the Soul .....	68

SECT. V.—Shewing that if the Things asserted in these Evasions should be supposed to be true, they are altogether impertinent, and cannot help the Cause of Arminian Liberty; and how, this being the state of the case, Arminian Writers are obliged to talk inconsistently.....	Page 74
SECT. VI.—Concerning the Will's determining in things which are perfectly indifferent in the view of the Mind..	80
SECT. VII.—Concerning the Notion of Liberty of Will consisting in Indifference .....	91
SECT. VIII.—Concerning the supposed Liberty of the Will, as opposite to all Necessity .....	105
SECT. IX.—Of the Connexion of the Acts of the Will with the Dictates of the Understanding.....	110
SECT. X.—Volition necessarily connected with the Influence of Motives. With particular Observation of the great Inconsistence of Mr. Chubb's Assertions and Reasonings about the Freedom of the Will .....	121
SECT. XI.—The Evidence of God's certain Foreknowledge of the Volitions of Moral Agents .....	142
SECT. XII.—God's certain Foreknowledge of the future Volitions of Moral Agents inconsistent with such a Contingence of those Volitions as is without all Necessity; and infers a Necessity of Volition, as much as an absolute Decree.....	170
SECT. XIII.—Whether we suppose the Volitions of moral Agents to be connected with any thing antecedent or not, yet they must be necessary, in such a sense as to overthrow Arminian Liberty .....	189

### PART III.

WHEREIN IS INQUIRED WHETHER ANY SUCH LIBERTY OF WILL AS ARMINIANS HOLD BE NECESSARY TO MORAL AGENCY, VIRTUE AND VICE, PRAISE AND DISPRAISE, &c.

SECT. I.—God's moral Excellency necessary, yet virtuous and praiseworthy .....	195
SECT. II.—The Acts of the Will of the human Soul of Jesus Christ necessarily holy, yet virtuous, praiseworthy, rewardable, &c. ....	200

## CONTENTS.

SECT. III.—The Case of such as are given up of God to and of fallen Man in general, proves moral Necessity and Inability to be consistent with Blameworthiness. . . . .	Page 221
SECT. IV.—Command and Obligation to Obedience con- sistent with moral Inability to obey . . . . .	231
SECT. V.—That Sincerity of Desires and Endeavours, which is supposed to excuse in the Non-performance of Things in themselves good, particularly considered . . . . .	246
SECT. VI.—Liberty of Indifference, not only not necessary to Virtue, but utterly inconsistent with it; and all, either virtuous or vicious Habits or Inclinations, inconsistent with Arminian Notions of Liberty and moral Agency. . . . .	257
SECT. VII.—Arminian Notions of moral Agency inconsistent with all Influence of Motive and Inducement, in either virtuous or vicious Actions . . . . .	269

## PART IV.

WHEREIN THE CHIEF GROUNDS OF THE REASONINGS OF  
ARMINIANS, IN SUPPORT AND DEFENCE OF THEIR  
NOTIONS OF LIBERTY, MORAL AGENCY, &c. AND  
AGAINST THE OPPOSITE DOCTRINE, ARE CONSIDERED.

SECT. I.—The Essence of the Virtue and Vice of the Dis- positions of the Heart, and Acts of the Will, lies not in their Causes, but their Nature . . . . .	278
SECT. II.—The Falseness and Inconsistence of that meta- physical Notion of Action and Agency which seems to be generally entertained by the Defenders of the fore-men- tioned Notions of Liberty, moral Agency, &c. . . . .	287
SECT. III.—The Reasons why some think it contrary to common Sense, to suppose Things which are necessary, to be worthy of either Praise or Blame . . . . .	298
SECT. IV.—It is agreeable to common Sense, and the natural Notions of Mankind, to suppose moral Necessity to be consistent with Praise and Blame, Reward and Punish- ment . . . . .	307
SECT. V.—Concerning those Objections, that this Scheme of Necessity renders all Means and Endeavours for the avoid- ing of Sin, or the obtaining Virtue and Holiness, vain and to no purpose; and that it makes Men no more than mere Machines in affairs of Morality and Religion . . . . .	319



SECT. VI.—Concerning that Objection against the Doctrine which has been maintained, that it agrees with the Stoical Doctrine of Fate, and the Opinion of Mr. Hobbes. . . . .	Page 329
SECT. VII.—Concerning the Necessity of the Divine Will . . . . .	333
SECT. VIII.—Some further Objections against the moral Necessity of God's Volitions considered . . . . .	346
SECT. IX.—Concerning that Objection against the Doctrine which has been maintained, that it makes God the Author of Sin . . . . .	365
SECT. X.—Concerning Sin's first Entrance into the World	389
SECT. XI.—Of a supposed Inconsistence of these Principles with God's moral Character . . . . .	392
SECT. XII.—Of a supposed Tendency of these Principles to Atheism and Licentiousness . . . . .	399
SECT. XIII.—Concerning that Objection against the Reasoning by which the Calvinistic Doctrine is supported, that it is metaphysical and abstruse . . . . .	404

## CONCLUSION.

What Treatment this Discourse may probably meet with from some Persons . . . . .	414
Consequences concerning several Calvinistic Doctrines; such as a universal, decisive Providence . . . . .	416
The total Depravity and Corruption of Man's Nature ..	417
Efficacious Grace . . . . .	418
A universal and absolute Decree; and absolute, eternal, personal Election . . . . .	420
Particular Redemption . . . . .	422
Perseverance of Saints . . . . .	423
Concerning the Treatment which Calvinistic Writers and Divines have met with . . . . .	425
The unhappiness of the Change lately in many Protestant Countries . . . . .	426
The Boldness of some Writers . . . . .	427
The excellent Wisdom appearing in the holy Scriptures	428

## INTRODUCTORY ESSAY.

---

### SECTION I.

IF it be the prerogative of philosophical writings to command a more grave attention, and to challenge a higher rank in literature than is accorded to works of imagination, it is also their fate more often to fall into oblivion; or even if remembered and preserved, to be superseded, and to forfeit the honours they once and long enjoyed as canons of science. The reason of this difference is obvious; for in the one class of compositions, an end is proposed which may be attained in a thousand ways, and in the pursuit of which genius ensures its own success. But in the other class, where the discovery of truth is the single object, success depends not merely upon zeal and ability, but upon the good fortune also which may lead the inquirer upon the one only track amid innumerable devious paths.

The mass of ancient literature that has reached modern times, consists in great part of those products of mind, the immortality of which has not at all resulted from their value as vehicles of truth: yet are they still perused with delight—are handed down as inestimable treasures from age to age—pass in the course of civilisation from clime to clime—and (go

where they may) awaken always, in every cultured mind, the liveliest emotions of pleasure. Along with the poetry, the oratory, and the histories of a bright and distant time, we have received also, in no small quantity, the philosophy of the same era. Yet is it a fact, that of this prodigious assemblage, a single small treatise\* alone retains its place and office as a source of knowledge, or is actually extant as an efficient instrument of instruction. Nevertheless, it is far from being true that Pindar, Hesiod, and Homer, or that Anacreon, Sophocles, and Aristophanes, were men of a higher order of intellect than those philosophers, their contemporaries, not a sentence of whose writings has been conserved; or than Plato and Aristotle, whose works, though handed down to us, exist in our libraries much rather as literature than as philosophy.

The arrogant chiefs of the Grecian philosophical sects looked probably with scorn upon the versifiers, and dramatists, and orators of their day, and deemed them triflers. And yet it is *these* who still command the admiration of mankind; while *those*, for the most part, do but hover in the recollections of the learned, as phantoms of an obsolete intellectual domination. But the one strove for a prize which is always attainable by genius;—the other reared their fame on the proud pretension that they were teachers of truth: their claim was disputed and disproved; and their ambition has long ago been trampled in the dust.

Works of science lose their credit as such,

\* Euclid's Elements.



either in consequence of the refutation and entire rejection of the principles they maintain ; or they are gradually superseded, in the natural course of improvement, by better digested systems, founded on the same general doctrines. In instances of this latter sort, the discoverers of certain great truths which have become the property of the intellectual commonwealth, though they still hold their titles of honour, retain little real influence, and are more often spoken of than read ; or are read only by the few who make the history of science their peculiar study.

As examples of the former class, we might mention the pseudo-scientific doctrines of Plato—those splendid errors which extinguished the then existing light of true philosophy ; and the greater portion of the physical disquisitions of Aristotle ; and the astronomy of Ptolemy ; and then, in long array, and immeasurable bulk, the alchymy, and the astrology, and the physics, and the metaphysics, of the sixteen centuries during which the human mind dreamed ingeniously, rather than employed itself waking upon the affairs of the real world.

Instances of the second sort (beside the single one above mentioned) are hardly to be produced from the extant remains of ancient literature ; unless indeed we were to consider as works of science the writings of the Grecian and Roman geographers, which, though superseded by the more exact information of modern times, still exist, not simply as classical remains, but as sources of knowledge.\* Passing them, the

\* We should perhaps say *topographers* : topography being more remote from the fields of speculation than any other

writings of the fathers of the modern astronomy may be named as examples completely in point ; for these (the modern astronomy being assumed as in truth the system of nature) have possessed themselves of an immortality which must be coeval with the existence of science. Nevertheless, it has happened, and indeed it is a distinction belonging to genuine discoveries in science, that the writings which opened the path of truth have ceased to be read, except by the curious, even while still regarded as the spring-heads of real knowledge. It was the glory of Copernicus, of Tycho, of Kepler, and of Galileo, to say to their successors, "Leave us, and go on."\*

Yet is it true of the few works that take rank in the *highest class* of philosophical literature, that, though they may have become obsolete, either because essentially erroneous, or because superseded, they still challenge attention and respect as *products of mind* ; and though no longer valuable as guides in the pursuit of knowledge, are precious as works of genius, and as exhibitions of an athletic force of intellect. It is in this sense that the unmatched writings of Aristotle must be immortal ; and thus that the best of his expounders may continue to be read : and it is on this ground also that Hobbes, and Des Cartes, and Malebranche, and Berkeley, and Hume, and Hutcheson, and

branch of learning, was less vitiated than any other branch among the ancients ; and their writings of this class retain their value to the present day.

\* Is the "*Principia*" now taking its place in this class of superseded philosophy ? Though this were the fact, Newton would lose none of his fame.

Hartley, retain, and will, perhaps, long retain, their place in the literature of Europe, and be perused by a future and more enlightened generation, to whom the absurdities and whimsical sophisms with which they abound, shall seem even more frivolous than they do to ourselves.

Whatever may in the next age be the fate of the "Inquiry concerning Freedom of Will," (in the *present* age it holds all its honours and authority), it may safely be predicted that, at least as an instance of exact analysis, of profound or perfect abstraction, of conclusive logic, and of calm discussion, this celebrated essay will long support its reputation, and will continue to be used as a classic *material* in the business of intellectual education. If literary ambition had been, which certainly it was not, the active element of the author's mind (as it was the single motive in the mind of his contemporary and admirer Hume), and if he could have foreseen the reputation of his "Essay on Free Will," he need have envied very few aspirants to philosophic fame. What higher praise could a scientific writer wish for, than that of having, by a small and single dissertation, reduced a numerous, a learned, and a powerful party, in his own \* and other countries (and from his own day to the present time) to the sad necessity of making a blank protest against the argument and inference of the book, and of saying, "The reasoning of Edwards *must* be a sophism; for it overthrows our doctrine."

\* We claim Edwards as an *Englishman*: he was such in every respect but the accident of birth in a distant province of the empire.

And then, if we turn from theology to science — from divines to philosophers, we see the modest pastor of the Calvinists of Northampton assigned to a seat of honour among sages, and allowed (if he will lay aside his faith and his Bible) to speak and to utter decisions as a master of science.

It might indeed have been well if the devout Edwards\* could have foreseen the consequences that have actually resulted from the mode in which he conducted his argument; for in that case, assuredly, he would not have allowed to sceptics the opportunity of triumphing by his means over faith as well as reason. He would, then, instead of abandoning the ground of abstract reasoning as soon as he had achieved the overthrow of the metaphysical error of his opponents, have carried it (and he was able to do so) to its utmost extent, and have so established the responsibility of man, as should have compelled infidels either not to avail themselves at all of his proof of universal causation, or to yield to his proof of the reality of religion.

The diffidence and the Christian humility, or the retired habits of the American divine, prevented, perhaps, his entertaining the thought that he might be listened to by philosophers, as well as by his brethren, the ministers of religion. Supposing himself to write only for those who acknowledged, as cordially as he did, the authority of Scripture, he scrupled not to make out his chain of reasoning, indifferently, of abstractions and of texts; and especially in the latter portion of his treatise, readily took the

\* See note A at the end of the Essay.



short Scriptural road to a conclusion, which must have been circuitously reached in any other way. Just and peremptory as these conclusions may be, they commanded no respect out of the pale of the church; nay, they rather excited the scorn of those who naturally said—If these principles could have been established by abstract argument, a thinker so profound as Edwards, and so fond of metaphysics, would not have proved them by the Bible.

Sceptics of all classes (it has ever been the practice and policy of the powers of evil to build with plundered materials), availing themselves greedily of the abstract portions of the inquiry, and contemning its Biblical connectives and conclusions, carried on the unfinished reasoning in their own manner; and when they had completed their edifice of gloom and fear, turned impudently to the faithful, and said—“Nay, quarrel not with our labours; the foundations were laid by one of yourselves!”

Notwithstanding this unhappy and *accidental* result of the argument for moral causation, as conducted by Edwards, this celebrated treatise must be allowed to have achieved an important service for Christianity, inasmuch as it has stood like a bulwark in front of principles which, whether or not they may hitherto have been stated in the happiest manner, are of such consequence, that if they were once, and universally abandoned by the church, the church itself would not long make good its opposition to infidelity. Let it be granted that Calvinism has often existed in a state of mixture with crude, or presumptuous, or preposterous dogmas. Yet surely, whoever is competent to take a calm, an

independent, and a truly philosophic survey of the Christian system, and can calculate also the balancings of opinion—the antitheses of belief, will grant, that if Calvinism, in the modern sense of the term,\* were quite exploded, a long time could not elapse before evangelical Arminianism would find itself driven helplessly into the gulf that had yawned to receive its rival; and to this catastrophe must quickly succeed the triumph of the dead rationalism of Neology; and then that of Atheism.

Whatever notions of an exaggerated sort may belong to some *Calvinists*, Calvinism, *as distinguished from Arminianism*, encircles or involves GREAT TRUTHS, which, whether dimly or clearly discerned—whether defended in Scriptural simplicity of language, or deformed by grievous perversions, will never be abandoned while the Bible continues to be devoutly read; and which, if they might indeed be subverted, would drag to the same ruin every doctrine of revealed religion. Zealous, dogmatical, and sincere Arminians little think how much they owe to the writer who, more than any other in modern times, has withstood their inconsiderate endeavours to impugn certain prominent articles of the Reformation. Nay, they think not that, to the existence of Calvinism they owe their own, as Christians. Yet as much as this might be affirmed, and made good; even though he who should undertake the task were so to con-

\* It is hardly necessary to say, that the term Calvinism is used without any reference to the particular opinions of the illustrious divine who has given his name to a system of doctrine much older than the age of the Reformation.

duct his argument as might make six Calvinists in ten his enemies.

Yet it will not be affirmed (unless by the advocates of a party) that the treatise on the Will is in itself complete ; or that it is open to *no* reasonable objection on the part of those who refuse to admit its conclusions ; or that it leaves nothing to be desired in this department of theological science. Very far, we think, is this from being the fact. Edwards achieved, indeed, his immediate object—that of exposing to contempt, in all its evasions, the Arminian notion of contingency, as the blind law of human volitions : and he did more ;—he effectively redeemed the doctrines called Calvinistic from that scorn with which the irreligious party, within and without the pale of Christianity, would fain have overwhelmed them :—he taught the world to be less flippant ; and there is reason also to surmise (though the facts are not to be distinctly adduced) that, in the re-action which of late has counterpoised the once triumphant Arminianism of English episcopal divinity, the influence of Edwards has been much greater than those who have yielded to it have always confessed.

But if the inquiry on Freedom of Will is regarded, and it ought to be so regarded, as a scientific treatise, then we must vehemently protest against that mixture (already alluded to) of metaphysical demonstrations and Scriptural evidence, which runs through it, breaking up the chain of argumentation—disparaging the authority of the Bible, by making it part and parcel with disputable abstractions ; and worse, destroying both the lustre and the edge of the

sword of the Spirit, by using it as a mere weapon of metaphysical warfare. Yet, in justice to Edwards it must be remembered, that while pursuing this course, he did but follow in the track of all who had gone before him. To this ancient evil we must again advert.

But, besides the improper mixture of abstract reasoning with documentary proof, the attentive reader of Edwards will detect a confusion of another sort, less palpable indeed, but of not less fatal consequence to the consistency of a philosophical argument; and which, though sanctioned by the highest authorities, in all times, and recommended by the example of the most eminent writers, even to the present moment, must, so long as it is adhered to, hold intellectual philosophy far in the rear of the physical and mathematical sciences. For the present it is enough just to point out the error of method alluded to, remitting the further consideration of it to a subsequent page.

It is that of mingling purely abstract propositions—propositions strictly *metaphysical*,\* with facts belonging to the physiology of the human mind. Even the reader who is scarcely at all familiar with abstruse science, will, if he follow our author attentively, be perpetually conscious of a vague dissatisfaction, or latent suspicion, that some fallacy has passed into the train of propositions, although the linking of syllogisms seems perfect. This suspicion will increase in strength as he proceeds, and will at length con-

\* The reader is referred also to a subsequent page of this Essay for a definition of the sense in which the writer employs the term *metaphysics*, as distinguished from the physiology of the mind.



dense itself into the form of a protest against certain conclusions, notwithstanding their apparently necessary connexion with the premises.

The condition of those purely abstract truths which constitute the higher metaphysics is, that they might (though no good purpose could be answered by doing so) be expressed by algebraic or other arbitrary signs; and in that form made to pass through the process of syllogistic reasoning; certain conclusions being attained which must be assented to, independently of any reference to the actual constitution of human nature — or to that of other sentient beings. These abstractions stand parallel with the truths of pure mathematics.—And it may be said of both, that the human mind masters them, comprehends and perceives their properties and relations, and feels that the materials of its cogitation lie all within its grasp, are exposed to its inspection, and need not be gathered from observation. To such abstractions the artificial methods of logic are applicable.

Not so to our reasonings when the actual conformation of either the material world, or of the animal system, or of the mental, is the subject of inquiry. Logic may place in their true relative position things already known; but it aids us not at all (the logic of syllogism) in the discovery of things unknown. Hence it follows, that if an inquiry, the ultimate facts of which relate to the agency and moral condition of man, be conducted in the method that is proper to pure abstractions, and if, as often as the argument demands it, new materials are brought in, *unexamined*, from the actual conformation of the human mind, very much may be taken for

granted, and will flow in the stream of logical demonstration, which in itself is at least questionable, and which, whether true or false, should be stated as simple matter of fact, and by no means confounded with those unchangeable truths which would be what they are, though no such being as man existed. This error of method—an inveterate one—is as if a mathematician in calculating (for example) the necessary dimensions of a timber which, being supported at its two extremities, was to sustain a given weight, were, in carrying on the *mathematical* part of his reasoning, to assume the specific properties of timber as an invariable abstraction; or were either to leave out of the process all consideration of the density, compressibility, and tenacity of oak, ash, fir, elm, &c., or were to take certain facts of this sort upon vulgar report, and blend them with his calculations, without having experimentally informed himself of the *physical constitution* of the materials in question.

In the scientific procedures of the mechanic arts, the ultimate result, whether it be a building, a bridge, or a machine, usually combines *three* perfectly distinct and independent series of truths, or classes of causation; namely, 1st, the *mathematical* relations of extension or number; 2d, the *mechanical* laws of gravitation, motion, friction, &c.; 3d, the qualities and properties (in part mechanical, in part chemical) of the several materials that are to be employed or wrought upon.

Now these distinct principles or truths must be separately considered; and *each in the method proper to itself*; and must then be combined

in the single result. It is thus alone that the arch can be made to sustain itself and its intended burden;—that the roof will rest on its plate;—that the engine will perform its complicated part; or the simplest implement execute its destined drudgery.\*

But owing, in part, to the abstruse nature of the subject, and to its not being susceptible of palpable proof; and, in part, to the unhappy accidents which in every age have beset intellectual philosophy, problems belonging to the science of mind have commonly been attempted to be solved, on the principle of confounding the abstract with the physical. And then if, in addition to this capital error, there have been mingled with the process the jargon of religious factions, and with that, the antagonist dogmas of the enemies of all religion, the smallest probability of attaining a satisfactory result has been removed; and the actual issue of the controversy, instead of going calmly to its place, like the conclusions of physical science, has served only to exacerbate new contentions, either among theologians, or between them and the assailants of Christianity.

In the case, therefore, of our availing ourselves of the reasoning of a writer like President Edwards, it behoves us to take heed that we do justice, at once, to him and to ourselves. To him, by not imputing to him, *individually*, a blame which belongs in common to all metaphysico-theological writers, of every age—not one perhaps excepted. And to ourselves, by assenting to his argument only so far as it is

\* See note B.

purely of an abstract kind; while we hold ourselves aloof from every conclusion which involves *physiological facts* of a kind either not considered by the author, or not known to him.

## SECTION II.

SUCCESS in the prosecution of a scientific inquiry demands that, if the desired result, or the ultimate fact, be of a simple kind, we should, 1st, Seek for it among the class of truths to which it actually belongs;\* and 2d, That, in conducting the process, we exclude the facts and avoid the methods proper to other branches of knowledge. Or if the ultimate fact be complex, involving truths of different classes, it is necessary that we pursue each class separately, and in its proper manner, and at last truly combine the several products.

Of what sort, then, we may ask, is the inquiry concerning human agency, free will, liberty, and necessity? In other words: to what department of science does the controversy belong, and on what ground is it to be argued? Now, in order that every probable supposition may be included, and that we may disengage ourselves from such as are groundless, let it be affirmed, successively, of this question, that it is one

I. Of common life, affecting the personal, social, and political conduct of mankind;

II. Of theology and Christian doctrine;

III. Of the physiology of man;

IV. Of the higher metaphysics.

It is proposed to consider, as briefly as pos-

\* See note C.



sible, the question of moral causation and necessity separately under these heads. And first, suppose it to be affirmed that the controversy may, in its result, affect the conduct of common life, or ought to influence the feelings or behaviour of men in their ordinary transactions, private and public.

Unless for the sake of an important inference (soon to be mentioned), it might well be deemed in the last degree trivial and impertinent, even to assume as at all reasonable the supposition, that the substantial interests of life are liable to interruption or interference from abstruse dogmas of any kind, and especially of such as are advanced in the controversy concerning liberty and necessity. There has, indeed, been a season among our near neighbours, during which an interference of this sort was allowed;\* and it may also have found indulgence within the circle of German philosophy; and it has always had place among the mystics of Asia.† But in England, the force of common sense is far too great, and the credit of metaphysics is, happily, far too small, for any room to be granted to extravagances of this order. Or, were it otherwise, the supposition of a practical consequence belonging to the question would stand discharged by the leave of even the most resolute impugners of the common sense and common feelings of mankind, who, not only by their personal conduct, but by explicit admissions, excuse their fellow-men from paying any more respect to their sublime demonstrations, than is ordinarily thought due

\* See note D.

† See note E.

to the inexplicable whims of men who abound in learning and leisure.\*

Yet let us for a moment contend, as if in serious controversy with the supposition, that such doctrines as the Pyrrhonic or the Stoic ; or the modern doctrine of necessity ; or if there be yet in the womb of chaos any other dogma of similar quality, that these high principles have a claim to be listened to before men can, with reason or consistency, proceed to transact the business of life, or with propriety give indulgence to certain vulgar emotions.

Now, we should overturn a preposterous pretension of this sort in more ways than one ; as, *first*, we should, by a loose technical argument, procure a relegation of any such controversy from the haunts of real life in this manner. Let it be supposed, that, in due course of law, and after hearing and sifting of evidence, a prisoner at the bar has received sentence of death ; but his legal advocate pleads an arrest of judgment, on the ground, we will say, of an error in the arraignment. The court assents to the propriety of this sort of interruption — admits the objection to be formal and pertinent — examines with care the allegation, and finding it valid, allows to the convicted man the benefit of the demurrer. But let it be imagined that

\* “ When the Pyrrhonian awakes from his dream, he will be the first to join in the laugh against himself, and to confess that all his objections are mere amusement, and can have no other tendency than to shew the whimsical condition of mankind, who must act, and reason, and believe ; though they are not able, by their most diligent inquiry, to satisfy themselves concerning the foundation of these operations, or to remove the objections that may be raised against them.”—HUME’S *Inquiry concerning the Human Understanding*, sect. xii. part 2.

the prisoner's legal defender, destitute of any such fit objection, wherewith to protect the life of his client, stands up to impugn the good policy, or the abstract justice, or the morality of the statute under which he has been condemned ; or he affirms that this enactment is contrary to the spirit of the constitution, and is in itself an outrage upon unalienable rights. In an argument of this sort, he might happen to have all reason and good principles on his side ; and might, if permitted to speak, actually bring judge, jury, and the crowd around, to think with himself. But the court peremptorily excludes any such *impertinence*, though valid in itself, as utterly improper to the place and occasion ; nor for a moment to be listened to, where laws are to be put in force—not repealed or amended.

And yet *this very same argument*, overruled and rejected in a court of justice, may be carried into the senate, and shall there be respectfully entertained. *Senators* will hear and weigh reasons which *judges* repudiate. The ground of this practical procedure is manifest ;—every one to his business. In the senate, motives of policy, and legal consistences, and special necessities of state, together with arguments of abstract or universal justice ; and even, to some extent, religious considerations, are brought together from all sides, and go to influence the legislative decision. Nevertheless, limits are imposed upon the indulgence given to senatorial argumentation. Were it, for instance, to happen that a legislative body included a mere theorist, or dabbler in philosophy ; and were such a one, instead of alleging some of the topics just mentioned, to advance, as a motive

for repealing a penal statute, certain doctrines of phrenological science, and were to say, that inasmuch as the murderer and the thief are the pitiable victims of an unhappy cerebral malformation, and in depriving their fellows of life or chattels do but yield to an organic necessity, springing from a certain too-much-bloated inch of brain—therefore, to pursue crime by punishment is only to add cruelty to misfortune;—we say, in such a case, the improper argument would be overruled. Or, instead of the phrenologist, let it be supposed that a stanch and consistent disciple of the modern “Philosophy of the Human Mind” announces to his peers the now demonstrated fact, “That virtue and vice are mere relations—absolute nonentities, except just so far as they are thought of and perceived by other minds; and not more real or positive than the most recondite properties of a triangle.”\* Let him thence argue that, to inflict the pains of death upon an unfortunate being, who (in consequence of a volition in itself *purely contingent*) has given rise to the existence of some such relative notion in the minds of other men, would be an inhumanity, equally barbarous and unscientific.

Or, to come nearer to our subject, we may imagine some such speculative senator to oppose a penal enactment, on the ground of philosophical fatalism, averring that, as “all things are as they must be,” human responsibility is a

\* Brown’s Lectures, 73 and 74, especially pp. 595 and 596, vol. iii. Brown must not, however, be confounded with the enemies of religion and virtue. But his preposterous theory of morals affords striking illustration of the assertion, That intellectual philosophy is yet in its infancy.



fable, virtue and vice empty names, government and law the trickery of kings, as religion is of priests. But, in any such supposed instance of learned quackery or philosophical impertinence, not a moment's indulgence would be granted, in a senate, to the man of theory : all ears would be stopped, or his voice drowned in outcries of contempt. Nor would this impatience spring so much from the belief that the argument was sophistical, and the theory baseless, as from the feeling that, whether true or false, questions of this order belong not to *senators*, but to *philosophers*. Every man to his business ; and whenever men have long occupied a position where extensive experience has authenticated certain modes of procedure, and where great, many, and substantial benefits have been obtained, they are not to be thence removed, or to be driven from their ancient inheritance of known advantages, by the mere demonstrations of pretended science. If an abstruse dogma be indeed well founded, it will in time vanquish to itself the convictions of mankind, and will then properly come in to regulate the conduct of life, when all men have confessed its right to do so.

But there is a bar to the interference of abstruse dogmas with common interests, more determinate than the preceding. Let fatalism in its most perfect form\* be assumed as the

\* “ Regardez-y de près, et vous verrez que le mot liberté est un mot vide de sens ; qu'il n'y a point, et qu'il ne peut y avoir d'êtres libres. . . . Le motif nous est toujours extérieur, étranger, attaché ou par une nature, ou par une cause quelconque, qui n'est pas nous. . . . Mais s'il n'y a point de liberté, il n'y a point d'action qui mérite la louange ou le

mooted question,—a question about to be peremptorily decided. Now, on the supposition that the doctrine is disproved, exploded, and for ever cast out of the minds of men, what (except, indeed, that the world would be exorcised of a demon lie) what is the practical result? Absolutely none; the product of the controversy in that case is just—zero. Or if this *nothing* must indeed be attenuated in a length of words, it comes to this: That the course of nature *is* what it seems to be; that the actions of men *are* what they have ever been thought; that the common sense of mankind is in truth, as it has always been supposed, a reasonable guide; and that the position of man in the present state is not “whimsical,” “absurd,” “contradictory,” “preposterous,” “frightful,” but altogether explicable and consistent. By such a determination of the controversy, all things, we say, would be left as previously they were; nothing altered, nothing amended, nothing superadded. Nor is it as in those branches

blâme; *il n'y a ni vice, ni vertu*, rien dont il faille récompenser ou châtier. . . . Il n'y a qu'une sorte de causes à proprement parler; ce sont *les causes physiques*. Il n'y a qu'une sorte de nécessité, c'est la même pour tous les êtres.”—DIDEROT, *as quoted in the First Dissertation prefixed to the Encyc. Brit.* 7th edit.—If indeed there be neither vice nor virtue, and nothing which deserves praise or blame, it is certain, not merely that the conduct of mankind throughout one large department of its ordinary proceedings is enormously absurd, but also that *the constitution of human nature* is founded upon error; an error which this true, and *only true*, philosophy exposes. Now it is this pretence to convict the sentiments, conduct, and constitution of mankind of illuiveness and absurdity, which affords the ground of comparison between itself and every other science, and which convicts itself of falseness.

of science where, even if positive and practical results are not obtained, some new and agreeable objects are discovered, or some region of delightful contemplation opened to the mind, or certain demonstrable relations set forth, for the exercise of its powers of abstraction. Nothing like this takes place when fatalism is disproved; and therefore, if *this* issue be anticipated, the entire controversy may as well be at once dismissed from the precincts of common life and of ordinary interests; inasmuch as the question, when *thus determined*, resolves itself into a simple nonentity.

But let the alternative be taken, and let it be supposed that this fatalism is so convincingly demonstrated, that no way of escape from the dire doctrine can at all be discovered;—then, and in that case, its practical influence might be rejected as completely and effectively as if it had been disproved. Fatalism (by the supposition) has been established by a demonstrative, or, at least, an irrefragable course of reasoning; and therefore takes its place along with the truths of other exact sciences, and should maintain sociality with them;—at least not stand alone, repugnant to all, and frowned upon by all. Yet, as it will appear, this must be the fact; and its insulation and oppugnancy will be as great on the side of the absolute principles of mathematical science, as on the part of physical and experimental philosophy, where certainty rises not so high.

To prove our assertion, we say that a *presumption* exists that the material world is so constituted as to fall in with the prosperous condition of the moral world; or, in other words,

that such a harmony prevails throughout the system of nature, material and intellectual, as shall make it *invariably true* that each discovery of the actual constitution of the one shall, directly or indirectly, promote the well-being of the other.

We say a *presumption* of this kind exists. But is it supported by facts? Does the general suffrage of philosophy—does the gross result of mathematical and physical science—of those sciences which, resting upon demonstration or conclusive experiment, are not to be trifled with—authenticate, or does it invalidate, the supposition? Does it go to favour the belief that the system of nature is one vast contrariety, inimical to man, and far better unknown than explored? or does it corroborate our theorem, that the world, having been put together by a Beneficent Power, is so framed as to adjust itself to the comfort and welfare of man, and *precisely in proportion as its laws and movements are understood by him*?\* The answer need not be formally given, nor the evidence in detail be recounted. Or is it the fact that, though his ready ingenuity turns to his particular advantage some few favourable accidents of the material world, yet, that no *general* correspondence between him and it can be traced? It were superfluous to affirm that the reverse is the truth, and that human ingenuity is wholly occupied in keeping pace with those wealth-giving instructions which philosophy every day hands over to her sister arts. Man invariably receives, as well from the surface of nature, as from her

\* See note F.



depths, articulate invitations to employ his inventive faculty for extending his command over her movements, and always for his own benefit. His condition, as a reasoning and active being, in this system, is by no means to be likened to that of a shipwrecked crew, cast upon a desolate island, who, impelled by necessity, are fain to convert the rudest and most improper and unfitting fragments of things to the purposes of art, for supplying the primary wants of life; and who (if the phrase may be excused) exist from day to day *by shifts*. But rather his circumstances in the abode in which Beneficence has placed him, might be resembled to the case of a company of untaught savages, who, drifting across the seas in their canoe, set foot on a shore, where they find a deserted city and vacated palaces. At first their rude ignorance is astounded by the various works and products of mechanic and elegant art;—they gaze in idle amazement upon implements, machineries, decorations, and luxurious contrivances: and they misname and misuse all things. But after a while, the dormant faculty of reason is quickened by observation: tentatives are made, and every day is gladdened by a new discovery of the end and intention of this or the other article, or implement. Every accession to their knowledge turns out to be a contribution to their comforts or advantages; and this for the simple reason, that all things were designed and constructed for the benefit and accommodation of just such beings as these are, who now are learning the use of them. At length, when knowledge has reached its completion, it is confessed, that within this city there is nothing *rude, fortuitous,*

or *chaotic* ; but that all bears directly or remotely upon the welfare of those who have become its occupants.

Such is the tenour of the evidence given by the demonstrable and physical sciences, in support of the presumption (now no longer a mere presumption) that man, as an inventive and active being, is placed in the centre of the harmonies of the material universe ; so that it shall always, and by the very necessity of nature, be true, that knowledge is his friend. And while he learns this great lesson, he derives from it the means of detecting the mischiefs and fallacies of false philosophy. GENUINE SCIENCE, he well knows, approaches him always as a kind and beneficent instructress :—she has ever some boon in her hand :—she aids and comforts her pupil ; she walks on *with him* in the path of improvement ; accelerates his pace ; stimulates his energies ; and calls him still on and on towards higher ground.

But let it for a moment be granted, that certain metaphysical doctrines which convict the common sense and moral sentiments of mankind of absurdity, and which profess to abstain from urging home upon the vulgar their practical consequences, only by a gracious indulgence towards certain useful delusions, and necessary infatuations ;—let it, we say, be supposed, that these doctrines are established by abstract reasoning of the most peremptory sort. In that case, the human mind would be placed between two oppugnant demonstrations. On the one side it looks upon the mathematical and experimental sciences, which are all, in their thousand forms, of a friendly and auxiliary

character—which smile upon human affairs and human activities. And, on the other side, it sees the single gloomy metaphysical demonstration, whose first salutation, when it encounters human nature, is—Fool and slave! which instructs only to baffle and to astound, and to sicken the reasoning faculty, and to create a contempt of man and of the universe. And it is found, that while it is the auspicious property of natural philosophy to diffuse itself safely and kindly, and, like a fountain of healing water, from its sources in colleges and seats of learning, to flow out among the multitude, as a pure blessing;—this other science, this abstract demonstration, is (by the confession of those who darkly divulge it) a dire mystery, an esoteric truth, fit only for sages, and one which it is wise to hide from the populace. In fact, it proves itself, when it comes among the vulgar, to be susceptible of no interpretation that is not pernicious. It is a philosophy which, by no ingenuity, by no refinements, can safely be broken up into morsels for distribution among the people.\*

How, then, shall a choice be made between the two demonstrated, but incompatible philosophies? How, but by an indignant rejection of the dark and hostile science, as a sophism, even though to prove it such were impossible? This doctrine, we say, even though it could not be disproved, would be overwhelmed, silenced, and scouted, by the concurrent suffrages of all other sciences. It is contradicted by the number or quantity of proofs; and sur-

\* See note G.

passed in the *quality* of its evidence: it may then properly be driven home to the cavern whence first it issued, and for ever forbidden to approach the precincts of humanity, or to infect the atmosphere of knowledge, action, and virtue. In a word, the question of necessity may be pronounced as NOTHING TO HUMAN NATURE; for if it be decided in the manner that is favourable to ordinary notions, it merges in a void—disappears, and becomes the most nugatory and idle of all learned trifles. But if determined in the other manner, then it assumes an aspect which places it in contrariety to every other science—demonstrable and experimental; and therefore may be spurned as a lie, because it speaks as an enemy.

### SECTION III.

WE come to our second supposition—namely, that the question of liberty and necessity is important to THEOLOGY and CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE.

All venerable usages, and all venerable notions, backed by the very cordial acquiescence of atheists and infidels, answer in the affirmative; and agree in acknowledging that the controversy involves the very existence of religion. But does common sense authenticate the same decision? Does the analogy of the *real sciences* approve it? Will the sounder views and better feelings of a future and happier era of Christianity consent to it? We venture to give the negative to these interrogations; and are bold,

\* See note H.



moreover, to predict, that the very next race of divines, our own sons and successors, will reject as a sheer absurdity, and as a preposterous pedantry, that practice and opinion, on this subject, which has stood sanctioned by the approval of all theologians, and all philosophers, of all ages!

The history of the connexion between religion and metaphysical science might be very profitably pursued.\* But volumes would not suffice for the theme. The *natural history* of that fatal alliance might be set forth within much narrower limits; and would, indeed, resolve itself into a few well-known facts, or usages of the human mind. It is common to human nature (we cannot here stay to inquire why) to throw itself off from the familiar ground of proximate and intelligible causes, and to seek such as are abstruse, difficult, and ultimate, whenever it is agitated by powerful emotions. We have in this fact one of the sources of superstition; and as it is in a sense true, that fear is the mother of the gods, so, in a sense, is it also true that anxiety, despondency, and the impatience of pain and sorrow, are teachers of metaphysics. It may be doubted whether certain profound speculations would at all have suggested themselves to the human mind, if life had been a course of equable prosperity. It may be questioned, whether the inhabitants of worlds unvisited by evil, how large soever their intelligence may be, have thought of asking, What is virtue?—or, What is the liberty of a moral agent?

\* See note I.

The conflicts of hope and fear in the heart, and the assaults that are made upon hope by the scepticism or mockery of those around us, impel us naturally (but unwisely) to throw up the good and proper evidence which, though simple, and intelligible, and sufficient, does not open to the mind a depth profound enough to give room for the mighty tossings of the soul in its hour of distress.—The only testimony or proof that is *strictly applicable* to the point in question, is thoughtlessly rejected; and in an evil moment we transgress the limits of safety and of comfort, and pass from the *φυσικα* to the *μεταφυσικα*. When this unhappy error has been committed, two courses offer themselves; the one is to beat up and down through the regions of night whereupon we have entered, until we find, or fancy that we have found, solid footing, and discern a glimmering of light. The other course is, by a buoyant effort of good sense, to spring up at once from the abyss, and effect our return to the trodden and familiar surface of things.

The process is a frequent and familiar one, which leads the mind to reason on *important occasions* in a manner which it shuns as absurd in parallel instances of a trivial sort. The man who loses his footing in the street, and besmears a new suit with mud, makes mirth of the simple accident. But if, when he is on his way to accomplish some important purpose, to make a fortune, or to rescue one, he falls and breaks a limb, and, as the consequence, irretrievably forfeits the only auspicious moment of his life, he then looks at the *philosophy* of the mishap; and, as he lies on his couch, meditates

and reasons—"of Fate and Providence," and bewilders his best convictions, and, in the gloominess of his sorrow, persuades himself that there is no heavenly superintendence of human affairs—that chance is mistress of the world; and at length concludes, that forethought, prudence, and activity, not less than faith and piety, are a specious folly. He resolves, therefore, henceforward to pursue nothing beyond the sensualities of an hour. Nevertheless, this same man, whom calamity has taught to be a metaphysician, adheres still, on all trivial occasions, to the maxims of vulgar good sense; his philosophical principles he takes up and lays down, according to the magnitude or insignificance of the business in hand, and is not consistently sage or simple through the course of a single hour. To avoid the destined track of a bullet that is whizzing through the air, he would deem a folly; and yet flinches from a splash of dirt! But should he not remember, that the very same awful fate that rules the flight of leaden balls, presides, not less arbitrarily, over the whirling of straws, the drifting of dust, and the projectile curves of mud?

It is just conceivable, or may at least be imagined, for the sake of an illustration, that a corporation, college, or company, possessed by charter of great prerogatives, extensive rights, and vast wealth, might, if vehemently urged to defend its monopoly or its privilege against the envy and cupidity of the community, be seduced so far from the path of common sense, as, instead of insisting pertinaciously upon the intelligible evidence of the antiquity and genu-

ineness of its charter, and, instead of establishing the fact of that remote transaction, which lawfully invested its ancestors or predecessors with these disputed rights, to join issue with its opponents on some such physical question, as that of the possible perpetuity of material substances, like paper or parchment, from age to age; or on that of the actual existence of any generations of men antecedent to the present; or upon that of the abstract communicableness of rights from person to person. Many such whimsical doubts may be supposed to take place of the simple business-like questions—Is the charter valid?—Has it been truly interpreted?—Is it lawfully put in operation? Yet these, it is manifest, are the only questions in which the privileged parties have any *peculiar concern*; for those higher and abstruse difficulties belong not in any specific manner to the college or corporation, but are either absolutely futile, or must be held to supersede and invalidate the whole course of human affairs.\*

An instance very nearly analogous to that of the connexion between religion and metaphysical science, has, in modern times, been actually obtruded on the world. The portentous spectacle has been exhibited on the theatre of nations, of a people, when convulsed by political revolutions, and while agitated by the furious passions of revenge, pride, and rapacity, and while eagerly contending for the partition of rights and possessions, to forget the urgent considerations of national prosperity and public safety, and to plunge headlong into the abyss

\* See note K.

of those unfathomable speculations that affect the very existence of man as a social being. So that the frenzied multitude, instead of asking — How best shall we be governed? — have become infected with a metaphysic madness, which has rendered them incapable of reasonable submission to any government, excepting that of brute force and terror.\*

And thus, too, it has happened, that the momentous interests of the future life, as set forth by Christianity, because they profoundly move the soul, and because, by their interference with ungoverned passions, they excite hostility, lead both the defenders and the impugnors of a documentary religion aside from the only pertinent inquiry — Are the facts duly established, according to the ordinary maxims of testimony, and belief? — while they discuss controversies, to which religion is related only in common with the most familiar movements of social life. Let philosophers (or sophists) deny, if they please, the existence of a material world. Why should the teachers of Christianity, rather than any other class of men, rush forward to oppose the pedantic whim? If that denial has in fact any meaning at all, or if it carries any inference which men ought to listen to, then should lawyers leave their courts, as well as divines their pulpits, and merchants their markets, and physicians their hospitals, to join in the fray. If *any* persons are interested in this abstruse quarrel, *all* are so alike — demonstrably interested in one and the same degree. Or let phi-

\* The *American* revolution involved no metaphysical problems; and it produced no reign of terror, nor did it end in a military dictatorship.



losophers or sophists turn about and deny the existence, not of the material world, but of the intellectual and moral.\* All men, in this instance, as well as in the other, and all human interests, duties, functions, hopes, and fears, are either alike concerned in the refutation of the learned nonsense, or may alike, in their several circles of practical activity, look upon it with utter contempt. Or again, let philosophers affirm that an unalterable and iron fatality—an immovable sequency of cause and effect, rules the world. If there be *any* practical inference whatever—any inference or corollary which demands respectful hearing, appended to the doctrine, then that consequence *bears evenly* upon all activities, upon all motives, upon all reasons of conduct, upon all calculations of futurity; and should either be allowed to arrest the entire machinery of human life, or should be utterly forgotten and neglected, whenever men are called to act and feel as rational and moral beings.

We deny, then, that the question concerning moral causation is one belonging to religion or Christian doctrine; because Christianity—the only existing religion—is, in the mode of its reaching us—in the subject matter of its communication—in the motives which it presumes to exist, and in the entire apparatus of its influence, part and parcel with the common material of human life; and is no more dependent upon the resolving of any metaphysical problem, than are the most vulgar interests of commerce, or political institutions, so dependent.†

\* See note L.

† See note M.

It enters into the very definition of metaphysical problems—that they are *universals*. To bring them, therefore, down upon an individual instance, to the exclusion of other instances of like quality, is the most enormous of all possible solecisms. To single out Christianity from the crowd of human affairs and interests, and to assail it, so singled out, with propositions which, by their very essence, are equally true of all things, or false of all, is the same sort of proceeding, as if a mathematician, after demonstrating the properties of the triangle, were to apply his doctrine only to such triangles as are formed by the rafters and joists of a roof.

If Christianity asks credit on any principle that is not recognised by the customary proceedings of mankind; or if it demands any motives or course of conduct, for justifying which we must appeal to abstruse theorems; then it must, of course, be separated from the fellowship of human affairs, and left to contend as it can with every hostile abstraction. But, if none of these things can be said, is it not most preposterous to involve it at all with such abstractions? And assuredly it need not be implicated with the question of necessity; for this, as we have already said, if determined in *one* manner, is a perfect *evaporation*, leaving no residuum: or if determined in the other, even though by a seeming demonstration, ought to be spurned in its assault upon religion; *first*, because it must arrest the entire movements of the moral and intellectual world, if it would impede any one class of these movements; and *secondly*, because, if it

does so interfere, or claims a right to disturb an existing and salutary order of actions and sentiments, it stands as a solitary exception among the sciences, all of which, both abstract and experimental, are found, when brought to their perfection, and when purified from empiricism, to be of a benign character, and actually come in to promote and facilitate those operations which the uninstructed common sense or the instinctive ingenuity of men had previously set in movement.\* The probability, therefore, that this pretended demonstration is a mere sophism, favoured by the abstruseness of the subject, and the vagueness of its signs, is as a thousand to one—or much more than a thousand. The teachers of Christianity should, then, barely cast upon doctrines of this class a smile of contempt; and hold on their way, as men whose business stands upon the intelligible ground of facts and experiment.

The more delicate, but not more obscure question, now meets us, whether the abstractions of pure metaphysics can at all avail, or ought to be had recourse to, for the purpose of determining those controversies which arise *among Christians*, in consequence of a different interpretation of certain portions of the Document of Faith.

Whoever should undertake to answer this question in the negative, might, if he chose to argue the point by an appeal to facts, find abundant materials fitted to his purpose in the whole course of church history, commencing with the Platonic fathers, and ending with the

\* See note N.

last writers on both sides of the Calvinistic controversy. Nothing, we say, would be more easy than, in this way, to throw immense disgrace upon the venerable practice of converting Christianity into a quibble of metaphysics.

But the fruitlessness and inexpediency of this method of conducting Biblical controversy might be forcibly argued alone from the instance of the "Inquiry concerning Freedom of Will." Its acknowledged superiority to any theological work with which it might properly be compared—a superiority confessed, as well by philosophers as divines—and its exemption from the vulgar sins of polemical literature, point it out as an instance of the most unexceptionable sort. Yet, what has been the result? A real and signal service, as we have already granted, has been rendered by it to the cause of important truths; but the service has accrued indirectly; while it has utterly failed to bring the controversy between Calvinists and Arminians to a satisfactory issue.—The *metaphysics* of Edwards demolished the *metaphysics* of Whitby. This was natural and fit; for the *philosophy* of Arminianism could no more endure a rigid analysis, than a citadel of rooks could maintain its integrity against a volley of musketry. And, moreover, the metaphysics of Edwards imposed a degree of respect upon the flippancy of philosophers. But then (not again to insist upon the fact, that the "Inquiry" has become almost the text book of infidelity) it has not in any sensible degree brought home the abstract argument to the purely theological difficulty. It has left things where they were,

in this respect, only with the disadvantage of suggesting a tacit conviction—that, what *Edwards* could not effect, *can never be effected*. The apparently incompatible propositions may therefore be affirmed, that, while our author, as the champion of Calvinism, has achieved a victory, and driven his antagonists from the ground they had unwisely occupied; he has confirmed and perpetuated the religious difference, by the mere fact of having failed in his attempt to compose it. Is it, then, at all to be desired that a second philosophic Calvinist\* should undertake the task of leading Arminians on the path of scientific demonstration, to a cordial acquiescence in the plain meaning of certain portions of the Scriptures?—We think not.

Nevertheless, it ought not to be regarded as an improbable event that *pious* Calvinists should at length meet *pious* Arminians on common ground; and that the difference between the two parties should for ever be merged in a Biblical doctrine.

But an accordance so happy will assuredly be the result, not of the perfection of metaphysical theology, but of a better understanding of the special nature and unique constitution of the Document of Faith, which, unlike any other writing, is at once simply the work of human minds; and not less absolutely the work of the Divine Mind.† As a human work—as a collection of ancient treatises, letters, and histories, composed by almost as many authors as there are separate pieces, it is plainly liable to all

\* See note O.

† See note P.



the ordinary conditions of other ancient literature ; and not merely to the *critical*, but to the *logical* conditions that belong to the products of the human mind ; and of course when categorically interrogated for its evidence, in relation to *certain abstract positions*, derived, *not from itself*, but from a variable theological science, will yield not a few apparent contrarieties. This would certainly be the case, even were the Bible the work of a single author.

But the Bible claims no respect at all as an authority in religion, unless it be received as, in the fullest sense, a Divine work. As such, it must have *its peculiar conditions* ; and these (or the most important of them) spring from the fact, that the Scriptures contain true information, explicit or implied, concerning more systems of things than one, or more orders of causation than one. But then this information consists just of those portions, or sections, or segments, of these several systems, or of these series of causes, which contain practical inferences, important to the special process of restoring mankind to virtue. It will follow from this description of the heaven-descended canon of religious truth, that the harmony of the various portions will never come within the range of the methods of human science ; for human science is drawn from *one system only*, and is *imperfect* and vague, even in relation to that one system.\*

Illustrations are always faulty, and always liable to be perverted ; yet may they serve a good purpose when advanced simply as

\* See note Q.

such; and not urged as proofs or arguments. Let it then be supposed that, to a number of intelligent persons, instructed in nothing beyond the first elements of mathematical science, there were to be given—not a diagram or description, but some of the distinguishing, and some of the most recondite properties of the three conic sections—the ellipse, the parabola, and the hyperbola; and that it were demanded of them, not only to find curves possessing precisely such properties, but to find *one regular and simple figure* which should contain the three harmoniously upon its surface. Now it must be granted, as hypothetically *possible*, that some one of these persons, either by a happy accident, or by force of intelligence, might at length produce the cone, and demonstrate upon it the several properties of the theorem. But to make our illustration complete, it should be supposed that no such figure as a cone had ever actually been seen or thought of, by the persons to whom the problem is given. What then would be the probable event?—May we not assume it as likely, that each individual, attaching himself by preference to the properties of some one of the three propounded curves, and giving his attention almost exclusively to its peculiarities, and succeeding, perhaps, in the attempt to reconcile among themselves these separate conditions, would be inclined to impugn, as *necessarily false*, the processes by which his companions were finding the other two curves; and, being satisfied with the soundness of his own reasoning, would deem that of his friends absolutely irreconcilable with it. And so it must seem in-

evitably, until the one true harmonising figure is actually produced.

But how soon might a fierce controversy arise among the perplexed inquirers! How soon would there take place a separation of the partisans of the ellipsis, the parabola, and the hyperbola! The friends of the first of the curves would think themselves justified in denouncing the hyperbolists as extravagant heretics; while these, and *with equal reason*, would hold in contempt the timidity of the ellipsists. Meanwhile, the parabolists, much admiring their own moderation, and not doubting that it was they who alone held the happy middle way upon which truth loves to walk, and hence believing themselves qualified to act as mediators between the extreme parties, would gravely say much that was very plausible, and exceedingly well intended; but would not in fact advance *even a single step* toward a true conciliation of the difference;—for this simple reason—that they are just as far as their companions from knowing the one actual principle of explanation.—The parabola may *seem*, but it is not in fact, or in any degree, a *reconciling truth* between the ellipsis and the hyperbola, for the ellipsis and the hyperbola are not at variance. But the controversy, though it tends to no satisfactory issue, is producing these two ill consequences (not to mention the excitement of bad feelings among friends), namely, that those of the company whose temper was the most calm and sceptical, would be haunted by troublesome suspicions, that he who proposed the problem had made sport of the ignorance of all, by affirming things strictly paradoxical.

And then the by-standers would almost certainly learn to treat the whole affair—the problem, its propounder, and the factions, with utter contempt. But we suppose that at this instant the propounder enters, and forthwith extinguishes the feud by the production of the cone! and all contrarieties are at once reconciled; all suspicions are dispelled; and eager dogmatists of all creeds are put to the blush!

To defend the propriety of this illustration in all its parts would be idle. It is enough if it explains the assertion, that the Scriptures, *because true and divine*, and because that they propound separated parts, properties, or relations of systems not known, will for ever baffle the attempt to reduce their testimony within the completeness and rotundity of a human science. If it be so, it will follow, that metaphysical reasoning, how rigid and exact soever, is not to be looked to as the means of adjusting Biblical controversies. That it may *seem* for a while to do so, is granted; but the specious conciliation will either be a mere confounding of an antagonist by force of logical strength; or it will have been effected by *constraining* some portions of the scriptural evidence.

We conclude that the question of liberty and necessity, or of moral causation, is one in which Christianity has no *peculiar* interest, and from the determination of which it can neither derive permanent advantage, nor receive lasting damage.

## SECTION IV.

WE proceed to inquire in what manner, and to what extent, the question of liberty and necessity belongs to the PHYSIOLOGY OF THE HUMAN MIND.

No one would affirm, or indeed could consistently imagine, that either the idealism of Berkeley, or the *non-causal* causation of Hume, or any similar doctrine, can properly occasion even the smallest difficulty or obstruction to the chemist who is discovering the affinities of acids and alkalies, or resolving earths into their elements. Whether or not there be an external world, and whether or not it be put in movement by efficient causes, it remains true—that heat is evolved or absorbed in the process of a new combination;—that sulphuric acid will change a vegetable blue to red;—and that combustion goes on more rapidly in oxygen gas than in common air. These facts may be mere phenomena of the world of mind;\* or real events in the world of matter;—they may result from efficient causes, or not so, *with perfect indifference* to the science of chemistry.

And, in like manner, is it a matter of absolute indifference to the naturalist, while informing himself of the internal structure of animals, or of their dispositions, faculties, and habits, in what way the systems of idealists, of materialists, of necessitarians, or of sceptics, are disposed of. The stomach, the brains, the bone, of the dog, the horse, and the camel, will continue just what they are, whether or not those animals are

\* Principles of Human Knowledge.



affirmed to be mere intellectual phantasms, or are allowed to be actual existences, and whether or not causation be “an empty illusion of the fancy,” or a connexion of power between successive events. And not less independent of these speculative doctrines is the inquiry (for instance) concerning the internal process which fills up the interval of time, or which completes the connexion between an impression on the senses of an animal, and the correspondent movement of his limbs. If it be asked, What takes place within the cerebral machine, when the hawk, from his motionless point in the sky, discerns his victim in the grass, and descends like lightning to the earth? — this *purely physical inquiry* has no more connexion with the theories of metaphysicians, than subsists between those theories and any chemical or mechanical fact.

And, manifestly, the conditions of physical science are not altered by merely turning from one class of sentient beings to another;—from the lower to the higher order of animals, from zoophytes to reptiles, from quadrupeds to man. If, for example, a scientific inquiry relates to the anatomy of the visual organ; or to the mental processes of perception; or to the combinations of impressions from two or more of the senses; or to the laws and conditions of volition; or to the influence of animal appetites, or moral emotions; or to the operation of the reasoning faculty;—all these are *matters of fact*, belonging to the actual conformation of this or of that animal; and are as strictly *physical*, and as absolutely independent of metaphysical dogmas and abstract truths, as are the

affinities of acids, and the crystallization of salts. There would, indeed, never have been occasion, even so much as to affirm this independence of physics and metaphysics, were it not that the immemorial practice of confounding the science of the human mind with pure abstractions, has filled both departments of intellectual philosophy with absurdity; and has detained both, to the present day, in a state of infancy.\*

If it were asked—Of what is the dog or the horse capable? what may fairly be demanded of them in the way of service? or of what improvement may their native faculties be susceptible by means of education, by rewards, punishments, and instructions? These inquiries, simply physical as they are, must be resolved by observation and experiment; and cannot, even in the most remote manner, be affected by abstract doctrines of the sort that constitutes the greater part of what is termed the “science of mind.” Whether the intelligence and moral sensibilities of a certain species might be wrought upon by culture to a greater extent than has yet been attempted, or whether it has already reached its limit of improvement, is a question upon which not a single ray of light could be thrown, even by the most complete solution of the problems which fill the pages of writers on intellectual philosophy. The intellectual character and capacities of each order of conscious beings are matters of fact; as much so as the fusibility and malleability of a metal.

\* See note R.

In a word, any sort of practical question, relating to the dispositions, constitutional motives, or proper treatment, of this or that species of animals, higher or lower, must be determined in the methods proper to physical science; and can neither be illustrated nor interfered with by those unchanging truths which draw not their materials from the world as it is. Thus, we not only *distinguish* the two sciences of physics and metaphysics; but affirm their absolute independence one of the other. And as no inference drawn from the former can impugn the demonstrations of the latter; so neither can these demonstrations reach, or modify, the actual conformation of any of the families of the sentient world:—spite of metaphysics, lions, bears, antelopes, and men, will go on to feel and to act as always they have done. To suppose the contrary, were the same absurdity as to imagine that salts will henceforward crystallize in other angles than formerly, when it shall be proved that there is no such thing as efficient causation.

The end of physical science, is to discover, or lay bare, the actual constitution of its subject;—not to expunge or reject any of the facts belonging to the nature of that subject. And it should not be forgotten, that as, in investigations of this sort, the ultimate facts are already in our possession, no very important truth can be expected to result from even the most complete analysis of the phenomena. Science is little better than a learned amusement, when employed in analysing a mechanism, the *powers* of which *are already familiarly known*, and the

*conformation* of which is *unalterable*. — This is very much the disadvantage of the entire circle of intellectual philosophy.

If the operation of motives in the human mind, or if the laws of human agency, be the subject of inquiry, our business is to explain, if we can, these familiar processes; not to deny any of their conditions. The science of human nature *finds* man a reasoning animal, and finds him master of his welfare (to a certain extent), and finds him a moral and religious being, influenced by the anticipation of future events, and ruling his conduct by a reference to the opinion and conduct of other beings. These facts are to be denuded, if it be possible to denude them; but assuredly not to be rejected or overlooked. We may describe *how* the moral emotions work; but not affirm that there are no such influences. The less indulgence should be granted to the audacity of speculation in the region of mental philosophy, because, though its *sophisms* may dangerously pervert the common sense of mankind, its *truths* (except just so far as they explode such sophisms) have almost nothing to offer of practical instruction. And if this be true of the science in general, it is peculiarly so of that branch of it which treats of the process of volition;—no one would be so fantastic as to expect that even the most complete anatomy of the voluntary principle could, in its inferences, be so brought in contact with the minds of the mass of mankind, as either to lessen the violence of impetuous passions, or to enhance the vigour of virtuous emotions.—This truly is not the style of human nature:—man

is not constituted to draw his reasons and motives from the theory of his own mental conformation: and if we would imagine an extreme instance of intellectual *hypochondriasis*, it must be the case of a philosopher, who, whenever he proposed to move, speak, or act, must first anxiously consider in what order to pull the strings of the intellectual machine.

We grant, indeed, that the philosophy of the agency of sentient and voluntary beings is a matter of rational curiosity. But it is nothing more; and of far less consequence to the welfare of man, than would be the discovery of a new chemical agent; or of a satellite to the planet Mars: for the one might facilitate three or four of the mechanic arts; and the other would give to the navigator an additional celestial chronometer. But a perfect and true theory of volition must leave volition precisely what always it has been.

Moreover, physical science is distinguished from abstract science, both mathematical and metaphysical, in this important particular, that the processes of the latter are entirely dependent upon absolute precision in the use of the signs or terms employed;\* so that the smallest inaccuracy disturbs the whole series of deductions, and falsifies the conclusion. Hence the confessed obscurity and uncertainty of intellectual philosophy, arising from the vagueness and variableness of language—the only signs it can employ. But the processes and results of *physical* science are happily exempt from any such

\* See note S.



disadvantage. For if a fact in the conformation of an organised body be ascertained—if it be *really known* to the discoverer, it may be expressed or described in a variety of modes; and may be spoken of in a copiousness of terms, more or less proper, until there shall be no danger of mistake on the part of the reader. It follows hence (when the philosophy of human nature is treated, as it ought, physically, not abstractedly) that that anxious and prudish nicety of language which belongs to metaphysical discussions, will be discarded with contempt. Whatever pretended fact in the philosophy of mind cannot be correctly communicated, except in one set of phrases, may safely be rejected as a subtilty, altogether insignificant to physical science. The modern chemical nomenclature, though it must be regarded as a highly important *instrument* for facilitating the diffusion of the science, and for giving simplicity and precision to the record of its discoveries, cannot be deemed an inseparable or indispensable means of making them known. The same facts might be correctly described in *any* colloquial medium; or might be conveyed to the minds of a people destitute of the erudition which makes our Greek and Latin terms intelligible to the English, French, and Germans. The same is true of physical facts of all kinds; but not of metaphysical truths, which are precisely—as their signs are.

The custom of considering the volitions and agency of man as a matter of abstract science, has favoured the supposition, that volition is

\* See note T.

simple or uniform in its mode of springing up from the mind. But if the real world of sentient beings is looked at, it will at once be seen, both that each species has its peculiar conditions of the voluntary principle, and that volition in each species results, at different times, from very different internal processes. It would appear, then, to be the natural course to look out, first, for the simplest instances of volition; and then to ascend from them to such as are complex, and not so readily analysed. This order of investigation directs us to the inferior classes of the animal community; it being probable that, in narrowly observing instances of less complicated organisation, we shall become insensibly qualified to dissect that which is more so. For as we may fairly presume, the more complicated orders take up into their mental machinery the elements that have been singly developed in the lower ranks of existence. It is, indeed, alone on this presumption that we can avail ourselves at all of the fruits of observation, gathered from the movements and habits of inferior species. For it is only by a reference to our own consciousness, that we *interpret* such facts; and this interpretation presupposes the homogeneity of the elements of sentient existence. If a pure intelligence, or simply rational essence, wholly destitute of all appetite, emotion, imagination, were to descend into this world of hungry, thirsty, passionate, irascible, and pleasure-loving beings, it would find itself utterly at a loss in endeavouring to comprehend the movements which it witnessed. That is to say, having no participation of the elements of the animal and moral nature, it would want the

glossary of mundane life, and possess no means of interpretation:—all it saw would be a riddle.

But this is not the case when man looks around him upon his fellows of inferior rank;—for, possessing as he does all the elements of animal and moral life, he discerns very few operations which he does not at once know how to translate into the language of his own nature; and he is thus qualified to philosophise, as well upon the mental conformation of birds and quadrupeds, as upon that of his own tribe. We say, he witnesses *very few* operations unintelligible to him; for there *are* movements carried on, especially by the more minute tribes, and those that are the most remote from himself, which nothing in his own nature enables him to understand:—they are facts *not interpretable* by consciousness, and are accordingly designated by a term which has no other significance than that of standing for *a class of facts not understood*. Whatever principle of agency in the animal world is no element of the *human* constitution, is called *INSTINCT*.\* These inexplicable facts, it is evident, can afford us no aid in the business of analysing the operations of the human mind; and are therefore to be excluded from the process of induction.

The inferior orders of conscious beings offer to our notice two or three distinguishable elements of volition, together with the rude commencements of another, for the full development of which we must look to the higher nature of man.

\* See note T.

When the huffing gusts of November assail the embrowned forests, it is the amusement of an idle moment to watch the course of a single leaf, torn from a topmost bough, and to follow its flight, hurried by eddies of wind into the fields of upper air—there to perform giddy circuits—the sport of chance; until, borne away by the general current, it travels west or east, and slowly descends to its destined resting-place on a distant spot. A movement not altogether unlike that of the severed leaf, driven of the winds, is displayed by the wanton flight of the swallow on a tranquil summer's evening: and if the atmosphere were not seen to be motionless, one might well imagine that the bird, like the leaf, was passively yielding to every fitful blast. But let the little aeronaut be brought to the earth, and his structure examined; and it will become manifest that his movements have sprung from other than external impulses. We first notice the mechanical apparatus by which the living machine is held buoyant in the air; and then, by dissection, follow the silvery threads which connect the merely mechanical parts—the solid frame-work—and the contractile fibres, with the head; whereon, also, are set those instruments which bring the animal into intelligent contact with distant objects around it. Here, then, are the *means* of movement; and the means, also, of keeping this movement in correspondence with place and circumstance of the external world. But we still have to seek the *motive*, or impulse of movement.

Let, then, the palpitating bosom be reft, and we shall find the gastric sack, with its solvent juices and its peristaltic action; and we

perceive that it is gorged with insects, in every progressive stage of dissolution and of assimilation to the solid and fluid matter of the animal. We need not doubt, then, that the acrid chemical agent, which is accomplishing this conversion of the substance of one animal into that of another, acts also, when not so occupied, in some such way upon the sack itself as to excite an uneasiness, which being conveyed to the centre of consciousness, and being there conjoined with familiar impressions from the external world, and meeting there, also, the springs of muscular irritability, give impulse to the machine in the direction towards that external object, the image of which already exists in the memory conjoined with the sensations of gratified appetite. Now, in this dissection of the machine of animal life, the relation of parts, and their interaction for the production of a single result, are perfectly intelligible;—as much so as is the mechanism of a watch. But in the construction both of the watch and of the bird, there are certain ultimate connexions which lie beyond our ken, and which can be known only in their products. In the watch, these inscrutable facts are—the principle of elasticity in the springs, and the *vis inertiae* of the balance-wheel. That is to say, the two *last causes* in the machine can be traced no further than to a certain expansive property of steel, and to the universal law of momentum. In the machinery of the bird, the unknown or ultimate facts, though more in number, are not in themselves more recondite or obscure; but just as much so—neither more nor less. They are such as these; the chemical power of the several fluids; the



principle of muscular contraction ; the principle of assimilation and growth ; and the whole cerebral apparatus of sensation, and the interaction of sensations from without and within, producing locomotion, or muscular action. That is to say, as in the watch, so in the bird, the arrangement of parts and functions is intelligible, but the *powers* are unknown.

And yet, notwithstanding our hopeless ignorance, *in both instances*, of the ultimate connexions, we may safely and certainly reason concerning the proximate and intelligible parts of the contrivance ; and may, without being supposed to understand what in all cases lies beyond human knowledge, affirm that we comprehend the mechanism both of the watch and of the bird. The theory of the regular movement of wheels and indicators is truly given when all the parts that connect the elasticity of the two springs with the *vis inertiae* of the balance-wheel are described. And in like manner, the theory of action in the animal is truly given, when the several correspondences between the stomach, wings, eyes, ears, and brain of the bird, are enumerated.

But this one account of the movements of the animal machine does not explain all the facts observable in the wanton flight of a swallow ; for, beside some other movements, which, like those already mentioned, are easily traced home to certain functions or organs, as those were traced to the stomach, there are actions not to be in any such manner explained. It by no means appears that the little unlicensed venator invariably directs his flight towards the nearest or the best-fed gnat at any moment

within his circle of vision; nor that he is diverted from the pursuit of his victim, only by this or that assignable object of alarm, or of social attraction: his aerial gambols are too various, free, and erratic, to be all assigned to impulses of this order. It may be well, however, to turn to another subject in search of this other law of animal agency.

The young horse that, free a-field, makes large orbits over the level mead, is neither hunting his prey, nor flying before an enemy; yet does he put forth his powers of speed as if death were behind him, or life before. He stops on his course; snuffs the gale; leaps and plunges; snorts, and again darts onward;—in pursuit of nothing! Here our consciousness (unless octogenarians) aids us to interpret the seemingly causeless activity. To the plenitude of muscular power, and to the full tide of animal spirits, belongs an appetite asking for movement and sport; and this same desire, combined with other impulses, or taking its turn with them, in colts, kittens, children, and boyish adults, is the cause of a great part of all the hurry and the change which keep the world from stagnation.—But again; if the gay activity of the young horse be narrowly observed, a belief will be suggested that his course from side to side of his pasture—his capricious pauses, and his starts, obey yet some other internal law. He bites the grass a moment,—raises his head,—seems to ponder some freakish device, and, like the lightning, springs from his place, and is hardly to be followed by the eye. May it not be surmised—and if the manners of animals of all classes are watched, must it not be be-

lieved, that within the brain of the animal, (if indeed the brain be the seat of consciousness) as well as within the brains of men, an incessant movement is going on;\* or a stream of recollected sensations, fortuitously connected one with another, is flowing perpetually? Then these recovered emotions, or sensations, meeting, each moment, either with impressions from the senses, or with desires from the several viscera of life, form infinitely varied combinations of action. It is as if this under-current of thought had been included in the mental structure of the animal for the very purpose of breaking up that uniform, and mechanical, and *calculable* succession of movements, which must needs have resulted from the dull influence of three or four simply reasonable motives of action. By the means of this exquisite contrivance, which diversifies, indefinitely, the agency of the animal—the animal moves over a far larger circle of activity—meets with a thousand times more new occasions, and comes in contact with many more means of enjoyment, than could happen, if he were the mere creature of his appetites and desires.

In reference to these primary causes of action, namely, the desires of animal life, and the irascible, amatory, and cautionary emotions that spring from them; and the love of muscular action; and the suggestions of the perpetual current of thought; it is to be noted, that muscular movement takes place, in the strictest sense, spontaneously; or, shall we say, simultaneously with its cause? The cause and effect

\* See note U.

are not divided by an interval of deliberation ; there is no “determining to determine,” nor “willing to will,” nor balancing of reasons. To such instances the metaphysical analysis of volition, as consisting of a series of mental operations, is utterly inapplicable. We derive the notion of such an analysis from a class of volitions essentially differing from animal agency ; and it is a gross violation of the rules of science to extend it to cases with which it has no affinity.

But the lower classes of the sentient system offer also to our observation (in its ruder forms, at least) that complex order of volitions which, in the adult and cultured human subject, often supersedes those of a simple and elementary kind. Let us turn from the young horse a-field, to the old horse in the stable ; and we shall find, in his behaviour, many instances of an agency which implies *a mental process of inference* ; or, the connecting of event with event, and the deduction of a motive therefrom : or, in other words, we shall find him reasoning to a certain extent ; and acting in a manner which could never be accounted for on any of the principles already mentioned. The hackney who, times innumerable, has been saddled or collared, when he catches the footstep of his groom approaching the stable, awakes from the lethargy in which perhaps he had been standing in front of his rack : and if this lord of his destinies appears booted and spurred, and lays a hand upon the saddle and bridle, the provident animal, not doubting that he is to be led from his stall, to which he may not soon return, begins, without loss of time, and with the utmost

possible assiduity, to grind and swallow as large a stock of the material before him as his powers of mastication and deglutition will admit of. Now we must suppose, in this instance, a mental process in some degree complex, or ratiocinative, and one which differs essentially from that mere association of memory and perception which is shewn when the same animal swerves from his track, and turns aside toward the inn where heretofore he has been stabled and fed.

Yet is this faculty of mental combination very limited in the horse; so much so, that (a few extraordinary instances excepted)\* he scarcely at all conforms himself *reasonably* to the new occasions that arise in the course of the service he renders to man. Let him but entangle his fore leg in the strap or chain of his head-stall, and he will either stand so shackled until he is lamed, or will plunge and kick until his strength is spent; although, if he were capable of calmly considering the nature of his embarrassment, he might, by the simplest movement, get himself free from all difficulty. The horse, therefore, must be cared for, as an infant, by his master; and under the circumstances of the artificial mode of life which he leads as the servant of man, thwarts his own real welfare in a hundred instances, because he cannot comprehend that connexion of cause and effect on which it depends. He cannot compare, or simultaneously entertain different ideas; or only in a very low degree.

Nevertheless, the horse possesses enough of

\* See note W.



intellectual faculty and sentiment to be dealt with advantageously, in the method of praise and blame, of punishment and reward;\* and he actually takes rank in the world of moral agents, inasmuch as he is sensible to emotions of shame and honour; and is capable also, in a small degree, of governing one impulse by another. A horse may, therefore, be managed by means which it would be utterly absurd to address to a hen, a goose, a pig, or an ass. The agency of one class of animals is found to differ from that of another, by all the amount of *an additional element*. And it would be highly unphilosophical to reason concerning the two as if they were one and the same. And here the reader must again be reminded that, whether or not we are able to push our analysis of these elements as far as we might desire, we must concede the fact of a diversity in the mental conformation of different animals, giving to one species a much wider range of action than is occupied by another; and the reader, while he grants this fact, will easily divine the application that may be made of it to the human race.

We ascend many degrees on the scale of reason, of moral sensibility, and of complex volition, when we turn from the horse to the dog. This intelligent and sensitive animal, associated, not by mere accident, with man, but made for his companionship, and not unworthily called his friend, may be said to stand as an anomalous instance in the system of sentient beings; inasmuch as, while in other species

\* See note X.

(perhaps *every* other species) there exists a manifest correspondence, or *functional equality*,\* between the mechanical structure of the animal and his mental capacity; so that any supposed addition to his muscular implements would be useless, without more intelligence than he actually possesses:—the dog has more *mind* than *instrument*. His power of reason and his sensibility, on a thousand occasions, and very remarkably, go beyond the range of his mechanical apparatus. The dog is, in this sense, a *needy* animal; and he is the only one so put to difficulty. He could effect much more than he does, both for himself and his master, if his legs and paws were capable of a greater diversity of movements: yet, perhaps, we ought rather to consider him as an *animal over-rich* in sense, than as an *intelligence* poor in means.

A good test for discovering the elements of the mental conformation of any order of beings, is afforded, *first*, by the familiar and unquestionable facts of the *educational treatment* which common experience proves to be applicable to it; and *then*, by the emotions or sentiments which are excited in our minds by its qualities or dispositions. In this method we employ, as it were, a chemical agent for bringing to light a concealed ingredient. The dog is the subject of abundantly more *education*, and is the object of far more *sentiment* than the horse; not arbitrarily or accidentally so; but because he possesses more intellectual faculty, and more sensibility. His senses are eminently acute; his memory is retentive and exact; his passive

\* See note Y.

power of acquiring habits is great ; and, to complete his mental endowments, he is able, in a considerable degree, to hold in combination more than two or three connected ideas ; and among them to select the proper inference from the antecedents. Thus qualified, he remembers his master's usages ; comprehends his master's operations ; and acts his part in accomplishing his master's intentions. Then, as a moral being, he is susceptible of so lively and pertinacious an attachment to individuals ; he has so much sense of duty and of honour ; and is capable of so intense a wretchedness under the sense of ill conduct and merited displeasure—that he becomes properly the object of correlative sentiments of affection, complacency, or displeasure, in the human mind. The dog, in virtue of his personal character, or his individual dispositions, is, apart from all sophistication or extravagance, regarded with feelings which it would be as unreasonable to restrain, when so called forth, as to bestow in the same degree upon any other species of domestic animals.

And yet the dog is limited in his range of mental faculty and of sensibility ; and, in comparing his powers with those of man, we discern the more clearly the foundation of that different treatment of which the higher nature is the subject ;—and discern, too, the ineffable absurdity of the metaphysical doctrine which assumes the agency of men, of brutes, and of machines, to be one and the same thing. The dog, not endowed with that inexplicable faculty which prompts the beaver to construct for himself a hut ; or the white ant to erect a cathedral of mud ; or the rook to weave for his family an

aerial tabernacle,—has no *rational* power of attaining a similar result. If deprived of his comfortable kennel, he will nestle in a corner, or edge himself into a rick ; but never attempts (though loose materials of all sorts are lying about) to construct a house. He feels that a wall, or fence, or stack, gives him protection from rain and wind ; but he does not separate this *common quality* of the wall, fence, or stack, from the particulars in which it is found ; or think of it abstractedly ; and therefore does not conceive of it as residing in a new combination of matter, to be assembled by himself. Or, to exhibit the same limitation of faculty under another condition. The dog may learn to take a penny to the shop, to deposit it on the counter, and, with significant gesture, to demand his roll. But the most laborious endeavours would, probably, fail to teach him the equity of the relation between two pence and two rolls, and three pence and three rolls. Nor, supposing that he had dropped one of the pieces of money on the way, would he draw for himself the inference, that he must, *therefore*, content himself with one roll the less. And yet a very young child would perceive these relations, and deduce these inferences ; or would, at least, understand them instantaneously, or as by a flash of intelligence, when explained to him.

The want, or, at least, the extreme limitation of the power of abstraction, and of comparison of complex relations, affects, in an essential manner, the moral constitution of these inferior species ; even of the most intelligent of them. And the possession of such powers gives to man his responsibility, invests him with the anxious

prerogative of being master of his destinies ; and, in a word, transfers him from the present to a future system of retributive treatment.

But we must advance by degrees towards our conclusion. The more sensitive species of animals, especially the dog and the elephant, enter within the pale of the moral system, or stand at its threshold (just as, in virtue of their sagacity, they enter within the pale of the intellectual), by their susceptibility of elementary emotions, which place them, to a certain extent, in communication with man, and render them the objects, individually, of *his* moral sensibilities. And the parallelism between the *intellectual* and the *moral* difference between man and the brute holds entire. The dog and the elephant will do any thing that comes within the range of association of ideas ; or of the simplest connexions of cause and effect :—but not more. And, in like manner, are they open to the keenest emotions of gratitude, shame, revenge. Yet do we soon touch the boundary of their moral capacities. The elephant has his direct emotions, and is retentive of them ; but he does not abstract the quality which has so strongly affected him from the act or person to which it belongs :—he is conscious of that difference in temper which distinguishes one of his keepers from another, and treats them both accordingly ; but he forms no *separate idea* of goodness and malignity ; much less compares such abstracted ideas with his own correlative emotions ; and therefore he digests no complex notion of virtue and of vice. As the inevitable consequence of this deficiency of faculty, neither the dog nor the elephant cogitates upon *his own* dispositions,



or personal character ; or ever institutes a mental comparison between his own behaviour or habitual temper, and any such notion of a moral quality. *Therefore*, neither dog nor elephant condemns or dislikes *himself* ; much less conceives the abstract idea of a better disposition as an object of desire : and, therefore, never attempts the work of self-education, by representing ill feelings, and favouring the better.

Accordingly, a self-originated reformation of manners is never looked for from the brute. He may indeed be amended in his dispositions by *external treatment* ;—he may become more or less bland or tractable, in consequence of changes in his *constitution* or *diet* ; but he never changes in consequence of a mental process, bringing two abstract qualities into comparison, and allowing the one to be chosen and followed, while the other is hated and avoided.—If it be asked, on what ground we infer these deficiencies of *internal structure* in the brute mind ; we reply, that the internal defect may fairly be implied from the absence of the proper outward results of the supposed faculty. In following even the most sagacious animal through his movements in connexion with new and artificial occasions, we catch him at fault, precisely for the want of the power of abstraction : the internal structure, though recondite, is as good as laid bare in such instances ; and we cease to wonder, that a being so deficient should not provide for his welfare by artificial means.

And the very same deficiency necessitates his moral condition ; and (knowing it) though we feel complacency or displacency towards the dog or the elephant, according to his dis-

positions, we neither assign to him the praise of virtue, in the one case, nor impute to him the blame of vice, in the other. The animal that does not observe proportions, nor use instruments, nor construct machines, does not, *for the same reason*, turn or re-model his own character;—does not, *in any degree*, educate himself. Virtue, vice, praise, blame, law, government, retribution, are proper conditions of the existence of a being who, by his use of *arbitrary signs*, by his employment of *complicated means*, and, by his conversions of the powers of nature to his particular advantage, makes it evident that he possesses a faculty which, *in connexion with his moral sensibilities*, renders virtue, vice, praise, blame, law, government, retribution, the *true correlatives* of his nature.

The sophism which would *sever* virtue, vice, praise, blame, law, government, retribution, from the human nature, contains an absurdity of precisely the same degree as must belong to an argument that would *attach* these conditions to the brute. It were a whim of the same order, to look for arts and accomplishments among tigers, kites, sharks, as *not* to look for them among men; and it is nonsense of the same magnitude, to deny that the being who builds, plants, writes, and calculates, cannot work upon his own dispositions, or, in other words, is not blame-worthy; as to affirm that tigers, kites, and sharks, might, if they so pleased, convert their natures, and become more amiable, and less rapacious, than hitherto they have shewn themselves. While instituting a physical comparison of this sort, in what light,

we may ask, appears that abstract doctrine which would measure men and worms by the same standard? we may surely say, that, though affirmed to be demonstrably certain as *an abstraction*, it is a nullity when brought into contact with the real world. The demonstrations of mathematical science, when applied either to earth or heaven, fit all things, and correspond to all;—the one class of truths works glibly with the other; and we confess, with an emotion of delight, the presence of that harmony, which is the test of universal truth.\* But when *metaphysical* abstractions, of a certain order, are attempted to be dove-tailed upon the actual constitution of nature, the one set of principles calls the other fool, and both utterly refuse to coalesce.

#### SECTION V.

THE conjunction of the higher elements of intellectual and moral being with the common ingredients of animal life, is beautifully developed to the eye that, with philosophical attention, observes the growth and expansion of the human mind from infancy to manhood. Nature, in preparing to bring upon the theatre of the world so noble an agent as man, steps back, that she may take the bolder leap, and reach a higher stage. Man, throughout the period of his infancy, is, *as an agent*, below zero. Though launched as a separate being in the world, he is still an *embryo*, and exists only within the coil of maternal vigilance. It

\* See note Z.

cannot be doubted that the perceptions of the human infant are more confused and illusory than those of the young of animals; and probably amount to nothing more (during the first six or eight weeks) than vague sensations, conveying no knowledge of the external world. His instincts also are few, and less *determinate* than those of other new-born animals; and his muscular power, far from being commensurate with his weight and bulk, is a mere element of action, which remains yet to be developed. But the developement of this necessary power commences at once; and seems to be effected by the constitution of an immediate and invariable connexion between the muscular excitability and *every sensation* that affects the conscious principle, whether arising from internal organs, or from impressions on the senses. The babe is, while waking, a machine of perpetual movement, in a greater or less degree; and it is not difficult to trace the movement, in each instance, to some passing sensation. To affirm that such *actions* (if so they may be termed) have in them the conditions of agency as described by metaphysicians, were most preposterous.—There is no *volition*, in any intelligible sense of the word; nothing but the simple fact of muscular contraction, as an immediate sequence upon sensation. This primary element of agency holds a continued, but diminishing, force, to the latest period, and when other elements take the lead; and it maintains the animal activity in a way that might be compared to the use of a fly-wheel in a machine. Thus at once are the muscles brought into play, exercised, and strengthened, and taught

to obey instantaneously the mind. The strivings of the arms and legs, the turning of the head, the cries, the smiles, give to the little scholar his lesson, until fatigue prevails; and all the forces of the system are sent in upon the involuntary muscles and the secreting organs.\*

The distinction commonly made between voluntary and involuntary muscular action, is clearly founded upon a real difference. But when this physiological distinction is conjoined with the metaphysical description of volition, as a mental process, consisting of successive parts, it gives rise to a false supposition; and suggests the belief that *all* movements not involuntary, are effects of rapidly conducted deliberations and determinations, are *orders in council*. That complex process which, even *in the adult*, takes place only on special occasions, when antagonist motives are in conflict—as when prudential or moral considerations are wrestling with desires, is assumed as *the model at large* of all the acts of the mind. But if we fix an attentive eye upon the preparation which nature is making in the first months of life for bringing the machine into full play, we shall discern no evidence whatever of any such deliberative operation; and, on the contrary, shall be led to think that the main business of infancy is the formation and cultivation of that habit of the animal system which places its movements in *immediate contact* with the sensations and emotions of the mind. This habit (to the formation of which the first two years of life are allotted) is the broad foundation of agency, upon

\* See note A A.



which is slowly to be reared the secondary habits, which may at length become principal and predominant.

At a very early period the agency of the infant is enriched and extended by the development of the two correlative emotions, which, in their multiform combinations, are afterwards to constitute the moral life. Nature is eminently *conservative* in all her operations; and, in the instance of the human infant, is seen to make timely provision for its safety and comfort, in a double method. As soon as (indicated by the intelligent movement of the eye) external objects are discerned *as such*,—as soon as the perceptions of touch and sight are well combined, and *persons* distinguished, evidence also is given that the sensation of animal enjoyment, and the elementary delectations of the senses of sight and hearing, pass out—or shall we say cluster—around that familiar object, and concomitant of all pleasure—the mother; and awaken an emotion, not to be analysed, of complacency, which, as afterward tutored and informed, assumes the name of love, and is the primary constituent of the moral life. It need not be said in what way the development of this emotion secures the wellbeing of the infant, so far as its wellbeing depends upon maternal vigilance.

But this single conservative means does not adequately meet all the occasions that arise in this world of perils. It is a universal truth, affirmed by the elegant Greek, that nature has given weapons to all her children;—

Φύσις κέρατα ταύροις, &c.

And he might have added—to the human infant smiles and cries. Not merely are pains and uneasiness instantly and involuntarily made known by one of the most awakening and disturbing of all sounds, but an emotion is engendered which is the antagonist of the one already mentioned, and which, like that, (though at a much later era)\* attaches itself to particular external objects; and when so attached, is called resentment. This feeling, whatever ill consequences may result from its excess, is manifestly a conservative element of life; and actually operates to secure the habitual watchfulness of the nurse or mother, who is fain to prevent or divert its excesses. The intelligent mother (or which is the same thing) the affectionate and instinctively sage mother, uses her skill incessantly, as *manager* of the two elementary and antagonist principles of the moral life; and, by avoiding, as far as possible, to excite the irascible emotion, and by giving the fullest play to the loving principle, she strengthens the latter by all the force of habit, and deprives the former of the corresponding advantage. Thus the ends of nature are secured; though one of her means of preservation is superseded, or is confined within the narrowest limits.

That developement of the reasoning faculty, and that power of complex thought, which are the grounds of intelligent and responsible agency, are not apparently developed, even in the lowest degree, until some time after the habits both of the animal and the moral life have become firmly settled.

\* See note B B.

Mobility, elasticity, promptitude, as the conditions of muscular action, and the custom of the mental operations, get the start of the deliberative faculties ; and so possess themselves by usage of the physical and intellectual being, that they hold through life their priority ; and, whatever power reason may at length acquire, man acts ten thousand times in the simple, elementary, or spontaneous manner which he learns in infancy, for once that he acts in the manner which metaphysicians describe when they analyse the process of volition.\*

It is not until the power of locomotion has put the little pupil of nature in trust, to a certain extent, with his own preservation, and when, as its consequence, he is brought hourly into new circumstances, that the first unquestionable developement of reason may be observed. By this time usual sequences of events begin to fix themselves connectively in the memory, and give birth to the expectation of like results from like antecedents. Then follows (aided by the imitative principle, to a greater extent than perhaps we imagine) the employment of means for the attainment of an end :—and the occasions which give exercise to this incipient work of reason are presenting themselves every moment. About the same era, the growing use of language, and especially of its adjectives, generates and favours the process of abstraction ; and the sounds *good, nice, pleasant, sweet, fine, light, dark, white, red, green, blue, hard, soft, high, low, &c.* so fix themselves in the memory

\* See note C C.

in connexion with *qualities*, as to admit of *sejunction* from their concretes; and are all, with many others, very soon actually employed by the tiny metaphysician, in a manner which makes it unquestionable that the mental machine is fast getting all its wheels, one after another, into movement.\*

It would be curious and entertaining, if not instructive, to trace, by a series of exact observations, the influence of language (and other signs) in eliciting or hastening that last expansion of the mind, which imparts to it a deliberative power; or which constitutes man a voluntary agent in the higher sense of the term; and which, in its matured state, carries him to an immeasurable distance beyond the inferior species of sentient beings. Daily, hourly, occasions arise in that world of *commencements*—the nursery, whereon the hasty strides of desire are arrested by maternal vigilance, and *other motives* placed before the mind; and antagonist considerations urged upon its attention. Here begins the process of complex volition:—at the moment of its commencement the being sets foot upon a course that has no limit, is translated from the lower world of animal life, into the higher sphere of rational and moral existence;—is introduced to the community of responsible agents; and takes up his heirship of an interminable destiny.

Language is the instrument employed in awakening this hitherto dormant faculty. But when once aroused, and in some degree strength-

\* See note D D.

ened by use, the law of association, (or suggestion) also calls it into exercise; and continues through life to do so; except in instances in which such associations are obliterated, or superseded by long habits of vicious indulgence. The condition of the accustomed sensualist is, in the view of science, a true infancy of the mind. Many accidents, also, bring such of the desires as are purely sensual or selfish into opposition, rendering the gratification of the one incompatible with that of the other:—the two stand in conflict for a moment, or more: and whether the final decision be better or worse, the mind is by the mere contestation exercising its faculty of complex thought; and not improbably admits, during the moments of hesitation, many other considerations of a prudential or moral kind, which, even if they do not prevail, enlarge the power of mental comprehension and comparison.\*

From this time forward (and according to the excellence or deficiency of the moral education he receives), the human infant acts in a considerable proportion of instances deliberatively. As a consequence of this new mode of agency, the association or suggestion of ideas becomes so modified (especially where education does its work efficiently), as that it obeys, to a great extent, the law of *real or rational connexion*, in the place of that of mere juxta-position; and brings forward, like a faithful and intelligent minister, those considerations or emotions which properly belong to the immediate occasion. This expansion of the mind makes itself ap-

\* See note E E.



parent, though somewhat later, by the developement of the inventive faculty ; and the little mechanician, soon after the time when he has taken rank among responsible agents, is seen, by the exercise of the very same faculties of abstraction and of complex thought, to form conceptions of an end or design, and to select, from among the stores of suggestion, the fittest means for its attainment. These nearly simultaneous phenomena deserve especial attention, as they illustrate each other ; and, if duly considered in conjunction, would dissipate much of the obscurity which metaphysical science has shed over the physiology of man.

We should here notice that change in the sentiments of those around it, which insensibly accompanies the developement, as already described, of the infant mind. Even before it has taken place, the infant has made himself the object of fondness and complacency, or of displacency, in various degrees, according to his permanent dispositions or individual character ; and, before he is *blamed or applauded*, is loved, more or less, not only with a love of general benevolence, and not only with the instinctive parental yearning of the heart ; but with a specific feeling which (allowing always for the susceptibility of the *subject* of it) is related to the qualities of the *object* as directly and infallibly, as the mercury of the thermometer is related to the temperature about it. It is of no avail for metaphysicians to demonstrate that such correlative feelings are unreasonable, unjust, and absurd : the physiologist *finds them* an inseparable and universal ingredient of human nature ; and thinks himself entitled to *presume*

that they are founded in the reason of things, even though he should not be able to demonstrate so much; and, at all events, he clearly discerns that these involuntary emotions are the great conservative principles of the moral world, and could not be obliterated without reducing that world to horrible confusion. But happily there is no danger of any such prevalence of sophistical philosophy as should unhinge the course of nature. A very few minds excepted, and these already diseased—it will remain true, that gentleness, meekness, candour, kindness, will excite affection; while irascibility, sullenness, obstinacy, and malignant acerbity, will as certainly draw towards the subject of them dislike and repugnance.

This happens, we say, *before* the era of the unquestionable developement of the power of self-government, and before the child is properly deemed praiseworthy or blamable, or amenable to law. But after this important change has manifestly taken place, a corresponding change is insensibly effected in the conduct and sentiments of those around him.

In the first place, *his particular actions* are approved or blamed, on the tacit principle that, *now*, by the expansion of his faculties, it has become the law of his mental operations, that, in the moment of action, the several antagonist motives that should influence action, were, with more or less distinctness, presented to the mind, in consequence of previously formed associations. The agent, therefore, is deemed to have made his choice, for the better or the worse, *from among alternatives*; and it were to degrade him from the rank to which he has attained,

to suppose that, like the inferior orders of the animal world, he did but obey a *single impulse*, or sensation.

This is not all:—the agent is supposed to have made his choice, for the better or the worse, in this particular instance, according to his habitual dispositions; and the action is approved or blamed, not only as an insulated fact, but as an indication of *character*. And then, again, this character is the object, not only of complacency or of displacency, but of *approval* or of *blame*. The character is approved or blamed on the very same tacit principle (differently applied, and further extended) which is the ground of the approval or blame of particular actions, namely, that the now-expanded faculty of the agent enables him, at once, to form abstract notions of moral qualities—to compare such notions with the sentiments they excite in his own mind, and in the minds of others—to institute comparisons between *his own* dispositions and the dispositions which he admires or condemns in others; and, finally, to make his dispositions the subject of a process of self-education.

That so much as this is supposed, and is presumed to be true, by mankind generally, and is established by universal experience, is shewn by the threefold treatment that is adopted with the view of amending the conduct and dispositions, both of children and adults. *First*, rewards and punishments are employed for insuring right determinations in particular instances of conduct. This is done on the strength of the well-known fact, that the law of association will, on the next occasion, present to the mind of the agent the consideration

of good or ill consequence to result to himself, as the fruit of his behaviour; and this consideration may actually avail (as often in fact it does) to counteract the most vivid selfish desires. *Secondly*, it is usual to attempt to amend the dispositions and the character by *an external management* of the exciting causes of the various emotions, and passions, and appetites. This *management* constitutes a great and most important part of the business of education; and should also receive much more attention than hitherto it has done, from legislators, and public instructors, and guardians of the people.\*

These two methods are applicable, as we have before said, in an inferior degree, even to animals—to the horse, the dog, the elephant. But the *third* method of treatment is exclusively proper to human nature; and its propriety rests upon the fact, that the human mind includes an element of action not granted to the brute. It is, we say, common to endeavour to awaken in the mind the desire of amending or reforming itself—that is, its habits and settled dispositions. This attempt differs from the second method, or the management of dispositions by external means; and it proceeds upon the known and familiar fact, that an introverted effort of the mind does actually, and often, and under a great variety of circumstances, take place. We are not obliged to shew how these facts consist with certain metaphysical principles, or with certain theological doctrines: it is enough that we know them to be recorded, *passim*, on all pages of the history of man; and

\* See note F F.



that they belong to his physiology. By all means, let the mental process be analysed, if it be possible to do so: but, if not, it nevertheless stands among things known and acknowledged by all mankind.\*

It is, we say, known to be the usage of the human mind, to make its own acts and dispositions the subject of its meditations, and that these meditations enkindle emotions of the same kind with those excited by the view of similar acts and dispositions in other men—and that to these generic emotions is superadded a specific feeling, more intense than the first, and which borrows its force from the principle of self-love, and takes its quality from that of the contemplated act or disposition, becoming either complacent or displacent: in the latter case bringing with it emotions of shame, fear, and remorse. It is, moreover, proper to the human mind to conceive abstractedly of a mode of action, or a style of character, *better than its own*; and to assume that conception as a permanent object of desire. In consequence of such a desire, a tendency towards it, more or less strong and uniform, takes place. In this manner, amendments, reformations, and even complete revolutions of character, are every day occurring in the human system. It should here be stated, that those deteriorations of character, which are also continually going on in the same system, do not come about by a corresponding process of the mind, or as the result of a conception of vicious qualities, and a consequent pursuit of them; but arise simply

\* See note G G.



from the unresisted progress of sensual or malignant passions, which, by indulgence, become at length paramount habits.

If it were demanded to analyse more strictly the first movements of this mental process of self-education, it would seem the most auspicious method to turn from the *moral* operation, which has been enveloped in mystifications; and to examine the corresponding intellectual operation, wherein the mind holds to a certain abstract quality, pursues it, notwithstanding a thousand disturbing causes, through a long and intricate series of relations, and actually attains its ultimate conception. It is in such operations that the human mind displays its vast superiority to the most sagacious of the brute tribes, and proves that it can soar with a steady wing far above the region of mere animal impulses, of accidental associations, and of all determining causes, except such as lead it toward the high ground of unchanging Truth. Now this intellectual operation runs parallel with the moral operation of self-education; and the one may be taken to illustrate or explain the other.\*

Whether this distinguishing faculty which divides man from his fellow-sentient beings by an immense interval, must be regarded as inscrutable—like the ultimate properties of matter; or whether (as is probable) it admits of being separated into its components, is not *highly important*, even to physiology; and is scarcely, in the remotest manner, significant to morals or religion; since the fact of its existence is familiarly known; and this fact is enough for

\* See note H H.

all practical purposes. The simple and intelligible interests of ethics and theology have no more connexion with such a scientific analysis, than have the labours of the mechanician with an explanation (could it be given) of the law of gravity.

It can hardly be necessary to state the well-known fact, that this power of introverted action, which, by emphasis, may be termed, the excellence of human nature, is liable to lie absolutely dormant, for want of excitement;—just as the fellow-faculty of abstraction also lies dormant, or nearly so, among barbarous tribes; and, moreover, that it is exposed to much damage, and may at length be quite enfeebled, by a course of vicious indulgences. Man, we say, may either lie inert, beneath the level of his proper destiny; or, which is a more melancholy case, he may *fall* below that level: he may revert to the moral imbecility of infancy; he may sink into an abyss, where he grovels hopelessly, and is less estimable than the brute; nay, must be content to share sentiments of loathing with the hog, or the hyæna. Sad condition this of *necessity*!—miserable ruin and decay of the noblest structure!\*

It should also be remembered, that, apart from any theological principles, if the actual condition of human nature be contemplated purely as a matter of physical science, it must be admitted to have sustained, from whatever cause, a *universal* damage, or shock; inasmuch as its higher faculties do not, like the faculties of the inferior classes, work invariably, or work auspiciously; but are often, and in a vast

\* See note I I.

proportion of instances, overborne, defeated, and destroyed; or they lie absolutely dormant; while, in *no instances*, do they take that full, free, and perfect course, which is abstractedly proper to them. We may, if we please, compare this physical fact with certain principles of theology, and may derive from the comparison a confirmation of our religious belief. But this is a matter not pertinent to our immediate purpose.

And now, if we must indeed bring those ill-chosen and ill-fated words, *liberty* and *necessity*, to bear upon the physiology of the sentient world, all that is proper to be said may be comprised in a very few words.—It is manifest, then, that in passing on from mechanical and chemical to animal agencies, we are not passing from infallible to fallible sequences, nor from causation to contingency, nor from necessity to liberty (as the opposite of necessity). The transition is of altogether another sort; namely, from a *less* complex system of causation, to one that is *more* so. But the one system is as truly causal as the other,—or else neither is at all so: *both* are necessary, or neither is necessary; both contingent or neither. If the one system may be foreknown, so may the other—or neither:—if there be *any* fortuity in the universe, the universe is a chaotic mass of fortuities. Nevertheless, the distinction of *more or less complex*, is an important one. The course of a bullet propelled by gunpowder from a musket, may readily, and with great precision, be calculated, for it is determined by a few known powers and laws. And so is the course of a bullet that is violently shaken in a canister: indeed, in

*this* instance, there is a power or two the less to be included in the calculation. But, who would attempt to forecast the thousand successive reverberations of the ball from the sides of the canister, even though it were agitated in the most exact and regular manner; much less if it were shaken by the hand? Yet is that track, though not to be calculated by human faculties, as strictly the consequence of the combined laws of impulse and gravitation, as is the course of a bullet shot from a gun; and if the one may be calculated by *human* intelligence, the other might also be foreknown by super-human faculties. Every one is aware that the application of the word *chance* to the course of the ball in the canister, is a mere colloquial impropriety.

The complexity of causes is vastly increased when we turn to the animal world;—so increased, that all *human* calculation is utterly set at defiance. Even if we knew all the external circumstances of an animal, at a given moment, and all his sensations of a physical kind, we could not know the succession of mental states which each moment combines itself with the passing impressions and desires: nor, if we did know this also, could we calculate those combinations. We therefore can merely forecast *probabilities*, in regard to the movements of animals; but can never set a foot upon the solid ground of certainty. A calculation of causes so many and so intricate, must be assigned to an intelligence immensely greater than that of man. Every new power that is admitted into a complex machinery, tends, of course, to multiply the variations of

its movements; and so to render a calculation of those movements more voluminous or difficult; yet not to render them at all less *causal*, or more fortuitous.

But this general principle is open to an important exception;—to wit, if the new and superadded power be of a paramount or commanding sort, it will simplify the movements, rather than complicate them, and bring them more within the range of calculation: instances may easily be adduced in which the agencies of higher and more complex natures are far more simple and invariable than those of inferior beings. An example or two will illustrate this statement.—The mental machinery of the adult contains more movements, is more complex, than that of the infant: new faculties have come into play; the materials of intellectual action have been vastly augmented; and many susceptibilities have been quickened, which are dormant or non-existent in the infant. But the mere combination of internal and external impressions renders the agency of the infant absolutely incalculable (to the human mind); whereas the agency of the adult, though open to a hundred times more influences, is often simplified by the predominance of some one or two of its powers. As, for instance, a vehement animal desire, or a ruling mental passion, long indulged, *sets* through the soul like an impetuous current, and gives a high degree of uniformity to the conduct. Or a similar uniformity and simplification may result from the predominance of virtuous emotions. Or, again—and this is an instance of the most significance—that



very expansion of the intellectual faculties which imparts the greatest *organic* complexity to the machine, does, at the same time, *when it reaches its perfection*, restore (if we may so speak) to the operations of the mind the most absolute simplicity. Truth is one; and it is the glory and perfection of the intellectual nature to perceive that oneness: and in proportion as truth is so perceived, and embraced, and delighted in, the agency of the being will become more simple, and *calculable*, and will lose its character of variableness. The same is true of the perfection of moral faculties; and it may, as a general principle, be affirmed, that perfection in all orders, and of all kinds, tends, with equal steps, towards simplicity, uniformity, and constancy.

And yet what, it may be asked, is gained by applying to this simplicity or constancy, which is the character of perfection, the term necessity? There is a sense, unquestionably, in which it *may* be so applied; but it must be called one of the most infelicitous, and ill-omened of all pedantic perversions so to do. We gain, it is true, the poetical conception of an awful, invisible goddess, stern in feature, inflexible in temper, and implacably despotic, who rules the universe, and who vouchsafes no other reply to supplicants, than the monotonous response — “Whatever is, must be.” Apart from this poetry of metaphysics, nothing is more simple than the *certain connexion* between perfect intelligence, and the perception of a truth presented to it. Who would wish to be endowed with a freedom from this sort of necessity? To whom is this kind of despotism gall-

ing, or intolerable? To none, surely, but to madmen and fools. Nor can any but the debauched covet that other species of liberty which excuses from the moral necessity of taking always the road of virtue. To be bound by this *necessity* is the true *liberty*; and, in fact, as we approach to the high ground of intellectual and moral perfection, liberty and necessity merge in one and the same condition; and he is the most nobly free, whose reason and whose volitions are the most invariable and uniform; or, to use an improper term, are the most imperatively necessary.

Whoever revolts from this union, and would court rather a mode of agency as far removed as possible from certainty, and from calculable sequency—an agency in this improper sense *free*, should look for it, not in the heavens, but upon earth, and among the most infirm of its tribes. He should put off the man, and revert to infancy; and should plunge among the eddies of ignorance and folly. There he will find a liberty to follow the ten thousand paths of error, instead of the one path of truth; and there he may surrender himself to a course so capricious, so broken, and so tortuous, that his wanderings must defy the power of any intelligence short of the Supreme, to calculate their terminations.

Nothing, one would think, ought to be wished for by any order of beings, but that its mechanism should be so constructed as to secure (in the ordinary course of things) its welfare. It is by such a well-ordered construction of parts and functions, that the preservation and reproduction of the animal tribes are actually secured: their machinery, while it obeys the great laws

of matter and mind, accomplishes the beneficent intention of the Creator; and each individual enjoys his hour of physical good. The wellbeing of man is in the same manner provided for, in the constitution of his more complex nature; and so long as *all the parts* of this constitution perform their functions, all is well. Damage and ruin arise from the inaction or decay of some of the parts. *The actual existence of this damage is precisely that point of physical science at which it is intersected by theology, and where the former must ask light and aid from the latter.*

For a moment, let it be inquired, what advantage a sentient and intelligent being could derive from an absolute emancipation from causation, or from the certain sequency of effects? The very notion of a real contingency, in *this* sense, is inadmissible in philosophy. But let it be granted as a thing conceivable. Ought not, then, this freedom from causation to be termed rather a necessity of the most dire and formidable sort? and he whose prerogative it should be, would become an object of as much pity as the wretch who lives in the grasp and keeping of a madman. This power or prerogative of contingency, *by the hypothesis*, obeys no motive; adheres to no connexion of truth with truth; is not to be calculated upon, or foreknown; is not governed by relationship to any actual existence, or abstract principle. But it is manifest that, to an intelligent being, whose welfare is committed to himself, and who provides for that welfare *by calculating upon the known order of nature*, the liability to contingency, whether in the ex-

ternal or internal system, must be a pure curse, by deranging every provision, and thwarting every purpose. A liability to sudden frenzy would not be at all more fearful than the liability to sudden contingency. The unhappy being, so privileged to live beyond the circle of nature, and so distinguished as an outlaw from the orderly system of causation, would be justified in making for himself such an apology as this:—"Whenever, and as long as my conduct is governed by reasons and motives, I cheerfully consent to be treated as a responsible agent; and am willing to receive the due consequences of my actions. But not so in those dark moments when the fit of contingency (my fatal glory) comes upon me:—then, and in those portentous moments, I am no longer master of my course; but am hurried hither and thither, by a power in the last degree capricious, whose freakish movements neither men nor angels, nor the Omniscient himself, can foresee. Fain would I surrender this fatal freedom, and take my place among those who enjoy the benefits of the laws of nature and reason; but it is the unalienable condition of my existence to be governed by a power more stern and inexorable than Fate herself.—Alas! Contingency is mistress of my destinies."

If it be no excellence, no advantage, to be liable to contingency, in the matter of volition, it may, on the other side, be asked, if intelligent agents are deprived of any conceivable advantage, or are necessitated in the sense of *confinement* or *restraint*, by being placed in a state of inseparable connexion with a settled order of events in the worlds of matter and mind?—The

reply of common sense is, that this connexion is the very ground of their safety and happiness; and that to dissolve it, were to render reason useless, and ruin inevitable. And if common sense thus responds to the question, physical science corroborates the same conclusion, by developing in detail those occult correspondences between the structure of animals and the great laws—mechanical and chemical—of the material world, which give so much evidence at once of the wisdom and beneficence of the Creator.\*

But the fatalist (we mean the philosophical fatalist) and his opponent also—the advocate of contingent free will, concur in affirming that this alleged connexion of the intellectual and moral system with the fixed laws of the worlds of mind and matter, actually removes from virtue and vice all their substance, and renders these terms the representatives of a mere illusion. “Where there is *causation*,” says the philosophic defender of Arminian theology, “there can be neither praise nor blame, virtue nor vice.—But virtue and vice *must* be affirmed, and therefore human volition is free from causation.”—“Where there is *causation*,” says the philosophic fatalist,† “there is neither praise nor blame, neither virtue nor vice. But there *is* causation in human volitions; and therefore virtue and vice are empty names.”—Thus reason the extreme parties in this controversy.

Now, the *physiologist* might well content himself with spurning, unrefuted, the premises and

\* See note K K.

† See Diderot, as quoted above, pp. xxxv. xxxvi.



conclusions of both parties. It is enough for him that he finds, belonging to human nature—human nature as compared with that of inferior classes—certain emotions, and modes of feeling and acting, which, as they are specific and broadly distinguished from all others, must not be confounded, or lost sight of; and must therefore have names to themselves; and if the words *virtue*, *goodness*, *merit*, &c. are taken from his nomenclature, he must instantly invent new terms to stand in their places; but as well retain the old ones. Moreover, he finds that the qualities so designated subserve the most important and indispensable purposes in the constitution of the human system; and he would therefore, without infringing upon the duties of either moralist or theologian, reject, as a pestilent sophism, any theory which should tend to lessen the intensity of such salutary powers.

But the philosophical fatalist might be asked—If virtue and vice are not virtue and vice, what are they? He replies—“Virtue is *good fortune*; vice, *bad fortune*.” We will then apply this method of resolving an illusory notion into its proper nihility, to another case of a parallel kind; and then judge of its soundness.—While intent upon another object, the attention of Newton was suddenly attracted by a phenomenon which led him at length to the principle of the different refrangibility of the several elements of light. This was *good fortune*; but he laboriously pursued the casual suggestion, and after a long course of experiments and calculations, gave to the world the true science of optics. And this ultimate success, also, may

be called *good fortune*. For must we not admit the original vastness of his understanding to have been good fortune; and was not that mental character, or intellectual temper, good fortune, which made the attainment of scientific truth the paramount desire of his nature; and were not his external advantages of leisure and education also good fortune? and so was that physical wellbeing which allowed him to carry on his researches, until they reached their happy issue.

Now, if the philosophic fatalist means no more by his queer use of the term *good fortune*, in such an instance, than, by a pious conceit, to preach us a lesson in theology; and by a *quirk* to induce us, unawares, to trace "every good gift, and every perfect gift" to Him from whom all excellence descends, we can make no objection to his *intention*; but must protest against the method he adopts, which is puerile, affected, and circuitous.

But the sophist in question would, we are sure, indignantly spurn the imputation of couching a *religious* meaning under his quibble. Does he, then, intend by it to hide from the notice of mankind all those mental qualities—all that intelligence and perspicacity, and that activity, constancy, fortitude, and consistency, which intervened, *as causes*, between the first *fortunate* hint, and the ultimate establishment of the theory of light and colours? By applying the term *good fortune*, both to the accidental suggestion, and to the laborious workings of the mind upon it, does he wish to insinuate that the difference between the one and the other is a mere nothing—a shade, which should be

disregarded? In this case we ask why, or for what imaginable purpose, should we so confound things immensely different, and between which even the rudest mind discerns an infinite disparity? We beg leave of the sophist to adhere to the usages of common sense, and shall always, in future, as heretofore, call intelligence *intelligence*; labour *labour*; and good luck *good luck*.

But further; if it were really conceivable that so whimsical a use of the word good fortune should gain general credit, so as at length to dismiss from the recollections of men the difference between mere luck, or the accidental possession of an advantage, and the attainment of advantages by labour, skill, and perseverance; then it would immediately operate (and especially upon inferior minds) not merely to confound things distinguishable, but to destroy the very qualities that are the objects of the distinction. The sophism, we say, if really assented to, would debilitate those motives which are the springs of action, and would lead mankind back from the state of civilisation wherein many more advantages are received from labour than from luck, to the savage state; wherein the few advantages that are actually enjoyed spring more from luck than from labour. But can any such retrogressive movement be the work of true philosophy? Far from it! It is philosophy that has led mankind forward from the savage to the civilised condition; and whatever would arrest him in his course, or beat him back, is not philosophy.

If, then, it be a pedantic whim, and a whim of mischievous tendency, to apply both to an acci-

dental benefit, and to a benefit acquired after long and laborious efforts, the same term—good fortune; it is also a pedantic and a mischievous whim to call virtue good fortune; for virtue is not an accidental boon, thrown in a man's path, and with which he has nothing to do but to pick it up:—it is the result of a long-continued and laborious process, wherein the mind works upon and among its emotions, its desires, and its propensities. But, then, the pedantry in *this case* carries with it a real and efficacious power of mischief; inasmuch as the difficulty of attaining virtue consists, greatly, in that very laxity of spirit which the sophism tends to increase; and, on the other hand, it cherishes, favours, and enhances those specific illusions which hover around all vicious habits of the mind.—Vice, of every kind, is, to the spirit, *an inebriety*, having both its season of delirium, and its season of lethargy. Now, if the vicious subject be taught that his sensuality and his crimes are simply *ill fortune*, his delirium will be heightened by desperation; and his lethargy deepened by the removal of all sense of remorse.

This doctrine, then, of the philosophical fatalist, which, if applied to the intellect, would lead mankind to barbarism; does, *by a parallel process*, when applied to the conscience, lead him into the abyss of brutal debauchery and of ferocity. Shall we then admit, or shall we discard it?

#### SECTION VI.

It now only remains—and this part of our task may soon be dismissed—to consider the

question of liberty and necessity, as belonging to metaphysical science.

There lies before us a long series, or chain of prolate spheroids, linked together by a *copula*, and marked in pairs,—*a, b; a, b, &c.* Now, a philosopher of a certain school comes up, and lectures upon the series in the following manner:—

“You have always seen these spheroids arranged in this precise order; and your mind has acquired, as a habit, the belief (a pardonable prejudice) that they are inseparably or necessarily connected in this order, and could exist in no other. And in consequence of this habit, you have arbitrarily lettered them in pairs *a, b, &c.*, and furthermore have called *a*, cause, and *b*, effect: and then have formed to yourself a certain groundless and inexplicable notion, to which you give the name power; and you say that *a* has a power to produce *b*, and so on. But all this is a tissue of illusions. You really know *nothing* beyond the fact of the actual conjunction, or juxta-position, or uniform sequency of *a* and *b*; and your word *power* stands for nothing but an abstraction, that has grown, we hardly know how, out of this habit of your mind.”

How satisfactory is this exposure of an old and firm prejudice! Who shall dare in future to attach to the words *cause* and *effect* any other sense than that of an often-observed connexion? Or who shall venture, henceforward, to deduce an inference from the exploded doctrine of causation, in favour of the existence of a first cause, or creative power?

Nevertheless, unwilling to part so easily with



an ancient belief, and so promptly to dissolve an inveterate habit of the mind, we look again to the spheroids before us; turn them about, examine them on all sides, and endeavour, if possible, to discover if there be not a *real*, as well as an accidental, connexion between *a* and *b*. At length we find that *some* of them may be broken open, and their contents exposed; and it appears, on examining the interior of a pair, marked *a* and *b*, or *cause* and *effect*, that the spheroid *a* contains a series of figures, as thus—

$$4+8 \times 2-6 \div 2$$

Within the spheroid marked *b* is found another series—

$$8 \times 10+10 \div 10$$

Now, removing the spheroidal envelope, and retaining only the *contents* and the *copula*, *a* and *b* stand thus—

$$4+8 \times 2-6 \div 2 = 8 \times 10+10 \div 10$$

That is to say, we are simply presented with an *equation*; or the same quantity described in two forms, and connected by a sign which indicates their equivalence, and their *indissoluble connexion*; a connexion, not indeed of *power*, but of *relation*, and a connexion so absolute and real, that to receive *a*, and to reject *b* as its equivalent, would be a conspicuous absurdity.

Encouraged by this instance of success, we proceed with our analysis, and taking up at hazard, from different parts of the series, several pairs of spheroids, we find that, in every instance in which, by force or patient assiduity, we can break the shell, the contents consist of some such equation as was discovered in the

first. We have therefore, to a certain extent, refuted our philosophic reprover, who told us that these connected bodies were linked *only* by juxta-position; for we have ascertained that *some* of them, at least, are wedded by a real and indestructible relationship. But then there remain (and it is no small number) the infrangible spheroids. What shall be said concerning them? Nothing conclusive; but our philosopher is now deprived absolutely of the force of his specious argument: for it is *not* true, as he affirmed, that the connexion of the spheroids was nothing but a sequency which might have assumed any other order than the one it actually observed. If, on the faith of his word, we had disturbed the order, and then analysed them, nothing would have appeared but confusion. And if, in regard to the unanalysed bodies, he is free to *surmise* that they are not linked by a real connexion; we are equally free to suppose that a true and abiding bond ties them one to the other.

We are free to suppose this;—and should in fact use our freedom so far as to entertain the hypothesis—an hypothesis which can never be refuted, *until all the spheroids are actually analysed*—that *some* of these that defy our curiosity contain, like those we have opened, *equations*; and that the residue are joined by an *efficient* connexion; or, in other words, that *a* is a *power*, properly so called; and that *b* is its effect.

The reader who is familiar with the controversy on the relation of cause and effect, will readily make the intended use of the above illustration. As the question concerning human

agency has been confused and embarrassed by considering volition as one and the same thing in all sentient beings, and in all instances; whereas it differs by essential elements in different cases; so has the question concerning causation been surrounded with difficulties, by the common practice of allowing all conjoined events, vulgarly designated as cause and effect, to pass undistinguished under one and the same description. The puerile sophism of Hume takes its appearance of force from this confusion of things essentially different. It becomes, therefore, necessary to distribute into classes the mass of things popularly spoken of as cause and effect.

Such constant connexions, whether belonging to space or time, may be arranged under three heads, of which the First will comprise those that may be analysed, and which are found to resolve themselves into simple relations of equality, or proportion, or fitness.

The Second comprehends those in which the presence of an efficient power must be confessed :

And the Third those which are inscrutable by the human mind, and therefore ambiguous; and concerning which a surmise only can be entertained, as to the nature of the bond which unites them; but concerning which, it may safely be presumed, that, if they could be laid bare, they would resolve themselves into connexions, either of the first or of the second sort.

For the FIRST CLASS.—So many cubic feet of water are raised, per minute, from the deepest

adit of a mine, by a steam engine ; and in popular language it is usual to call the engine the cause, and the raised water the effect. But if, from this stupendous apparatus, are deducted *two powers*, the one chemical, the other mechanical (presently to be spoken of) then the whole vast system of contrivances resolves itself into a series or apposition of relations of equality, proportion, or *equilibrium* : and it is a proposition of precisely the same kind to say—

$$4+8\times 3=36;$$

Or to affirm that the steam engine will raise so many cubic feet of water every minute from the bottom of a mine. Or if a complete description of a steam engine were placed on one side of the sign of equivalence, and the measure of water expressed on the other, the predication implied would be infallible and invariable ; and to affirm of its two members, that they are connected by mere constancy of occurrence, would be an absurdity of the same sort, as to say, that  $4+8\times 3$  is connected with 36 in no other way than by accidental juxtaposition. Heat and water, applied the one to the other, combine ; and water combined with heat becomes an elastic vapour, occupying a space vastly greater than before. Now, though the reason of this irresistible combination has not hitherto been found, we are free to suppose that it is the consequence of *a relation of occult form* in the two elements ; and the hypothesis is favoured by all that is actually known of the structure of the material world. Meanwhile we assign this unknown fact, or hidden power, to our *third class*, and after deducting it, then

resolve the complicated machinery of the steam engine into an equilibrium of forces.

All the works of human ingenuity are resolvable into cases of equilibrium, or equivalence: and, in like manner, the functions of plants and animals, — their growth, agencies, and decay, and, to a certain extent, the interaction of the elements, are also to be resolved into connexions or relations of this first class. And if the business of natural philosophy were to be described in a single phrase, we should say that its office is, as the interpreter of the creation, to exhibit or unfold physical equations.

It is hardly needful to say that, in reference to this first order of causes and effects, the word *liberty* can have no place whatever—can assume no shadow of meaning. What idea can we affix to the proposition, that there is a *freedom* in the connexion between twice three and six? And if the sister term necessity *may* be applied on occasions of this sort, it adds nothing to the perspicuity of our notions. It is, we readily grant, *necessarily true* that seven taken three times makes twenty-one. But why should we not be content with simply saying that it is *certainly* true; or, better still—that it *is* true. *All* that the mind can understand is contained in the very modest expression which declares that three times seven is twenty-one. And to talk about *necessity* in such an instance, is as rational, as would be the pomposity of affirming, that three times seven is immutably, and by the adamantine decree of eternal truth, equal to twenty-one!

This is an absurdity of one kind: and the



history of the controversy would furnish a thousand instances of such learned verbosity. The opposite absurdity is that of Hume and others, who, confounding causes and effects of all kinds, affirm *of all alike*, that they are nothing but often-observed sequences; whereas a large proportion are intelligible relations, which cannot be denied or separated without a contradiction in terms.

It may seem superfluous to remind the reader, that all *effects* belonging to this first class are directly cognisable by their relation to their *causes*. The intelligence which knows the antecedent, knows also the consequent, when that consequent is a correlative equality or proportion.

II. In defining the SECOND CLASS of causes and effects, or those wherein the presence of an efficient power must be confessed, it cannot be thought necessary, as a preliminary, either to insist upon the demonstration, *à priori*, of the existence of a First Cause, or to state the argument *à posteriori*. This great truth is here assumed as unquestionably established by the two methods, separately and conjointly. But it follows from it, that the worlds of matter and mind, with all their contrivances and forms, are effects of that First Cause, and that this relationship is, in the most absolute sense, real and indissoluble; nor even to be imagined as broken, otherwise than by the annihilation of the effect.

The doctrine of Hume and his followers, (and of many of his opponents), That we know, and can know, nothing of cause and effect, beyond the fact of invariable sequency, is, by a

logical necessity, atheistical.\* That is to say, it has *no meaning*, and can have no appearance of truth, except on the assumption, that the belief in a First Cause is incapable of proof. For if that belief is by any means established, the fact of efficient causation is established with it; and it is no longer true, that we know of no connexion between cause and effect beyond that of invariable sequency.†

Whence the human mind derives its notion of power, might be shewn; but it can never be imagined that the reason of the connexion between power and its effect can be exhibited. This were, indeed, to penetrate beyond the deepest secrets of nature. Yet this connexion, though not to be analysed, must be affirmed to be necessary, or, more properly, *infallible*: for to suppose otherwise, would be only a circumlocutory denial of the very existence of power. Power not productive of its effect is not power, but is either inertness or weakness. And again, the denial of liberty to power, if liberty means *freedom from restraint*, would, for the very same reason, be absurd; and thus, as we have before observed, liberty and necessity merge, the one in the other, when we approach the footstool of supreme excellence and perfection.

\* Hume ("Treatise of Human Nature") gives his reader free leave to draw this inference, which he is *too modest* himself to name.

† Brown, while insisting upon the fact, that we can conceive of nothing as coming between Almighty Power and the effect, loses sight of the question, whether the human mind has no idea of connexion beyond antecedence and sequence. It does, *by its own power*, conceive of power as something more than the juxta-position of events.

But if the word *liberty* were to be taken in the vulgar sense of the words *range* or *scope*, it might then be asked, What (with due reverence\*) should be thought of the liberty of the First Cause? We must approach this question from beneath. Now, if for a moment it be assumed that *power*, in the highest sense of the word, is the endowment of created minds, we can conceive of it only as related to, *first*, the *actual* existences known to that mind (*its own attributes included*), and, *secondly*, to such *possible* existences as may lie within its faculty of conception, and also within the circle of its agency. And then, if that created mind be thought of as (in its degree) wise and holy, every exercise of its power will be determined *necessarily*, or, which is a far better term, *invariably*, or *certainly*, in *that one manner* which truth and goodness prescribe, *whenever either truth or goodness is interested in the decision*.

But something more than this may be conceived of; and we think that the notion of stern fixedness, or invariable sameness, which is apt to be conjoined in our minds with the idea of unalterable wisdom and rectitude, is happily dispelled when this *something more* is duly taken into the account. A hundred or more angular or curve lines, all of equal length, *yet dissimilar*, may be drawn from the centre to the circumference of a circle. Nor is it an irrational supposition, that a hundred or more

\* A high disadvantage belonging (inevitably) to discussions of this order, is, the implication of the Divine perfections with obscure questions. Every sound mind will take care to hold its religious sentiments safe from the interference of mere abstractions.

courses of conduct, dissimilar, yet equidistant as paths from point to point, may present themselves to an intelligence; and that these hundred courses, though *by the hypothesis* they possess precisely equal recommendations, both to the rational and moral faculties, may be not only unlike in themselves, but may lead the being that pursues them to vastly distant or opposite points of his possible destiny.\*

Now this supposed range, or scope, or liberty, if so it must be called, removes the idea of unvarying uniformity from the notion of a high degree of wisdom and goodness: it enlarges the conception of supernal existence, and opens before the meditative mind an unbounded field of various opulence. And although, in the case of created minds, this field is narrowed by the limitation both of knowledge and of power,—for a created mind neither knows all *actual* existence nor all *possible*, nor does its power extend even so far as its knowledge,—yet, on the other hand, the range of its agency is enlarged in one direction, as well as confined in another, by the limitation of its knowledge. For though it has not before it *all* really equidistant paths, many that are not so in fact may *seem* so to be; and it may happen that, without fault or culpable folly, it may take the longer for the shorter course, believing the two to be equal. There may be *apparent* equations where there are no *real* ones; and if many of the real are unknown, many unreal may be supposed.

We think that from this source the sphere of the agency of wise and holy beings is incal-

\* See note L L.

culably widened; and yet without admitting at all the notion of contingent volition. An attentive reference to consciousness will convince any one that it is the law or usage of the mind, on occasions when an alternative must be taken, where there is no perceived reason which should determine the choice, to throw itself back upon the laws of its lower nature; that is, to be guided by the involuntary suggestion that arises at the instant of volition: might we say, as a man whose eyes are bandaged gives his hand to a child to lead him in the path? We have before likened the perpetual flow of ideas through the mind to the operation of the fly-wheel in a machine; and here it is seen to maintain the unceasing velocity of action, on occasions when an impulse from the higher faculties is wanting, and when otherwise the machine must stand still. We may well presume that this fact has its analogy in a higher sphere of beings; and that so an inconceivable diversity, a voluminous variety, is thrown in upon the theatre of celestial life.

And now in reference to the Divine agency, or the exercises of infinite power, let it, with becoming modesty, be affirmed, that the universe of things *possible* being present to the Divine omniscience, there are contained in it innumerable *hypotheses* of being, *strictly equivalent one with another*, so far as benevolence or wisdom are concerned. To advance even a conjecture as to the mode of determination in such instances, would be in the last degree presumptuous and absurd. It is enough to know, that as time, or succession of being, is not the condition of the Divine existence, such



determinations are always *actual*, not *future*, and therefore not either unknown or contingent. Is it allowable to say, that the idea of the exercises of supreme power and wisdom is enlarged and enriched by this doctrine of hypothetical equivalents?

The meditative mind, in looking abroad upon the vastness of the universe, and in observing that the edifice of the material world is broken into innumerable portions, far separated one from another, naturally entertains the supposition that the infinite resources of the Divine ingenuity (if the word may be allowed) are copiously unfolding themselves around us, in all possible modes. And again, when the mind turns from the infinitude of space to the infinitude of duration, and entertains, vaguely, the inconceivable idea of eternity, a parallel supposition arises and flits before the imagination, — that this unbounded ingenuity — this richness of conception, which exhausts all forms of existence, and all combinations of those forms, will, through an endless series of successive creations, give expression in turn to each, and run the round of its cycle of wisdom and power, until whatever *may be* has actually seen the light of life. And is it then true that human nature is destined to be the immortal spectator of these never-ending developements?

III. It only remains to speak of the **THIRD CLASS** of causes and effects; or those connexions, of which the bond is either ambiguous, or absolutely inscrutable.

To enumerate all the instances of this sort (or all that present themselves in the system known to us) would not be difficult. But it is

enough for our immediate purpose to mention, as illustrative of our meaning, the most conspicuous, namely, the principle of gravitation, and of corpuscular attraction and repulsion; the principle of chemical affinity, that is to say, of attraction as belonging not to all solid masses alike, but to particular bodies; electrical agencies (of both kinds); the principle of vegetable life (unless it be resolvable into chemical or electrical action); the principle of animal life (unless this also may be so resolved); and, lastly, the power of mind over matter and over itself.\* In all such instances of action, movement, or change of place, or of quality, or of bulk, or offunction, we observe the invariable antecedent and consequent; and are able to reason with precision upon the laws, or, as we might say, modes, of the hidden power; but the link or tie is deeply concealed. The reason why *b* succeeds to *a*, is not to be assigned: the most perfect science pretends to no knowledge of this ultimate connexion. And, indeed, in all branches of knowledge, Science is deemed to have fulfilled her task when she has proved herself to have left nothing unknown—except these occult powers.

Metaphysical science has nothing to do with them, except to abstain from assuming the gratuitous hypothesis, that in such inscrutable facts there is no real connexion, or nothing beyond actual sequency. We affirm, that the presumption gathered from all parts of science is altogether against such an hypothesis, and, on the contrary, strongly favours the suppo-

\* See note M M.

sition, that the great mechanical laws of the universe, and the chemical affinities and aversions of particular bodies, and probably the principles of vegetable and animal life, are *relations*, or rather the consequences of relations; so that each effect is connected with its cause by the same absolute bond which secures the result of a mechanical contrivance, or which makes the two members of an equation inseparable. We venture to say, that the course of modern chemical discovery *tends* towards the belief that chemical action is the necessary consequence of the relation subsisting between the elementary structure of bodies, and that if the occult form of *c* and *d* could be exposed, it would become manifest that their juxta-position must issue in the compound *e*.\*

In regard to the hidden powers of nature, the whole question lies between *contrivance*, or relation, and *power*,—that is, immediate Divine power; not between contrivance, power, and mere juxta-position, or arbitrary sequency; for as, on the one hand, the testimony of *natural* science goes to establish the general truth, that causation rests upon real relations; and as, on the other, *Divine* science establishes the truth of a first and intelligent Cause, we are free to choose *between the two*, in all cases of a hidden or ambiguous sort, and can never be compelled to take up the hypothesis of contingent or accidental sequency, which is neither natural to the human mind, nor confirmed in *any single instance* by the results of experimental philosophy.

In turning to the world of animal and intel-

\* See note N N.

lectual life, there is room to ask, whether the power of mind over matter, and over itself, should be regarded as,

1. The consequence of a relation of parts, or *contrivance* only ; or—

2. The direct exertion of Divine power ; or—

3. A derived and *separate* (not independent) portion of that essential power.

Without resting at all upon so difficult a theme, we may just say that we should reject the *first* supposition, and prefer the *third* to the *second*. Our business is to affirm, that the determination of such questions is not, in the remotest degree, important to any branch of intellectual, or ethical, or theological philosophy, any more than an analysis of the principle of gravitation is important to mechanical science. The *fact* is enough, that mind has power to move and modify matter, and *to move and to modify itself*. If its possession of the first-named power were questioned, we might establish the fact by striking the sceptic ; or, if the second were doubted, we should ask him to propound to us a mathematical theorem, and we would engage, even while assailed by many disturbing causes from without and from within, to hold a steady intellectual flight, in a direct line, from the data to the conclusion, and should allege the true solution of the theorem as a proof incontestable that mind has *power*,—a power *introvertible*, as well as efficient upon matter.

The terms *liberty* and *necessity* may be alleged to have a relation to this ultimate fact of the power of mind over itself. If liberty might be taken in the unintelligible sense of contingency,

or freedom from causation, then we say that this power, as belonging to the human mind, has no liberty; for it always stands under a triple relationship, namely, to its own attributes and conditions, to the world of actual or conceivable existence, and to the interferences of Divine power; and so far from its being insulated from reasons and motives, it is only upon and among reasons and motives that it can work.

But if by liberty be meant *scope* or *range*, then does this power incalculably augment, enlarge, diversify, and ennoble the agency of the being possessing it. Upon this point we have already enlarged. But if liberty means *freedom from restraint*, then the sad truth must be confessed, that this power, *in the human subject*, is largely invaded, and much damaged and obstructed by the moral ruin that has affected the race. Man, in this sense, is free *only in degree*; and it is in contemplation of this lamentable infringement of his native power, that he should thankfully receive the succour and the remedial interference offered to him by Christianity.

The correlative term *necessity*, in like manner, takes its pertinence, or its irrelevance, from the precise sense attached to it when connected with the power of mind. In the sense of *bondage*, *impediment*, or *restraint*, man, as we have just said, is in various degrees necessitated by the prevalence of inordinate desires, and by the force of inveterate habits. But it should be remembered, that this sort of necessity is not held in any, even of the most momentous affairs of life, to absolve the evil-doer from his responsibility to law, or to discharge him from his



liability to punishment. Theologians have no need to resort to metaphysical arguments for the purpose of establishing the truth, that a debauched habit of mind does not exonerate a man from the load of his guilt ; or at least they need not do so until the enormous supposition is recognised and acted upon in courts of justice. Who does not see that the acknowledgment of a principle like this would, in a day, dissolve the entire framework of society ? And shall it, if inadmissible on earth, be published and received as a maxim of the Divine government ? A proclamation so fearful would convert the universe into a prison-house of horrors. He who enters upon a course of vice, *feels* that at every step his moral health and strength are impaired : this alarming consciousness should awaken him to a sense of his danger. But if it does not so awaken him, no means remain (consistently with *any* system of government by laws and sanctions) which can avert from him the terrible consequences of becoming at length the helpless slave of licentious habits. And yet, not even the last stage of thralldom absolutely breaks up the constitution of human nature : man is, to the last (unless frenzied), open to a sense of his ultimate welfare ; and the motives thence derived, *if understood*, are always more than adequate to determine the conduct of a rational being. And besides, instances are on record of moral revolutions, even in cases apparently the most hopeless. Man, therefore, though his true liberty is greatly *impaired*, never becomes (in the present life) so necessitated as to render a recovery strictly impracticable.

The delusive influence of the ill-chosen word necessity, as used in this controversy, increases (might we say?) in geometrical progression at every step, as we ascend from material causes towards the higher stage of intellectual agency. Those who think fit to do so, may very harmlessly, though very ineptly, talk of the *necessity* which binds together the parts of a mathematical proposition; or they may so speak of the connexion of causes and effects in the system of animated nature; and they may still advance a step, without being liable to a conviction of absolute error. But as we rise on the scale of life, the *associated ideas* that cling to the term actually intercept from our view the simple matters of which we are speaking; and while, perhaps, our chain of reasoning is in *form* correct, it is in *fact* seductive or false.

To speak of power as latent or inert, is a solecism; at least it is not the notion with which we have to do. Can we, then, conceive of power active, that is to say, of power in the proper and only intelligible sense of the word, as not related to any subject or matter whereupon it works? Or can we conceive of power as an attribute of an intelligent and of a moral being, and yet not related to the knowledge and to the emotions of that being? Or could we deem it a perfection in the constitution of a rational agent, that his power should operate like a vague and brutal violence, taking its course this way and that, with the blind vehemence of a hurricane? Or, is not rather the idea of rational perfection filled up by the supposition of power, related, on the one hand, to its subject, by the bond of uniform and unfailing efficiency; and

on the other, to the knowledge and emotions of the agent, by the tie of infallible determination or direction? Whatever is deducted from the constancy or invariable sequency of these connexions, makes a *proportionate deduction* from the excellence and *true freedom* of the agent. The agent whose power is not thus *necessitated*, in the most absolute sense, is, to the whole extent of the want of necessity, not free. A deficiency of necessity, in the *higher* sense of the word, is an increase of necessity in the *lower*. And here, once again, we must note the synonymous import of the words liberty and necessity, when the highest perfection is spoken of. And it is manifest that this necessity, far from carrying with it any idea of bondage, or confinement, or *fatality*, is the very secret and the indispensable condition of the full and unimpaired liberty of celestial natures.

The controversy comes to a point on this position: nor is it difficult to discern in what way, by the mystifications that belong to theological argument, and by the malignant obscurations that have been shed over it from the hands of those who have laboured to subvert religion and morality, and to debauch and vilify man, — a very intelligible matter has been wrapped in dark clouds of difficulty. Let but the difference between mechanical laws and living agencies be confounded, and let the elementary differences that distinguish the several orders of sentient beings be lost sight of, and let the gloomy word necessity be put in the place of the simple words relation and causation; and then the way will be clear for talking of such facts as the fall of bodies to the earth,

or the collapse of chemical elements, and of the agency of the highest order of intelligences, who seek their happiness at large on all the fields of the universe, under one and the same set of affected phrases. And thus, because mind is furnished with knowledge, and is susceptible of emotion, and is endowed with power, and is thus qualified to maintain and enlarge its well-being through a course of endless advancements; and because this well-being is secured by its invariable connexion with an established order of events, *therefore* (say sophists) it becomes reasonable to speak of the lot of such high intelligences as if it were *overruled* by the same fatality which confines a stone to the spot whereon it has fallen!

For the purpose of banishing for ever these delusions, it would be well to lay aside entirely the word necessity, which is ridiculously superfluous and redundant in some of its applications, and absurd or seductive in others. If, for example, we have occasion to speak of a known relation of equality or proportion, why not be content with the simple assertion, that the predicate is *true* of the subject? or that  $a + b$  is equal to  $c$ ? Or, if a conclusion has been derived from a somewhat complicated series of proofs, so that a moderate asseveration seems to be called for, let the word *certainty* suffice us. Certainty is the knowledge of truth, obtained by labour and research; and when by labour and research we have gained the knowledge of any complex system of relations, it may be granted that there is a propriety in speaking of the *certainty* of those relations; though in fact nothing more is meant than what is affirmed

when the relation is expressed in the very simplest and most modest form.

If the noble liberty—the range, and scope, and unrestrained capacity of happiness, which is the distinction of rational agents of the higher orders, be the subject of discourse; and if we would express the fact that such beings rule their destinies through the changeful scenes of immortality by their knowledge and virtue, we shall do well to avoid the employment of a phrase which seems to imply that those destinies are *overruled* in some other way than by the combinations of knowledge, virtue, and power.

All that is important to ethics and theology is implied in the knowledge of the introvertible power of mind; and we must here observe, that its existence as a physiological fact—as a fact which forms the *elementary difference* between man and the inferior classes of sentient beings, has been too little insisted upon by ethical and religious controvertists; and though familiarly known to all men, has been (like ten thousand other familiar facts) overlooked by philosophers.

The Arminian divine, inwardly persuaded, he knows not on what ground, that human nature contains *a something* more than the passivity of brute matter, or of animal life, has recourse to the figment of Contingent Volition; and then, to give his unintelligible notion an appearance of consistency, has been led to the enormous error of denying the Divine foreknowledge. Thus, in his zeal to defend one attribute of Deity, he has demolished another. Why will he not be content with the simple principles of human nature, as known to all



men, and as recognised in the transactions of every day, and with the plain evidence of the Bible, which always takes up and supposes the existence of those principles?

His opponent, the Calvinist, spurning the absurdities of Arminian metaphysics, believes that, when he has scattered these sophisms, he has exhausted the subject of human agency, and may triumphantly return from the vanquished field to his own theological position; nor deems it necessary once to lay aside his high lenses, or to look abroad upon human nature as it shews itself to the *naked eye* of common sense. Then he goes to his Bible, cased in metaphysical certainties, and proceeds, without scruple or compunction, to apply the crushing engine of dogmatical exposition to all passages that do not naturally fall in with the abstractions which he has framed to himself. Meanwhile, men of sense are disgusted, and sceptics glory. How shall these evils be remedied?—how, unless by the prevalence of a better—a genuine system of interpretation?

But even without this better exposition, a great and important reform would spontaneously follow from a more vivid persuasion of the *reality* of the great facts affirmed in the Scriptures. Let but the quickening affirmations of the inspired writers be allowed to take effect on the ground of the ordinary motives of human life; let it but be believed that the Son of God has come to inform men (his fellows, by an ineffable condescension,) of a future danger to which all are liable; and to impart to them freely a benefit they could never have obtained by their own efforts; and then it will no more seem pertinent

or necessary to adjust the terms of this message of mercy to metaphysical subtilties, than it does to do the like when a friend snatches a friend from ruin, or when a father bears his children in his arms from a scene of perils. How much mischief has arisen from the supposition that a *mystery* belongs to the matter of salvation, which waits to be cleared up by philosophy!

Philosophy, it is to be hoped, will at length work its way through its own difficulties. But the result to Christianity of so happy a success, would simply be, to set in a stronger light the enormous folly of obstructing the course of a momentous practical affair by the impertinences of learned disputation.

## NOTES.

---

### NOTE A. p. xxii.

THE *devout* EDWARDS.—The *life* of Edwards should be perused by every one who reads his “*Essay on Freedom of Will*.” Let it be said, that his style of Christianity might have borne some corrections; and let it also be admitted, that, in his modesty, and his low estimation of himself, and in his love of retirement, his melancholic temperament had an influence. After every deduction of this sort has been made, it must be granted, that this eminent man, whose intellectual superiority might have enabled him to shine in European colleges of learning, displayed a meek greatness of soul which belongs only to those who derive their principles from the Gospel. How refreshing is the contrast of sentiments which strikes us in turning from the private correspondence of men who thought of nothing beyond their personal fame as philosophers or writers, to the correspondence and diary of a man like Edwards! In the one case, the single, paramount motive—literary or philosophic vanity—lurks in every sentence, unblushingly shews itself on many a page, and when most concealed, is concealed by an affectation as loathsome as the fault it hides. But how much of this deformed self-love could the most diligent detractor cull from the private papers or works of the President of the New Jersey College? We question if a single sentence which could be fairly construed to betray the vanity or ambition of superior intelligence is any where to be found in them. Edwards daily contemplated a glory, an ABSOLUTE EXCELLENCE, which at once checked the swellings of pride, and sickened him of the praise which his powers might have won from the world.

Edwards (though, in listening to his own account of himself, one would not think it,) was a *man of genius*—we mean imaginative, and open to all those moving sentiments which raise high souls above the present scene of things. Among the reasons which inclined him to excuse himself from the proffered presidency, he alleges,—First, his own defects,

unfitting him for such an undertaking, "many of which are generally known," says he, "besides others which my own heart is conscious of. I have a constitution in many respects peculiarly unhappy, attended with flaccid solids; vapid, sisy, and scarce fluids; and a low tide of spirits, often occasioning a kind of childish weakness, and contemptibleness of speech, presence, and demeanour; with a disagreeable dulness and stiffness, much unfitting me for conversation, but more especially for the government of a college." This description of his mental conformation is curious, *physiologically*, as an anatomy of a mind so remarkable for its faculty of abstraction. May we not say, that this very poverty of constitution, this sluggishness and aridity, this feeble pulse of life, was *the very secret* of his extraordinary power of analysis? The supposition leads to speculations concerning the *physical* conditions of the mind, which must not here be pursued; but it may be remarked, in passing, that it must be from the copious collection and right use of facts of this sort, that progress will be made (if ever) in the science of mind.

But, notwithstanding the apparent coldness of his temperament, Edwards was manifestly susceptible, and in no common degree, of those emotions which are rarely conjoined with the philosophic faculty. Let an instance be taken from his diary:—"There seemed to be, as it were, a calm, sweet cast, an appearance of divine glory, in almost every thing: God's excellency, his wisdom, his purity and love, seemed to appear in every thing; in the sun, moon, and stars; in the clouds and blue sky; in the grass, flowers, trees; in the water, and all nature, which used greatly to fix my mind. *I often used to sit and view the moon for continuance*; and, in the day, spent much time in viewing the clouds and sky, to behold the sweet glory of God in these things: in the mean time singing forth, with a low voice, my contemplations of the Creator and Redeemer. And scarce any thing among all the works of nature was so sweet to me as thunder and lightning; formerly nothing had been so terrible to me. While thus engaged, it always seemed natural to me to sing or chant forth my meditations; or to speak my thoughts in soliloquies with a singing voice."

That Edwards, by constitution of mind, was more than a dry and cold thinker, might be proved by reference to many passages even in his "Essay on Free Will," as well as his less abstruse writings. He was master, in fact, of a simple eloquence, of no mean order:—"Holiness, as I then wrote down some of my contemplations on it, appeared

to me to be of a sweet, pleasant, charming, serene, calm nature; which brought an inexpressible purity, brightness, peacefulness, and rapture, to the soul. In other words, that it made the soul like a field or garden of God, with all manner of pleasant flowers; all pleasant, delightful, and undisturbed, enjoying a sweet calm, and the gently vivifying beams of the sun. The soul of a true Christian, as I then wrote my meditations, appeared like such a little white flower as we see in the spring of the year, low and humble, on the ground; opening its bosom to receive the pleasant beams of the sun's glory; rejoicing, as it were, in a calm rapture; diffusing around a sweet fragrant; standing peacefully and lovingly in the midst of other flowers round about; all, in like manner, opening their bosoms to drink in the light of the sun. There was no part of creature holiness that I had so great a sense of its loveliness as humility, brokenness of heart, and poverty of spirit; and there was nothing that I so earnestly longed for. My heart panted after this,—to lie low before God, as in the dust, that I might be nothing, and that God might be ALL, that I might become as a little child."

These sentiments were not the exuberances of a youthful melancholic ardour, but gave tone to the character and conduct of the man through life. To accomplish the will of God on earth was the ruling motive of his soul; and to have sought his own glory, he would have thought an enormous departure from true virtue. If his *definition* of true virtue be liable to objection, his *exemplification* of it shewed him to have understood practically the secret of all substantial goodness.

#### NOTE B. p. xxix.

The pendulum-spring of a watch is a very nice instrument, and one in the construction of which three sciences, besides manual skill, are called in to give their aid. In the first place, the due action of the shining thread, which maintains the oscillatory movement of the balance-wheel, depends upon its conformity to the *mathematical* conditions of the spiral curve. Then must be considered the doctrine of elasticity, "*ut tensio, sic vis*," and the mechanical laws of motion, which are to determine the necessary proportion between the *thickness* of the spring and its *length*; and then, too, the very delicate calculation of the *taper*, as connected with the kind of *escapement* with which it is destined to act,—one kind of escapement requiring a spring of equal bulk throughout, while the



more accurate kinds demand a diminishing substance from end to end. The third science implied in the proper construction of this little agent, is that which teaches the method of imparting to the rude metal of which it is formed, its elastic property, and of tempering it in the due degree. In fact, both chemistry and metallurgy are concerned in this business; and in the manufacture of steel for watch-springs, much of that *peculiar* or *workshop* knowledge is demanded which is not to be found in books. Now, the exact movement of the pendulum-spring is that *ultimate result* which brings to a point, if we might so speak, the converging lines of several distinct sciences. Who shall estimate the confusion that must arise from an attempt to treat as one these several calculations and processes, which are *essentially different*, and which must be held apart until they are combined in the various conditions of the spring?

That practical science which relates to THE STRENGTH OF MATERIALS, in like manner combines the principles of several sciences. Let the problem be, to determine the necessary breadth and depth of the girder of a floor, that shall sustain a given weight, the length of the span also being given. Now, these dimensions are not to be found without having recourse, *first*, to the higher mathematics, or those purely *abstract* truths which are independent of all the laws of the actual world, and which would be what they are, although there were no such principle as gravitation, or no material system. In the next place, this law of gravitation must be understood, in order to find the point of the strain, as well as the true proportion between depth and breadth. And, *lastly*, the *peculiar properties* of the several species of timber must be precisely known, and *known by experiment*. The proportion between depth, breadth, and length, will vary, as the compressibility, cohesive force, toughness, &c. of oak, fir, &c., or of the several kinds of oak or fir vary. British, Riga, Norway, American oak, will give each its precise dimension to the girder; and it is not the *mathematician*, but the *naturalist*, who must inform the practical man on these points. (See Tredgold's "Elementary Principles of Carpentry," section x. on the Nature and Properties of Timber. The same able writer's treatise on the "Strength of Iron" affords a multitude of instances of a similar kind. See also Barlow's "Essay on the Strength and Stress of Timber.")

Now, let it, in these cases, be supposed that the mathematician, dogmatically confident of his demonstrations, were (and this is in fact the fault of the earlier mathematicians,

and not seldom of Leibnitz,) to determine the problem above mentioned, *as if it were a pure abstraction*, or, if he referred loosely to certain vulgar facts concerning the strength of timber, were neither to make experiments of this physical kind, nor to swerve at all from his mathematical processes in regard to them:—in this case all his products must be erroneous. Or, though correct *mathematically*, they would be inapplicable to the real world, and useless, or worse than useless, in practice. It is but of late that these cases of COMPLICATED PRINCIPLES have been made matters of science. We must not wonder, therefore, that, within the hazy precincts of intellectual philosophy, distinctions and *separations* of a parallel kind have scarcely at all been regarded. Now, to return to the instance before us, of the “Treatise on Freedom of Will,” the argument is, *in the main*, abstract, but not purely so; for, besides the admixture of Scripture proofs, the physiology of the human mind is taken up, as its *material* or subject, and yet *far too loosely and vaguely* to satisfy those who look at human nature as an object of natural philosophy. Or, to refer allusively to the illustration above given, Edwards is an accomplished *mathematician*; but he thought little, or did not take into his calculations, the difference between *oak* and *fir*. His “Treatise on the Will” is, to a true philosophy of human nature, as the demonstrations of Leibnitz—*Demonstrationes Novæ de Resistentiâ Solidorum*—are to modern mechanical science.

NOTE C. p. xxx.

The ingenious author of “Studies of Nature” toiled vainly to establish his theory of the tides on the principle of the melting of arctic snows and ices: he should have lived before Newton, and might then have enjoyed his century or two of celebrity. He sought for a particular truth among a set of causes in which it was not to be found. Pliny *might* have arrived at the real fact, for he set foot upon the true course, as did Bacon; but St. Pierre could never have reached it. The doctrine of tides furnishes another example of the combination of causes of different orders in a single result. It is asked, why does the Thames at London bridge fill its bed at three o’clock to-day? Shall it be said, because the waters of the ocean obey the law of gravitation, and are heaped into a mighty wave by sun and moon. But this explanation, though the true one, will not adjust itself to the facts; and we must calculate all the local causes, the turns of the river, the form of

the bed, the currents of the channel, before we can bring the abstract theory into correspondence with the actual event of high-tide at three o'clock. These essentially different classes of causes must both be calculated, but must not be confounded or confused.

NOTE D. p. xxxi.

The disposition of the French people, as compared with the English, to ascend *too high* in the discussion of practical questions, is a very remarkable fact. We should not satisfactorily account for it on one ground only. It must not be said of the English, that they are not a philosophical people; yet it is true that, whenever the substantial interests of life are under discussion, they shew a determined dislike to abstract or metaphysical argumentation;—they will listen to nothing that is not unquestionably pertinent and proximate. The good sense, the love of despatch and of perspicuity, which belong to the mercantile character, are here apparent. And may we not also say, that the mingled modesty and pride of the English character have a share in producing the same effect? An Englishman avoids speaking of matters to which he has not given sufficient attention; he will not expose himself to ridicule by venturing beyond his line: he therefore leaves philosophy to philosophers, and talks of politics and commerce only as matters of fact.

But the Frenchman has no such scruples—no such fears: whether artisan, bourgeois, soldier, or noble, he is master of all sciences—a cyclopædist; and is as ready in discourse upon abstract principles as upon the merits of an actress. Then, the French people, at the time of the breaking out of the revolution, had not enjoyed the advantage of possessing any middle ground between the sottish absurdities of their national religion, and the wild theories of their atheistical teachers. They had no alternative but to be devout (in the sense of their priests), or to be mad in speculation. And as they had no reasonable religion whereon common sense might exercise itself, so neither had they any constitution which might save them from the extreme of the old regimen on the one side, or of the republican delirium on the other. Neither in religion nor politics could they choose, except between the faith of dotards or the impudence of charlatans; and if they scorned to doze and dream, must run frantic in extravagance. Moreover, the revolution brought upon the stage of public life multitudes of men whose habits

and education had given them no qualification whatever for the transaction of the practical business of government. These, if they would figure at all, must do so as philosophers. For it is a much easier thing to talk profoundly as a metaphysician, than wisely to reform existing institutions, or than to carry forward the every-day business of state. The metaphysical fashion, it is to be feared, has not yet wrought all its mischief in France. To some causes of a similar kind may be traced much of that want of good sense which deforms the German philosophy and theology.

NOTE E. p. xxxi.

There is not merely a natural connexion between despotism, and mysticism, and fatalism, and atheism, and pantheism; so that it shall be almost invariably true, that where political systems, like those of Asia, are found, we shall find also, among the learned, some such form of abstruse and absurd philosophy; but it is the scorching heat of despotism which imparts to these doctrines their power of mischief, by bringing them out from cells and colleges, into the markets, and fields, and homes of common life. The combined influence of good government and Christianity, if it does not disperse metaphysical errors altogether, will unfailingly confine them to the closets of the sophists with whom they originate.

NOTE F. p. xxxviii.

Every one is aware of the beneficial tendency of genuine science; but it is not, perhaps, always duly remembered, that every practical application of the principles of mathematical, mechanical, chemical, or physiological philosophy, is a new affirmation of the Divine benevolence towards man. Shall we say, it is a fresh text, translated from the unwritten Bible of God's creation, corroborating our faith in the paternal care of Him in whom we live, and move, and have our being? And this might be said even if these beneficial discoveries were the results of chance. But when they come to us as the product of laborious intellectual operations, they assert the same great truth with a peculiar emphasis, inasmuch as they not merely declare the Divine purpose—that man should be well accommodated, and aided, and comforted, in this his terrene abode; but that he should win every advantage by the exertion of his higher faculties. Each

benefit derived from a better knowledge of nature is a premium of mind—a boon given as the reward of intellectual effort : and while it declares in one of its inscriptions that the Maker of the universe is the friend of man, in the other it exhorts man to be his own friend, by the diligent employment of his mental powers.

Every branch of modern science abounds with instances of remote correspondences between the great system of the world, and the welfare of man in the artificial (*the truly natural*) condition to which knowledge raises him. If these correspondences were single or rare, they might be deemed merely fortuitous ; like the drifting of a plank athwart the track of one who is swimming from a wreck. But when they meet us on all sides and invariably, we must be resolute in atheism not to confess that they are emanations from one and the same centre of wisdom and goodness. Is it nothing more than a lucky accommodation which makes the polarity of the needle to subserve the purposes of the mariner ? Or may it not safely be affirmed, both that the magnetic influence (whatever its primary intention may be) had reference to the business of navigation—a reference incalculably important to the spread and improvement of the human race ; and that the discovery and the application of this influence arrived at the destined moment in the revolution of human affairs, when, in combination with other events, it would produce the greatest effect ? Nor should we scruple to affirm, that the relation between the inclination of the earth's axis and the conspicuous star which, without a near rival, attracts even the eye of the vulgar, and shews the north to the wanderer on the wilderness, or on the ocean, is in like manner a beneficent arrangement. Those who would spurn the supposition that the celestial locality of a sun, immeasurably remote from our system, should have reference to the accommodation of the inhabitants of a planet so inconsiderable as our own, forget the style of the Divine works, which is, to secure some great or principal end, compatibly with ten thousand lesser and remote interests. Man, if he would secure the greater, must neglect or sacrifice the less : not so the Omnipotent Contriver. It is a fact full of meaning, that those astronomical phenomena (and so others) which offer themselves as available for the purposes of art ; as, for instance, of navigation, or geography ; do not fully or effectively yield the aid they promise, until after long and elaborate processes or calculations have disentangled them from variations, disturbing forces, and apparent irregularities. To the rude fact,



if so we might designate it, a mass of recondite science must be appended, before it can be brought to bear with precision upon the arts of life. Thus, the polarity of the needle, or the eclipses of Jupiter's moons, are as nothing to the mariner, or the geographer, without the voluminous commentary furnished by the mathematics of astronomy. The fact of the expansive force of steam must employ the intelligence and energy of the mechanicians of an empire, during a century, before the whole of its beneficial powers can be put in activity. Chemical, medical, and botanical science is filled with parallel instances; and they all affirm, in an articulate manner, the twofold purpose of the Creator—to benefit man, and to educate him.

Now, in the metaphysical dogmas of absolute and universal scepticism, and of philosophical fatalism, there is a conspicuous contrariety to the testimony of all other sciences *in both these respects*. For these dogmas, in the first place, represent man to be the helpless victim of an inexorable power, rather than the child of an indulgent parent; and then, instead of courting and cherishing his energies and his intelligence, they paralyse the one, and astound the other, by proving to him that his toils are idle—his notions of truth absurd or unfounded—his convictions illusory—his deductions fallacious, and his whole nature a paradox. If, then, this order of metaphysics claims respect, *as a science*, it is contradicted by sciences better established than itself. If it be the mere reverie of a debauched intelligence, then we cheerfully allow it all the honour that is usually thought due to meditations of that quality.

#### NOTE G. p. xli.

The entire mass of intellectual and theological philosophy divides itself into two classes, the one irreconcilably opposed to the other. The first is, in its spirit, and in all its doctrines, consentaneous with human feelings and interests. The second is, both as a whole, and in its several parts, paradoxical. The first is the philosophy of modesty, of inquiry, of induction, and of belief. The second is the philosophy of abstraction, as opposed to induction; and of impudence, as opposed to a respectful attention to nature and to evidence. The first takes natural and mathematical science by the hand, observes the same methods, labours to promote the same ends; and the sisters are never at variance. The second stands,

ruffian-like, upon the road of knowledge, and denies progress to the human mind. The first shews an interminable and practicable, though difficult, ascent. The second leads to the brink of an abyss, into which reason and hope must together plunge. The first is grave, laborious, and productive. The second ends in a jest, of which man, and the world, and its Maker, are the subject.

The paradoxical philosophy, though always the same in principle, takes its style from the manners of those by whom it is entertained. In Scotland and in England it has ordinarily been decent, specious, veiled :—in France, bold, explicit, shameless. Hobbes, indeed, who first gave to England a philosophy of this order, as he connected himself with the most profligate party that has ever made a figure upon the stage of English affairs, assumed a tone which is not English : as a writer he is not indigenous to our literature. Hume had a better tact, and knew how to clothe the same inimical philosophy in a garb of elegance and of sanctimonious modesty. If Hume be compared with Diderot, Helvetius, and their school, the difference between England and France, at that time, will present itself to the eye. The sense and substance are the same ; but the dialect and the fashion are very dissimilar. It is consolatory to find, that when the doctrines of this anti-human, or unnatural philosophy, are to be prepared for holding intercourse with the lower classes in our own country, and when they are to unclothe themselves, and appear horrid and hirsute, as proper savages, it is necessary to bring them over from France.

The very same distinction runs through theology, and divides in two, some of those religious bodies that, in name and political being, are one. There is a theology which takes up the constitution of human nature, and brings to bear upon it, kindly and consentaneously, the remedial powers of Christianity. And there is a theology which makes a jest of human nature, which insults its woes, denies to it any available aid ; and is, if it must be called a *Gospel*, a gospel of hostility and of mockery. The sisterhood and relationship of the sceptical or atheistical philosophy, and of the Antinomian theology, might be traced in a striking similarity of sentiment and expression ; and not a few passages might be taken from the pages of the most licentious of the French infidel writers, which, with the substitution of here and there a phrase, would seem to come very consistently from the lips of certain notorious divines. If there be any important

difference it is, that the preacher surpasses his brother the atheist both in rancour and in impudence.

NOTE H. p. xlii.

By the real sciences, those are intended that rest upon evidence which secures the consent of all who are competent to comprehend it; and which therefore excludes sects and oppositions of opinion. If Christianity be a system of metaphysical deductions, it must, of course, maintain itself among other principles of the same class; and must bring all its positions into accordance with them; or must vanquish them with the weapons of scholastic warfare, and must appeal to abstract truths on every occasion of controversy. But if it be simply and solely a matter of history (as to its truth) and of verbal affirmation (as to its doctrines), then nothing can be more enormous than the attempt to bring the general fact, or the particular affirmations, into collision with the principles of metaphysical science.

Even in those instances in which one science bears manifestly upon another, as, for instance, chemistry upon vegetable and animal physiology; or where a yet unformed science stands between two that are more advanced than itself; as geology stands between mechanical and astronomical science on the one side, and chemistry on the other; the one is not allowed to trample upon the other; nor is it permitted that the infant science should be oppressed or brow-beat by those that are more mature. As, for example:—astronomical and mechanical calculations may seem to demand the belief, that the earth is a hollow sphere; and chemical science may appear to favour the same supposition. Meanwhile, the geologist is allowed to collect his own sort of evidence, bearing upon the matter of fact, and to pursue his own mode of reasoning upon the probable history of the crust of the earth, and to deduce thence his conjectures, without being intimidated by either the astronomical calculation, or the chemical theory: and in whatever result his inductions may issue, that result would never be scouted because not easily reconciled with the doctrine derived from another line of reasoning. The modesty of true philosophy bequeaths such apparent discordances to the sagacity and industry of a future age.

The reason of this procedure is obvious.—An inference derived from an undoubted fact has no retrospective effi-

ency to invalidate that fact. An inference drawn from one fact may stand opposed to an inference resulting from another. But these facts cannot affect each other circuitously through their inferences, as a medium of communication; for this were to give to them such a retrospective power. The two facts stand independently on their proper evidence, and send forth their branching consequences irrespectively of each other. It might happen that some remote consequence of the truth that 90 is to 115, as 18 to 23, might seem to interfere with a remote consequence from the other truth, that the sum of the squares of the two sides is equal to the square of the hypotenuse of a right-angle triangle. But no force of seeming inconsistency could invest such a consequence with the power of making the other verity untrue. If so, then the practice of reasoning retrogressively, through inferences, from fact to fact, is a fallacious practice; and one which will not be resorted to by those who respect the principles of philosophical logic. It is not at all more reasonable to have recourse to this method where one of the facts is more certainly known than the other, than it is in those cases where both are equally certain. For it can have no place unless this less clearly known fact is first assumed to be false, which is a mere *petitio principii*.

So long as divines continue, in opposition to the methods of all true science, to adjust among themselves differences of interpretation, by the aid of abstract principles, they cannot complain when atheists reject Christianity altogether, by another application of the same sort of argument. It must be allowed to be a legitimate mode of reasoning to say—Certain ancient writings *could not* have existed in the age of Nero; *for* the material world affords no conclusive evidence of having sprung from an intelligent Cause:—if it be also a true method of interpreting those writings to control, or revise the grammatical sense of words, at the demand of metaphysical abstractions. This is an evil too old to pass away in a day: yet must it pass away; and the tendency of all events is to sweep it, ere long, into the ocean of things forgotten or condemned.

#### NOTE I. p. xliii.

It was not to be expected that the men who, in the second and third centuries, came over to the church from schools of philosophy, or schools of rhetoric, should forget the habits of mind they had acquired, or should deny the fond wish to

conciliate their old philosophy with their new religion. And in coming among the uninstructed faithful, it was natural that they should cherish and employ the intellectual advantage they possessed over their new associates, and should endeavour to shine as learned expounders of Christian doctrine, when they had relinquished the honours of secular learning. The style of philosophical exposition which was set in the second century, has only changed names, and masters, and phrases, from that time to this. The Reformers did indeed reject both Aristotle and the Pope, as authorities in matters of religion; and they turned with a sincere and manly resolution to the inspired writers, as the only teachers of doctrine. But they did not rid themselves (any more than did the Platonic fathers) of the intellectual habits which their education had given them; and while they looked to the Scriptures alone, and looked to them with all imaginable reverence, their method of interpretation was thoroughly metaphysical;—their rule of doctrinal harmony or consistency was drawn from the logic of the middle ages; and the method of interpreting Scripture, as Bacon taught the world to interpret nature, entered not the mind of one of them.

The Reformers were commanding spirits, and they effected the greatest revolution in human affairs that the world has witnessed. But an absolute pause has since ensued. The church has seen, indeed, very many zealous and accomplished divines; but no commanding spirits, from the age of Luther and Calvin to the present day. Interpretation is now almost what they left it. Criticism has indeed been immensely advanced, and the riches of erudition have been accumulated in vast masses around the sacred text. But every interpreter follows his predecessors in the wheel-way of his denomination; and leaves theology too much what natural philosophy was at the time of the publication of the *Novum Organum*. It is imperfectly or dimly seen, that the Bible is the work of the same Hand that built the world, and must therefore be studied in the same method.

History is never so instructive as when single and special themes are pursued through the course of ages. It is much to be desired that a history of Biblical exposition should be given to the church. Not a history of criticism and erudition, but of principles and theological philosophy. It should have its commencement with the earliest Jewish expositors, among whom would be found the rudiments of all the abuses that have since belonged to this department of intellectual labour.



## NOTE K. p. xlvi.

Hume was far too sagacious not to perceive, what he was far too astute to tell his reader, that his argument against Christianity, if good for any thing, ought to pass as a plough-share of destruction over the entire field of human affairs. It is amazing that so much importance should have been attached to so puerile a conceit—a conceit which, if divested of its garb of philosophic gravity, is vapid nonsense, that does not recommend itself even by the ingenuity that often makes a foolish sophism amusing. And yet such are the immunities and privileges granted to any sort of sceptical argument, that this same sophism, refuted a hundred times, is still respectfully regarded by writers of repute. The proper answer, or at least a sufficient one, has very recently been given (Edinburgh Rev. No. 104, Art. VI.) to a new expression of Hume's quibble, but given with a reserve in favour of infidelity, and with a closing insinuation against the Christian evidences, for which it would have been far more manly to have substituted a candid avowal of unbelief. The author of the book, to which, in this, and another instance, (Second preliminary Dissertation, prefixed to the 7th ed. of the Encycl. Brit. p. 354) an importance is given that must have been founded on some other reason than its merits, urges the argument against Christianity with all the simplicity of one who has never been reminded, that it presses, with equal force, upon every transaction of common life, and upon all the methods of modern science. The reasoning of Essay III. on "the Fundamental Principle of all Evidence and Expectation," if sound, disperses with a breath (to take one example from a hundred) the modern chemistry; for it not only proves it to be absurd to receive the testimony of experimenters who describe any other combination of substances than those we have personally observed, but it forbids a man to believe even the evidence of his own senses, when a new phenomenon meets him! Is this *philosophy*? if not, what epithet shall we bestow upon it? In every case of a deviation from that order of events which hitherto we have observed, instead of either questioning the evidence of our senses, or resolutely refusing to receive good and abundant testimony, and instead of supposing that a dissolution of the connexion of cause and effect has happened, we simply presume that some new and unknown cause has come in to disturb the usual course of events. This presumption is the very instrument of all discovery in experimental philosophy.

Every new, or unexpected, or inexplicable appearance, (and such are of very frequent occurrence in a course of chemical experiment) suggests the conviction that an unknown cause is present: then follows the hypothesis which is to guide the way in making fresh experiments, with the view of detecting the hidden power. Now this process is not merely abstractedly reasonable, but has been abundantly authenticated by the actual results of such processes.

If such a case may at all be supposed as that adduced by the author of these Essays — namely, the testimony of many credible witnesses to the fact, that a cubic inch of ice remained undissolved when exposed to the heat of a furnace; instead of taking the course which he recommends—that of rejecting, by a violence upon our own convictions, the testimony of a hundred competent and unexceptionable witnesses, we, in the spirit of true philosophy, should first accept the fact *so attested* as indubitable; and should then confidently presume—not that Nature had forgotten her laws in that instance, but that some extraordinary cause was present to intercept the operation of heat upon ice. With the hope of discovering this extraordinary agent, we should rigidly examine all the circumstances of the experiment,—should frame every conceivable hypothesis, and should put each in turn to the test; and if after all we failed in our endeavours, should simply record the fact as unexplained, and bequeath it to the next age, when perhaps a perfected philosophy may clear up this, and many other difficulties.

But now let it be supposed, that the hundred competent persons who have affirmed that, in their presence, ice remained undissolved in a furnace, were to explain the matter, by saying that the water, before its congelation, had been impregnated with a newly-discovered chemical agent, which had the property of converting water into an indissoluble crystal. If this affirmation be also properly attested, then, what inconsistency remains?—none; except on the part of the sceptic, who had declared, in the true style of ignorance, that, “nobody should make him believe what he had not seen with his own eyes.”

It is scarcely necessary to apply the argument to the case of the Christian miracles. The author of these Essays admits, page 268, that our involuntary belief of the uniformity of causation, compels us to suppose that “the admirable appearances of design” exhibited by the material world, have been the production of an “intelligent cause;” and that this cause is “wise and benevolent.” Here, then, he affirms and

alleges the presence of a cause sufficient, and strictly proper, for the production of the unusual effects spoken of by the witnesses. It is, therefore, no longer necessary either to suppose an interruption of the principle of causation, or to stand aghast, as he would have us, between two incompatible proofs; for the witnesses, whose veracity is granted (p. 262) to be established on the ordinary principles of human nature, not only affirm the occurrence of the unusual event, but affirm it in a connexion that renders the entire testimony intelligible and rational. They declare that, to authenticate the doctrine of a future life, He who is the author of life opened the eyes of one born blind; and is not this proposition as reasonable, abstractedly, as the other proposition, "that God formed the eye to see?" On occasion of meeting with such an affirmation, the only question we have to do with, concerns the credibility of the witnesses. It is already admitted, that the same wise and benevolent Being who gives sight to the million at birth, may, if he pleases, afterwards grant it to the one who received it not then. "Has he so pleased?" this is the single doubt; and it is to be resolved by application of the established rules of historical evidence.

NOTE L. p. xlviii.

To affirm that the doctrine of materialism is innoxious, or, at least, that it is a matter of indifference to religion, may startle some readers. The assertion is advanced with a subjoined condition. A philosophical system may have an *inherent* and inseparable, or an accidental and *relative* mischievous tendency: that is to say, it may be directly hostile to the great principles of morals and religion, so as to be susceptible of no modification or accommodation which can render it consistent with those principles; or it may produce ill consequences solely by some misinterpretation, or unfounded inference; or by clashing with some existing popular prejudice. Thus, for example, the doctrine of necessity, as advanced by Diderot; and that of causation, as applied to testimony, by Hume; can, neither of them, be reconciled with the principles of religion, any more than with other parts of the economy of human life. They are intrinsically inimical to man, and might safely be rejected, unexamined, simply because they stand in contrariety to all the sciences, as well as to the constitution and universal sentiments of human nature.

But a system, such as the idealism of Berkeley, which leaves all relations and sentiments, just what it found them, and is in fact *a pure theory*, without inference, cannot be affirmed to have any intrinsic quality hostile to the principles of morality or religion. Nevertheless, it may happen that, among those who must understand whatever they hear in a gross sense, the doctrine that nothing exists, or can exist, but mind, might produce some dangerous perplexity. This ill consequence is clearly accidental, and an equal inconvenience might happen to result from the best-established truths. Or, to take another instance:—an inference unfavourable to revealed religion has been hastily derived by its enemies, from some facts of geological science; and the groundless fears of the friends of religion have encouraged the ill intentions of infidels. But in these cases all the mischief has arisen either from a misunderstanding of the facts, or from an unwarrantable deduction of consequences.

Now the case is parallel in the instance of the doctrine of materialism. It may *become* pernicious by a popular misinterpretation, or by a malignant and sophistical comment, framed by those who are ever ready to take bad advantage of the ignorance of the multitude. But in its essence, this doctrine, false as it is, stands precisely on a level with its antagonist, idealism, and leaves all questions of morality and religion just what and where they were. The question concerning the materiality or spirituality of mind, resolves itself into a futile inquiry concerning the *inner form* of substances (*Novum Organum*) which is always indifferent, both to theory and to practice. Whether heat be a diffused substance, or a mode of movement; an emanation, or a vibration; is unimportant both to science and to art. Such is the question concerning the occult constitution of thought;—a question never to be determined, but one which *might* be determined in this manner or in that, without in the remotest degree affecting (except by vulgar prejudice) the doctrines of the immortality and future responsibility of man — doctrines which rest on far surer grounds than that of metaphysical demonstration.

#### NOTE M. p. xlvi.

The supernatural reaches us in the Scriptures not *supernaturally*, but precisely in the same way in which all other matters, conveyed by document, reach the parties interested. *B* holds a reversionary claim to a title and estate by possession

of parchments, the authenticity of which he can satisfactorily establish. *C* holds an interest in the future life, also by writings, the validity of which he can prove. The *subject matter* of the two deeds or testaments affects not at all the mode of conveyance; and if the claims of *B* and *C* are severally called in question, both must defend their pretensions by the same process of argument; or, if any abstract principle can be adduced which would destroy, *à priori*, the heavenly expectations of *C*, it must at the same time annihilate the secular hopes of *B*.

All the difficulty in the argument for Christianity proceeds from the refusal of the opponent to abide by the established conditions of documentary proof. This difficulty has been immeasurably enhanced by that fatal alliance between metaphysics and religion, which theologians have encouraged—"et zelum religionis cæcum et immoderatum."  
—*Nov. Organum*.

#### NOTE N. p. 1.

The rude and laborious mechanical or chemical processes which are carried on among a people destitute of physical science, may be regarded as standing parallel with those conventional maxims of morality, and those imperfect social institutions, which exist among the same nations, if not yet visited by revealed religion. Now, previously to the introduction of physical science among such a rude people, the question might be started by them, Whether the new principles may not be expected to impede, baffle, and subvert, the existing arts? To this question it might be replied, That the existing arts are nothing but science in a broken or unconnected form; that is to say, single inferences from single facts, accidentally discovered; and that, therefore, when the entire course of nature, of which these facts are insulated parts, is known, the practical inferences must be more in number, and more consistent one with another. In other words, that the result of an extended knowledge of nature must be beneficial, because even a partial knowledge of it is so.

The reply would be the same to a question concerning the utility of moral, or, we should say, Divine science. The uninformed sentiments of mankind lead them to establish certain social usages, which are found to be beneficial, and indeed necessary. It may therefore be safely inferred, that a more extended or more exact knowledge of the moral nature of man, such a knowledge as Christianity imparts,



will lead to better institutions, and will suggest better rules of conduct. Now, for the same reason that an uninformed people ought to reject a pretended system of physical science which, instead of aiding their agriculture or their manufactures, brought their whole industry to a stand; so might they properly reject a moral philosophy which, instead of favouring the existing good principles of the people, asserted the absurdity of all moral sentiments, and told the multitude that there are no actions that merit either praise or blame. Such a philosophy rests on the principle, that nature and man are at variance; but physical science proves the contrary; and never makes a discovery which does not a-new declare that nature is his friend.

NOTE O. p. lii.

The author would not be thought ignorant of the "Essay on the Equity of Divine Government, and the Sovereignty of Divine Grace," or unwilling to acknowledge the great and perhaps unrivalled merit of the late Dr. Edward Williams: he cordially joins in the praise which a philosophic minority within the religious world has bestowed upon that able and amiable divine. But whatever his merits may be, as a profound and calm thinker, it will hardly be affirmed that he has been much more successful than was his predecessor and father, President Edwards, in his endeavours to destroy the *Biblical difference* between Calvinists and Arminians, by metaphysical distinctions. The Scriptural system of Dr. Williams may be more consistent than the Scriptural system of his opponents: and, again, his philosophy is certainly better than theirs. But has he brought philosophy to bear upon the RELIGION of TEXTS, in any such manner as, by its conspicuous success, to recommend that method of argument? Some, whose opinions are entitled to much respect, would reply in the affirmative; and many would reply in the negative, whose opinions, on matters of abstruse thought, are entitled to very little. The reader may gather the writer's opinion, that the attempt to decide matters of Christian doctrine by abstract demonstration, has not been placed in a decidedly more auspicious light than before, by the "Essay on Equity and Sovereignty." It may, nevertheless, be true, that that Essay occupies a very high place of merit in the circle of modern theological literature.

The author must here beg to be excused from making any explicit reference to some highly reputed modern writers on

the Arminian side of the controversy, of whom he could not speak favourably as masters of intellectual science: and it comes not within his province either to praise or blame them as expounders of Scripture.

NOTE P. p. lii.

The limits of a note would be insufficient properly to explain to those who may not hitherto have given attention to the subject, that remarkable condition of all the Divine operations which makes them subserve, *by one and the same constitution of parts, or succession of causes and effects*, two, three, or more, independent purposes. No single term has, as yet, been authenticated by the usage of philosophical writers whereby this admirable complexity and simplicity may be designated. And, indeed, the subject altogether has received less attention than it deserves. Nevertheless every one knows that the material world abounds with instances of this sort,—or, to speak more properly, that the whole system of nature is a complex simplicity,—a machinery which, with one set of powers and parts, and one continuous movement, accomplishes a great variety of ends; and yet in such manner that the entire machinery is specifically proper to each of those purposes.

The same admirable principle presents itself again to notice in that highly complicated system of which man and his agency is the subject; and it can be in no other way than by an illustration of this principle, that the doctrine of Providence can be placed in the light, or freed from urgent difficulties. The Divine operations shew always the same character; and the Bible therefore, because it is the work of God, is in this respect also in analogy with nature and providence.—“*Id etiam in omni majore opere Providentiæ evenire reperitur; ut omnia sine strepitu et sonitu placidè labantur; atque res planè agatur, priusquam homines eam agi putent aut advertent.*”—BACON.

NOTE Q. p. liii.

It is a matter of some importance to understand that relative imperfection, and consequent *uncertainty*, of intellectual philosophy, in all its branches, which results from the vagueness and variableness of its signs or terms. The closeness of the connexion between theory and practice, science and art, will be found always to bear proportion, not so much to the comprehensiveness or symmetrical perfection of the former,

as to its *precision* and its *fixedness*. But precision and fixedness can be secured only by a rigorously exact system of notation; or, in the experimental sciences, by an invariable and intelligible nomenclature. This high advantage is enjoyed in the most absolute degree by the mathematical sciences: hence it is that the connexion or correspondence between the higher mathematics and those arts of life which are dependent upon them, is liable to no hesitation or dispute.

But let it be supposed (if indeed such a supposition can be entertained) that mathematical truths were deprived of their means of definite expression, and could only be made known in the mode of a loose and changeable description. In this case the practical or *available value* of these truths would be so much lowered, that occasions would often arise wherein the vulgar rules—the *nostrums* of workmanlike skill and artisan experience, would be safer guides than those high truths; and it would be better that practical men should grope their way in the clumsy methods of manual dexterity, than trust themselves to the direction of science. This never actually happens, because mathematical science is rigorously exact in its terms, and invariable in its expressions.

Yet this low relative value, or available significance, of scientific principles, is always the disadvantage of intellectual philosophy; and hence it hardly ever comes forward to direct or control the business of life, without bringing with it an equal chance of deranging, confusing, or misdirecting the existing course of practice. Or, to state the same thing in other terms, so as to place it in direct contrast with mathematical science:—The value of the principles of intellectual philosophy is so much depreciated by the vagueness of its signs, that it can barely maintain equality with (in fact is much inferior to) the vulgar or popular axioms, and maxims, and modes of procedure, which have grown out of the common sense and experience of mankind. In all practical questions, therefore, it is at least as safe to abide by those common principles, as to follow the instructions of science. The practical man, the statesman, the teacher, and the divine, should do what the artisan ought to do, if mathematical science had no precise language, that is—listen much more to experience and common sense than to philosophy.

It follows from the incurable imperfection of intellectual science, that when a pretended demonstration, derived from it, challenges a right to disturb or overrule any existing order of things, which rests upon the basis of experience or known facts, the good sense of mankind should send it home to the

closet of the speculatist whence it issued. And now, if it were asked, in what relation the principles of intellectual philosophy stand to the affirmations of our *documentary* religion;—we should find an answer by recurring to the supposition, that the mathematical sciences possessed no definite or invariable signs, and could only express themselves in the language of vague description; and should then, moreover, suppose that a super-human intelligence, which had at command the entire compass of these sciences *in a definite form*, were to confer upon the mechanic arts a centenary of precise, though unconnected, rules of practice, drawn from that absolute science. In such a case, it would plainly be the wisdom of artisans and practical men, rigidly to adhere, on all occasions, to the hundred rules. Nor could any thing be more unreasonable than to stand hesitating between one of these *definite rules*, and some vague dogma of that unfixed science, which, having no determinate medium of expression, could reach no certain conclusions, and must always lie open to immense miscalculations. It is unnecessary to apply our illustration to the case of the relation between metaphysical science and Christianity. But if the reader thinks that the disadvantage of the former has here been too strongly stated, his attention is directed to some confessions on this subject drawn from unquestionable authorities.—“At verba ex captu vulgi imponuntur. Itaque mala et inepta verborum impositio, miris modis intellectum obsidet. Neque definitiones aut explicationes, quibus homines docti se munire et vindicare in nonnullis consueverunt, rem ullo modo restituant. Sed verba planè vim faciunt intellectui, et omnia turbant; et homines ad inanes et innumeras controversias et commenta deducunt.”—Again: “Credunt homines rationem suam verbis imperare; sed fit etiam ut verba vim suam super intellectum retorqueant et reflectant; quod philosophiam et scientias reddidit sophisticas et inactivas.”—*Nov. Organ.* Aph. 43 et 59.

Locke has enlarged upon the imperfection of words, with great force and fulness, in many parts of his *Essay on Human Understanding*: the reader hardly needs to be referred to the particular passages: he will doubtless call to mind the ninth chapter of the third book. Leibnitz speaks to the same effect. Reid says: “The language of philosophers, with regard to the original faculties of the mind, is so adapted to the prevailing system, that it cannot fit any other; like a coat that fits the man for whom it was made, and shews him to advantage, which yet will sit very awkwardly upon one of a different



make, although perhaps as handsome, and as well proportioned. It is hardly possible to make any innovation in our philosophy concerning the mind and its operations, without using new words and phrases, or giving a different meaning to those that are received."—*Inquiry*, chap. i. sect. 2.

Dugald Stewart professes, more than once, his indistinct hope, that the project of a philosophical language might be realised, in order to obviate the inconveniences that arise from the use of an instrument of thought which was constructed by the vulgar, and with no view to the purposes of science. See *Elements*, chap. iv. sect. 4. See also chap. vii. sect. 2. p. 495. 3d edition.

"And here I cannot help pausing a little," says the same elegant writer, "to remark *how much more imperfect language is than is commonly supposed, as an organ of mental intercourse.*"—*Philosophical Essays*, p. 207, 3d edition.

But, perhaps, this great and incurable disadvantage has never been more forcibly represented than by a distinguished living writer, who so strongly states the difficulty with which the intellectual and moral philosopher has to contend, that the reader would be almost justified in at once withdrawing his attention from a science which, by the confession of so competent a master, can never *become scientific*. See the Introduction to the Dissertation on the Progress of Ethical Philosophy, by Sir James Mackintosh, prefixed to the 7th ed. of the *Encyc. Brit.*

#### NOTE R. p. lix.

That want of a precise and invariable notation, adverted to in the last note, which has hitherto, and which must, perhaps, always rest as a capital disadvantage upon metaphysical science, and deprive it of almost all *direct utility*, need not impede the progress of the physiology of the human mind; if this latter science were entirely severed from the former. For a knowledge of nature, in any department, may be conveyed in a *descriptive form*, to which an absolute precision of terms is not essential.

A science may properly be said to have passed its period of infancy, or to have reached a degree of maturity, when the existence of sects and oppositions within its precincts is no longer possible; — or when its first principles, or its more important deductions, are no longer liable to be called in question by well-informed men. Thus, it may safely be said, that though mathematical, astronomical, mechanical, and



physical science, may hereafter receive important additions, they have attained their maturity, and will not again be utterly subverted. Chemistry is reaching, or has reached, this maturity. Quite so much must not be affirmed of Geology. Political Economy stands perhaps on the same stage of hopeful growth. Far below it rests that system of quackery (founded, nevertheless, on real and important facts) to which the improper term phrenology has been assigned. If the phrase *infancy* is thought to be unseemingly applied to a science so ancient as metaphysics, the author can think of none other that would be appropriate, unless the analogous word *dotage* were admitted in lieu of it.

## NOTE S. p. lxii.

If the author were called upon to justify his assertion, that the modern philosophy of the human mind is, for the most part, a mere system of abstractions, he would think it enough to appeal to that anxious trimming of phrases, which characterises all the more substantial portions of Brown's Lectures, and which belongs not less to the argument of later writers who have disputed his positions. The assertion is confidently advanced, that no branch of physics, whatever be its subject, demands this solicitous nicety, or will be promoted by the use of it.

## NOTE T. p. lxv.

The reader need not be reminded, that the application of the word *instinct* comprehensively, and without distinction, to all the actions of the brute orders, is a popular impropriety. One might as well call all the actions of man *rational*, as all those of the inferior tribes *instinctive*. When an animal acts in a manner which differs in no essential circumstance from a corresponding action in man, a delusion must be engendered by applying to the two actions different terms. *A* and *B* are transacting business together, and behave very much in the same manner. But *A* has far more intelligence, and more learning, and more virtue, than *B*. Shall we therefore say that *A* acts and speaks rationally, and *B* instinctively? This were to introduce a distinction which belongs not to the real points of difference. We should confine the word *instinct* to those instances in which a course *rational*, as to its end, is pursued by a voluntary agent, under circumstances which forbid the supposition that it springs from a perception

or calculation of the connexion of means and end. The instance usually adduced, that of the construction of the honey-comb, is one of the most proper that can be named, especially because it involves some of the highest and most abstruse principles of geometry.

Though man also has his instincts, as they are not of the sort which supply the want of reason (which he possesses), they afford him little aid in interpreting those operations by which, in animals, reason is anticipated or supplanted. Philosophical writers must be understood to use the words reason and instinct in a popular sense, when attributing the one to man as his prerogative, and the other to the brute as its blind faculty. The terms reason and instinct thus vaguely used, mean—more reason, and less reason. “Bruto, *quamvis ratione et libertate destituto*,” says Leibnitz, “*pœnas infligimus, cùm id ad correctionem ejus quid conferre posse judicamus; sic canes et equi mulcantur, idque felici cum successu.*” But if the brute were altogether destitute of reason and liberty, *in the same sense* in which the bee is destitute of both in building her cells, rewards and punishments could have no operation or efficiency.

#### NOTE U. p. lxx.

The precise term employed to designate the incessant activity of mind, or the constant succession of thoughts, is of very little or no importance to physiology. Those phrases which have been the subject of so much debate among modern writers, take their sense and propriety from the particular doctrine that is entertained relative to the law or laws that regulate the succession of mental states. The term that is chosen must depend upon the answer given to the question—What is the connecting principle that makes one thought or emotion, rather than another, succeed to the one which last occupied the mind? The fact of an incessant succession of thoughts, is independent of such inquiries; and no one who attentively observes the manners of any active animal, can doubt that this constant movement belongs as well to the brute as to the human mind.

#### NOTE W. p. lxxii.

It has been related, that a horse, pinched in shoeing, and turned out to field, has made his way, by leaping several fences, to the farrier's shop, and there presented the uneasy

foot to the careless artist, who had so negligently exercised his craft. This, if true, is something more than association of ideas; for that principle would have led the nag any where rather than to the shop where he had recently been so ill treated. Ponies that have been long upon the same farm, not unfrequently acquire so high a degree of dexterity (if the word may be applied to the use of teeth and lips), in opening the fastenings of gates, that it becomes a very difficult matter to confine them to a particular pasture; and the contrivances resorted to for baffling their ingenuity suppose more or less of a corresponding faculty of invention. A horse shut up loose in a small stable, will with his nose break any glass within his reach; as it seems, for the purpose of admitting fresh air: this, too, implies a process of inference. The horse of the Bedouin, who is a member of his family, a guest at his table, and a party in every occurrence, acquires a degree of intelligence, as well as of docility, which very far surpasses any thing seen elsewhere. But even in England, where the horse is a slave and a captive, and is required to perform a quantity of labour which breaks the spirit; some few individuals display a sagacity that must appear incredible to those who see this noble animal only when performing his task upon the road. A personal knowledge of the sensibilities and mental qualities of the horse would tend to abate the cruel demands made often upon his bodily powers by business or pleasure. The pleasure-loving and the busy should remember, that if a horse is a *machine*, he is a *conscious machine*.

## NOTE X. p. lxxiii.

Offence ought not to be taken at the employment of these terms, in speaking of the more intelligent species of animals. The distance which divides man from the brute is indeed great; and that must be a most erroneous philosophy which would reduce it to a mere difference of degree, or shade of superiority. And while we distinctly apprehend the nature of that distinction, and keep in mind the elements which constitute the moral and intellectual dignity of man, no danger can arise from allowing to the inferior orders all the excellence they may fairly challenge. On the contrary, (as the author thinks) those attempts which have so often been made to degrade human nature to the level of the brute, are best met by a strictly conducted comparison, which, after exhibiting with truth and advantage the powers and capa-

bilities of the inferior families of the sentient system, holds forth distinctly the new and higher elements of the human constitution. Thus is human nature seen to raise itself to the summit of a lofty scale, and to take its rank far above the highest of the subordinate species. Shall we say that in this method the paramount dignity of man is enhanced by the display of its *relative* nobility?

"Illud pro certo asseri possit," says Bacon, (*de Augmentis*, lib. ii. c. 2.) "grandia exempla haud optimam aut tutissimam afferre informationem. Id quod exprimitur non insulsè in pervulgatâ illâ fabulâ de philosopho, qui, cum stellas, sublatis oculis, intueretur, incidit in aquam: nam si oculos demississet, stellas illico in aquâ videre potuisset; verùm suspiciens in cœlum, aquam in stellis videre non potuit. Eodem modo sæpè accidit, ut res minutæ et humiles plus conferunt ad notitiam grandium, quàm grandes ad notitiam minutarum." Good text for a new Essay on the Human Understanding!

#### NOTE Y. p. lxxiv.

If the phrase *functional equality* needs explanation, it may thus be given.—When the stomach and mouth of the lion or tiger are examined, there is seen an apparatus fitted for the trituration and decomposition of large masses of animal substance—muscle, ligament, and bone: we find accordingly, in the mechanical structure of the mighty eater, the highest degree of muscular power and agility, such as are requisite for the pursuit and conquest of the largest prey. Here is the first set of correspondences. But these organs and instruments would be useless, unless the mental constitution of the animal were in harmony with its bodily mechanism. Fierceness, courage, promptitude, wariness, patience, are the qualities that are the proper concomitants of such a stomach, and of such gastric agents. The animal exhibits a perfect equipoise of organs, functions, and propensities. What were the chylopoetic viscera of the tiger, conjoined with the temper and mental faculty of the ox?

On a like principle, the high dignity and noble destiny of man might, with the strictest reason, be argued in detail from the parts and correspondences of his physical conformation.

#### NOTE Z. p. lxxx.

When the composition of forces in circular movements, or the path of projectiles, or the acceleration of falling bodies,

or when the diminution of the intensity of heat, according to the distance of its emanation, or when the velocity of sound, and a hundred other laws of the material world, are at once ascertained by experiment, and demonstrated abstractedly by mathematical science; and when it is found that the theoretic or hypothetical reasoning is borne out by experiment; not only is the certainty of the two methods of investigation established by their exact agreement; but we are furnished with a striking proof of the absolute harmony which reigns through the universe; at least in every instance in which we have the opportunity of bringing independent principles into comparison. Let it be remembered, that no possible constitution of the material world could have made mathematical truths other than they are. Whatever might have been the *mechanical* principles of the universe; whatever the composition or powers of its elements; certain curves could have had no other properties than those they actually possess; and the relation between the square and the cube in numbers must have remained unalterable. Now, when it is found that the material system actually and precisely conforms itself to these unchangeable (shall we say eternal?) principles, we may either suppose that the agreement is the product of the wisdom of the Creator, who has so adjusted the machinery of the universe to those unalterable truths; or we may affirm that it is the result of a necessary relationship; that is to say, that the mechanical or chemical law could be no other than an expression of mathematical principles. The inference would be nearly the same in either case. If what may seem the more religious supposition be adopted, then we may confidently assume that He who has followed the rule of a perfect harmony in one part of his work, has done so also in other parts. Or if we take the latter supposition, that the correspondence between mathematical, mechanical, and chemical principles is nothing more than a *necessary relation*, then we may, with a like confidence, assume that the law of relation runs through the universe; and if, in turning from mathematical and mechanical to metaphysical science, we find an exact correspondence between all truths and facts on the one side, while on the other, nothing presents itself but an inexplicable—an astounding contrariety, nothing but “whimsical inconsequences,” the presumption against the latter will fall little short of a demonstration of its falseness.

There *ought* to be the same sort of concord between the physiology of man and abstract or metaphysical truth, which



we find to exist between mathematics, and mechanics, and optics, and acoustics, and chemistry. But now, let it be supposed for a moment, that a discordancy between these sciences were discovered; what course should then be taken, or how should we decide between abstraction and experiment? We reply, that the abstract science, having the advantage of *a perfect system of notation*, must be allowed to stand its ground in opposition to experiment; for this reason,—that in the investigation of nature by the method of experiment, there must be assumed, in almost every case, a possibility of error, arising either from the faultiness of our method, or its incompleteness; for it may happen that some hidden cause has escaped our observation.

The case is just reversed in the instance of an apparent contrariety between metaphysical science, and the knowledge of human nature as acquired by common observation. For the former, possessing only a vague, variable, and fallacious system of notation, is destitute of demonstrative force; and its conclusions can scarcely ever rise to the level of indisputable truth. On the contrary, the common knowledge of human nature has an advantage even over physical experiment, inasmuch as in its great principles, it rests not on the observations of a few philosophers, but is attested by the consciousness and conduct of all mankind. In a word, mathematical and experimental philosophy stand related to each other, in respect of their certainty, nearly as equations; the difference being against the latter by the amount of a very small deduction for possible error. But no absolute estimate can be formed of the relation between metaphysical science and the experimental knowledge of human nature, because no positive or definite expression can be given of the philosophical value of the former. In any particular instance it is as if, in looking to the data of a problem in arithmetic, the figures expressing one of the quantities were blurred, or partly obliterated, so that it was impossible to decide whether it should be read 901 or ·001.

#### NOTE A A. p. lxxxii.

The limits and intention of this Essay forbid that any exemplification should be attempted of that method of combined observation and analysis, of which the developement of the faculties during the season of infancy might be the subject. The specimens of this kind that are afforded by Brown (as in Lecture xxiii. vol. i. p. 514), have in them far

too much that is metaphysical, and far too little that is physiological. We should suppose that the lecturer constructed his illustrations in his study, rather than drew them from the nursery.

NOTE B B. p. lxxxiv.

The transfer or attachment of the irascible feeling to its object takes place much later than its developement as a vague emotion. The infant is petulant and irascible, long before it conceives anger against the supposed author of an injury. But the periods of the rise of these and other emotions vary by the difference of many months; and the variation indicates the character, and might sometimes suggest the specific method of education.

NOTE C C. p. lxxxv.

Nearly all the descriptions which President Edwards gives of the process of volition (for example, in the first and second part of his Inquiry), are true only of certain complex instances of determination, wherein antagonist desires are present to the mind. It seemed to him necessary to his argument, to display the mental operation *at large*, in order to exhibit the influence of the predominant desire, and by that means to prove that the volition is ruled by motive, and is not contingent. But volition is *not contingent*, that is to say, is not *uncaused*, even though there be (as often) no predominant desire; or when, after a longer or shorter conflict, the mind decides, not by what seemed the strongest desire, but by a new and unimportant suggestion, springing up at the moment when the bodily powers are standing (if we might so speak) waiting for command.

NOTE D D. p. lxxxvi.

Brown, in the Lecture just above referred to, and in other places, talks of the reasoning process as belonging to the very first exertion of the muscular powers. Does he not in these instances suppose far more than is contained in the phenomena? We should imagine any thing as soon as a reasoning from the past to the future in the mind of a babe. The lecturer's hypothesis on the subject of cause and effect, leads him naturally to impute a mental process where none makes itself evident.

## NOTE E E. p. lxxxvii.

It is very much the aim of education to cultivate the faculty of continued, or, as it is called, *close* attention. And there can be no doubt that this power is of high importance, and much needed in all the occasions of life. But the power of attending to more objects than one at the same time, and of suddenly directing the whole force of the mind from one object to another, is not less important, though far less cultivated or thought of. It may be added, that the power of complex attention recommends itself by its connexion with the moral faculties. The habit of thinking *comprehensively* may be called — a means of virtue.

## NOTE F F. p. xci.

In modern times, the business of government in relation to the people is almost confined to the prevention and punishment of crimes. But this was only a branch of the care of the legislator in ancient Greece, in Persia, and in Rome. To protect, and cherish, and reward the virtue of the people (that is to say, the specific national virtue), was the first and principal object of every institution; the punishment of crime was but an incidental affair. A proposition to revive in its completeness this ancient idea of government, would seem in the highest degree romantic or puerile. Yet it is by no means certain that something of the kind might not be attempted. But it is a paternal or *patrician* work so to educate the people, and one that implies a restoration of the long-lost relative sentiments which should connect the higher with the lower classes. High principles and vivid sentiments of public virtue, must, to some extent, prevail among the aristocracy of a country, if the lower orders are to be thought of otherwise than as a hostile power, that must be held at bay by force and skill. Sad derangement of social order, when the noble and the rich stand related to the people rather as protected proprietors of the national wealth, than as conservators of the common prosperity! It must not be affirmed that England has reached this stage of political dissolution. On the contrary, it may be hoped that a restorative process has, within the last few years, been going on; and that the idea of a true patriotism has been brought out to view, and has received some practical homage among public men.

## NOTE G G. p. xcii.

While viewing human nature and the history of man as an object of physiology, it would be quite improper to entertain theological distinctions, or to inquire into the cause of those higher and more intimate reformations — reformations of the spirit, which Christianity challenges as its triumphs, and teaches us to ascribe to an emanation of Divine influence. These restorations of the true and original beauty of the human soul, whatever may be their cause, take place in accordance with the constitution of the human mind, not in subversion of its principles of movement, and are at once truly divine and truly natural. But putting these emphatic instances out of the question, it is a common thing for emendations of character, within certain limits, to take place (even after the plastic season of youth is gone by), in consequence of cogitation, and of persevering effort, directed or guided by an abstract idea of excellence.

## NOTE H H. p. xciii.

The operations of invention and abstraction, and, for the same reason, the moral operation of self-advancement, are open probably to a complete analysis. To analyse them falls not within the intention of this Essay. But the author requests the reader to bear in mind, that no practical inference depends upon such an analysis, so long as the fact that these operations are within the power of human nature, remains unquestionable. It might, to take an illustration, have been said to the author of “Sir Charles Grandison,” “Conceive the idea of finished virtue and honour, and embody that idea in a fictitious narrative.” The imposition of such a task would not have seemed preposterous,—it would have been only to call into exercise an existing faculty. But instead of imposing this literary task, let it have been said to the same person, “Conceive the idea of virtue passing unhurt through scenes of temptation and trial, and *embody the idea in your own conduct and temper.*” If motive be wanting, think of the present and the future rewards of goodness.” It may be said, that this latter task is one of far greater difficulty than the first. True: but the second, not less than the first, is a reasonable requirement, founded upon the existence of certain

faculties in the person to whom the proposition is made. And, moreover, if the second task be more difficult than the first, it stands related to a motive incomparably more powerful: all that is needed for overcoming the greater difficulty, is to bring the infinite motives home upon the mind. Now, as it is not necessary first to analyse the process of invention before we can reasonably demand from a writer a work of fiction, having a given object; so neither is it necessary to effect a corresponding analysis before men can reasonably be required to cultivate virtue. Nor could any result of such an analysis nullify the reasonableness of the demand. If the metaphysician says, I have resolved what you term the process of self-education into a series of physical causes; no sense can be assigned to such an affirmation which would discharge from the natural history of man, the fact, that reformation is a frequent event, or, which would impugn the inference, that it may reasonably be looked for and demanded from mankind. He may as well deny to man the power of locomotion, who denies him *the natural faculties* of virtue.

#### NOTE I I. p. xciv.

The author would not omit the opportunity of recommending to the reader "An Essay on Moral Freedom," by the Rev. Thomas Tully Crybbace, A.M. The fourth and fifth sections of that essay bear upon the subject of the damage or injury of the moral nature of man, for which the Gospel provides a remedy. The work throughout will well repay an attentive perusal. — The same, notwithstanding some imperfections, may be said of a volume recently published, "On the Work of the Holy Spirit in Conversion," by the Rev. J. Howard Hinton. In this, and some similar works of the day, a hopeful effort is evidently making to throw off the corruptions of that putrid Christianity, which has too long poisoned all the atmosphere in some quarters of the religious world. It is a circumstance of much significance, that the cleansing energy has sprung up in the nearest vicinity of the evil.

#### NOTE K K. p. cii.

The correspondences between the astronomical position of the earth, and the structure and physiology of plants, are



many and admirable. That quick alternation of temperature which is occasioned by its diurnal rotation, is essential to the *mechanical* contrivance by which the ascent of sap is effected. Then, again, this alternate heat and cold, by the chemical change it produces on the atmosphere, and within the plant, is necessary to the respiratory functions of the vegetable system. Again, the alternation of the seasons, resulting from the inclination of the earth's axis to the plane of its orbit, is the very basis of vegetable life. The one system of contrivances supposes the existence of the other, and the wellbeing of the one depends upon its relation to the other. Animal life, in like manner, is one complex mass of relations to the mechanical and chemical laws of the world; and if the human mind were exempt from such relationship, it would not only be an amazing anomaly in the universe, but could hold no intercourse or sociality whatever with the external world.

NOTE L L. p. cxvi.

“Non tamen inter hæc existimandum, libertatem nostram in indeterminatione, aut indifferentiâ quâdam æquilibrii sitam esse; quasi æqualiter in utramque partem, et affirmativam, et negativam, ac in plures partes diversas propendere oporteret, cum plura nobis eligenda proponuntur. Hoc æquilibrium usquequaque impossibile est; nam si æqualiter propenderemus in tria eligibilia, A, B, et C, non possemus æqualiter propendere in A et non A.

“Hoc æquilibrium etiam prorsus adversatur experientiæ, et ubi nostra intus scrutabimur adtentius, semper aliquam causam, sive rationem, adfuisse deprehendemus quæ nos in eam, quam amplexi sumus, partem inclinavit, quamvis frequenter id, quod nos movet, non percipiamus; planè sicut vix percipimus, quare, portâ aliquâ egredientes, pedem dextrum sinistro, vel sinistram dextro, præposuerimus.”—THEODIC. pars i. § 35.

Leibnitz does not here deny the possible equality of *eligibles*, but the absolute indifference of the mind towards them. The demonstration contained in the first paragraph is, like many such demonstrations, very convincing in *form*, but totally inapplicable to the subject, and therefore of no value. The appeal to consciousness in the second paragraph is pertinent, and it *supposes*, though it does not assert, that mode of

determination by the suggestion of the moment, which is referred to in the Essay.

The course of human life is replete with occasions, in which, by the choice of one path where two or more of equal promise present themselves (a choice not determinable by moral considerations), the entire fortune of after-life is made other than it might have been. It is not easy to shew why such occasions should not belong to a future and a more perfect state, as well as to this. In fact, to deny their occurrence demands the supposition of either a state of absolute inertness, or an immediate control of the agency of intelligent beings by the Divine power, or the abstract impossibility of both real and apparent equivalents. So few elements of cogitation relating to the future life are afforded to us in the Scriptures (our only guides), and these elements are so exclusively of a moral order, that we almost unavoidably take up *a very restricted conception* of that future condition of human nature, which is to give a full expansion to its original powers. The great difficulty of conjoining an enlarged conception of the future life, with the idea of freedom from all that is evil, leads the devout mind (and perhaps properly) to confine itself to the elementary and paramount sentiment which is gathered from devotional exercises.

#### NOTE M M. p. cxix.

There is, perhaps, nothing more inconceivable (we do not say that it is incredible) than the doctrine that the production of organised bodies, vegetable and animal, is a developement of the parts and properties of the microscopic seminal element. Rather than believe this, the mind gladly acquiesces in the belief of an immediate exertion of creative power in each instance. But vegetable and animal *functions* are easily attributed to mechanical and chemical powers in operation upon the organs of life. Yet, perhaps, it is more philosophical to believe that the idea of difficulty or of facility, in the one case or the other, springs altogether from the influence of an *idolum tribus*, "*estque intellectus humanus instar speculi inæqualis*," &c.

The construction of a plant or animal, being assumed as the immediate effect of creative power and intelligence, and the laws of the material world, the properties or powers of heat, and the chemical properties of air, water, earth, &c.

being supposed, then the changes that take place in the history of the organised body are all resolvable into so many relations of proportion, or equilibrium, or equivalence, precisely in the same way that the movements of a machine are so resolvable.

NOTE N N. p. cxx.

Brown usually misunderstands and misrepresents (not wilfully, but by force of his own conceptions) the sense of his predecessors. A glaring instance occurs in his attempt (Lecture VI.) to convict Locke of a sophism. Nothing can be more superficial than his own sophism on the subject of physical antecedents and consequents. But it is one which runs through his philosophy, and to be effectively exposed must be followed from beginning to end of his four volumes. In illustration of the principle, that a real relation of fitness or equality is the actual connexion between physical events, the reader is referred to the passage in the "Essay on Human Understanding," upon which Brown makes his comment.—Book iv. chap. iii. sect. 25, and this compared with "Novum Organum," lib. ii. aph. vi. vii. &c.

Without adopting either the mechanical theories once so much in vogue, and now so much contemned; or the chemical hypothesis, to which more respect is paid in our times; it may be assumed, as not altogether improbable, that some such advances will be made in physical science as may confirm the conjectures of Locke, and, in part, realise the glowing anticipations of Bacon; and, at the same time, expose to greater and greater contempt the modern metaphysical doctrine of causation. It is consolatory to perceive that, while certain modern dialecticians announce confidently, that science must stop short at a point which they have indicated—the professors of natural science adhere to a philosophical modesty—a modesty which is nurse of hope, and mother of invention, and allow it to be possible that our successors may know incomparably more than ourselves. "This may, however, be a rash inference (that because the hidden powers of nature have not hitherto been discovered, they never will); Bacon, after all, may be in the right, and we may be judging under the influence of the vulgar prejudice, which has convinced men in every age that they had reached the farthest verge of human knowledge. This must be left to the decision of posterity; and we should rejoice to think that judg-

ment will hereafter be given against the opinion, which at this moment appears most probable." — *Third Dissertation, by Professor Playfair, Ency. Brit.* 7th ed. p. 474.

A noble confession, and worthy of a philosopher! How unlike the cold dogmatism that reigns in the modern science of mind! But the spirit of philosophy is to be looked for only among those whose minds have been trained under the influence of real and substantial sciences.

## ERRATUM.

Page lxiii, dele reference to Note T.

AN INQUIRY,

ETC. ETC.





# INQUIRY,

ETC. ETC.

---

## PART I.

WHEREIN ARE EXPLAINED AND STATED VARIOUS  
TERMS AND THINGS BELONGING TO THE SUBJECT  
OF THE ENSUING DISCOURSE.

### SECTION I.

CONCERNING THE NATURE OF THE WILL.

IT may possibly be thought, that there is no great need of going about to define or describe the *will*; this word being generally as well understood as any other words we can use to explain it: and so, perhaps, it would be, had not philosophers, metaphysicians, and polemic divines, brought the matter into obscurity by the things they have said of it. But since it is so, I think it may be of some use, and will tend to the greater clearness in the following discourse, to say a few things concerning it.

And therefore I observe, that the *will* (without any metaphysical refining) is plainly, *that by which the mind chooses any thing*. The faculty of the *will* is that faculty or power, or principle of mind, by which it is capable of *choosing*: an act of the *will* is the same as an act of *choosing* or *choice*.

If any think, it is a more perfect definition of the will to say, that, It is that by which the soul

either *chooses* or *refuses*,—I am content with it ; though I think that it is enough to say, It is that by which the soul chooses : for in every act of will whatsoever, the mind chooses one thing rather than another ; it chooses something rather than the contrary, or rather than the want or non-existence of that thing. So, in every act of refusal, the mind chooses the absence of the thing refused ; the positive and the negative are set before the mind for its choice, and it chooses the negative ; and the mind's making its choice in that case is properly the act of the will ; the will's determining between the two is a voluntary determining, but that is the same thing as making a choice. So that whatever names we call the act of the will by, *choosing, refusing, approving, disapproving, liking, disliking, embracing, rejecting, determining, directing, commanding, forbidding, inclining*, or being *averse, a being pleased or displeased with* ; all may be reduced to this of *choosing*. For the soul to act *voluntarily*, is evermore to act *electively*.

Mr. Locke\* says, "The will signifies nothing but a power or ability to *prefer* or *choose*." And in the foregoing page says, "The word, *preferring*, seems best to express the act of volition ;" but adds, that "it does it not precisely ; for (says he), though a man would prefer flying to walking, yet who can say he ever wills it?" But the instance he mentions does not prove that there is any thing else in *willing* but merely *preferring* ; for it should be considered what is the next and immediate object of the will, with respect to a man's walking, or any other external

\* Human Understanding. Edit. 7, vol. i. p. 197.

action : which is, not being removed from one place to another, on the earth or through the air—these are remoter objects of preference—but such or such an immediate exertion of himself. The thing nextly chosen or preferred when a man wills to walk, is, not his being removed to such a place where he would be, but such an exertion and motion of his legs and feet, &c. in order to it. And his willing such an alteration in his body in the present moment, is nothing else but his choosing or preferring such an alteration in his body at such a moment, or his liking it better than the forbearance of it. And God has so made and established the human nature, the soul being united to a body in proper state, that the soul preferring or choosing such an immediate exertion or alteration of the body, such an alteration instantaneously follows. There is nothing else in the actions of my mind, that I am conscious of while I walk, but only my preferring or choosing, through successive moments, that there should be such alterations of my external sensations and motions, together with a concurring habitual expectation that it will be so ; having ever found by experience, that on such an immediate preference, such sensations and motions do actually, instantaneously, and constantly, arise. But it is not so in the case of flying ; though a man may be said remotely to choose or prefer flying, yet he does not choose or prefer, incline to, or desire, under circumstances in view, any immediate exertion of the members of his body in order to it, because he has no expectation that he should obtain the desired end by any such exertion ; and he does not prefer or incline

to any bodily exertion or effort under this apprehended circumstance, of its being wholly in vain. So that if we carefully distinguish the proper objects of the several acts of the will, it will not appear, by this and such like instances, that there is any difference between *volition* and *preference*; or that a man's choosing, liking best, or being best pleased with a thing, are not the same with his willing that thing; as they seem to be according to those general and more natural motions of men, according to which language is formed. Thus, an act of the will is commonly expressed by *its pleasing a man* to do thus or thus; and a man doing as he *wills*, and doing as he *pleases*, are the same thing in common speech.

Mr. Locke\* says, "The will is perfectly distinguished from desire, which in the very same action may have a quite contrary tendency from that which our wills set us upon. A man (says he), whom I cannot deny, may oblige me to use persuasions to another, which, at the same time I am speaking, I may wish may not prevail on him. In this case, it is plain the will and desire run counter." I do not suppose that *will* and *desire* are words of precisely the same signification: *will* seems to be a word of a more general signification, extending to things present and absent. *Desire* respects something absent. I may prefer my present situation and posture, suppose sitting still, or having my eyes open, and so may will it. But yet I cannot think they are so entirely distinct, that they can ever be properly said to

\* Human Understanding, vol. i. pp. 203, 204.



run counter. A man never, in any instance, wills any thing contrary to his desires, or desires any thing contrary to his will. The fore-mentioned instance, which Mr. Locke produces, does not prove that he ever does. He may, on some consideration or other, will to utter speeches which have a tendency to persuade another, and still may desire that they may not persuade him; but yet his will and desire do not run counter at all; the thing which he wills, the very same he desires; and he does not will a thing, and desire the contrary, in any particular. In this instance, it is not carefully observed what is the thing willed, and what is the thing desired: if it were, it would be found that will and desire do not clash in the least. The thing willed, on some consideration, is to utter such words; and certainly, the same consideration so influences him, that he does not desire the contrary; all things considered, he chooses to utter such words, and does not desire not to utter them. And so as to the thing which Mr. Locke speaks of as desired, viz. That the words, though they tend to persuade, should not be effectual to that end: his will is not contrary to this; he does not will that they should be effectual, but rather wills that they should not, as he desires. In order to prove that the will and desire may run counter, it should be shewn that they may be contrary one to the other in the same thing, or with respect to the very same object of will or desire: but here the objects are two; and in each, taken by themselves, the will and desire agree. And it is no wonder that they should not agree in different things, however little distinguished they are in their nature. The will

may not agree with the will, nor desire agree with desire, in different things. As in this very instance which Mr. Locke mentions, a person may, on some consideration, desire to use persuasions, and at the same time may desire they may not prevail; but yet nobody will say, that *desire* runs counter to *desire*, or that this proves that *desire* is perfectly a distinct thing from *desire*. The like might be observed of the other instance Mr. Locke produces, of a man's desiring to be eased of pain, &c.

But not to dwell any longer on this, whether *desire* and *will*, and whether *preference* and *volition*, be precisely the same things or no; yet, I trust it will be allowed by all, that in every act of will there is an act of choice; that in every volition there is a preference, or a prevailing inclination of the soul, whereby the soul, at that instant, is out of a state of perfect indifference, with respect to the direct object of the volition. So that in every act, or going forth of the will, there is some preponderation of the mind or inclination one way rather than another; and the soul had rather *have* or *do* one thing than another, or than not to have or do that thing: and that there, where there is absolutely no preferring or choosing, but a perfect continuing equilibrium, there is no volition.

## SECTION II.

### CONCERNING THE DETERMINATION OF THE WILL.

By *determining the will*, if the phrase be used with any meaning, must be intended, *causing that the act of the will or choice should be thus, and not otherwise*: and the will is said to be

determined, when, in consequence of some action or influence, its choice is directed to, and fixed upon, a particular object. As, when we speak of the determination of motion, we mean causing the motion of the body to be such a way, or in such a direction, rather than another.

To talk of the determination of the will, supposes an effect which must have a cause. If the will be determined, there is a determiner. This must be supposed to be intended even by them that say the will determines itself. If it be so, the will is both determiner and determined; it is a cause that acts and produces effects upon itself, and is the object of its own influence and action.

With respect to that grand inquiry, *What determines the will?* it would be very tedious and unnecessary at present to enumerate and examine all the various opinions which have been advanced concerning this matter; nor is it needful that I should enter into a particular disquisition of all points debated in disputes on that question, *Whether the will always follows the last dictate of the understanding.* It is sufficient to my present purpose to say, *It is that motive which, as it stands in the view of the mind, is the strongest, that determines the will:* but it may be necessary that I should a little explain my meaning in this.

By *motive*, I mean the whole of that which moves, excites, or invites, the mind to volition, whether that be one thing singly, or many things conjunctly. Many particular things may concur and unite their strength to induce the mind; and when it is so, all together are, as it were, one complex motive. And when I speak

of the *strongest motive*, I have respect to the strength of the whole that operates to induce to a particular act of volition, whether that be the strength of one thing alone, or of many together.

Whatever is a motive, in this sense, must be something that is *extant in the view or apprehension of the understanding*, or perceiving faculty. Nothing can induce or invite the mind to will or act any thing, any further than it is perceived, or is some way or other in the mind's view ; for what is wholly unperceived, and perfectly out of the mind's view, cannot affect the mind at all. It is most evident, that nothing is in the mind, or reaches it, or takes any hold of it, any otherwise than as it is perceived or thought of.

And I think it must also be allowed by all, that every thing that is properly called a motive, excitement, or inducement, to a perceiving willing agent, has some sort and degree of *tendency* or *advantage* to move or excite the will, previous to the effect, or to the act of the will excited. This previous tendency of the motive is what I call *the strength of the motive*. That motive which has a less degree of previous advantage or tendency to move the will, or that appears less inviting, as it stands in the view of the mind, is what I call a *weaker motive*. On the contrary, that which appears most inviting, and has, by what appears concerning it to the understanding or apprehension, the greatest degree of previous tendency to excite and induce the choice, is what I call the *strongest motive*. And, in this sense, I suppose the will is always determined by the strongest motive.

Things that exist in the view of the mind,

have their strength, tendency, or advantage, to move or excite its will, from many things appertaining to the nature and circumstances of the *thing viewed*, the nature and circumstances of the *mind that views*, and the degree and manner of its *view*; which it would, perhaps, be hard to make a perfect enumeration of. But so much, I think, may be determined in general, without room for controversy, that whatever is perceived or apprehended by an intelligent and voluntary agent, which has the nature and influence of a motive to volition or choice, is considered or viewed *as good*; nor has it any tendency to invite or engage the election of the soul in any further degree than it appears such. For to say otherwise, would be to say, That things that appear have a tendency by the appearance they make to engage the mind to elect them some other way than by their appearing eligible to it, which is absurd; and therefore it must be true, in some sense, that *the will always is as the greatest apparent good is*. But only, for the right understanding of this, two things must be well and distinctly observed.

1. It must be observed in what sense I use the term, *good*: namely, as of the same import with *agreeable*. To appear *good* to the mind, as I use the phrase, is the same as to *appear agreeable*, or *seem pleasing* to the mind. Certainly, nothing appears inviting and eligible to the mind, or tending to engage its inclination and choice, considered as *evil* or *disagreeable*; nor, indeed, as *indifferent*, and neither agreeable nor disagreeable. But if it tends to draw the inclination and move the will, it must be under the notion of that which *suits* the mind. And,



therefore, that must have the greatest tendency to attract and engage it, which, as it stands in the mind's view, suits it best and pleases it most; and in that sense is the greatest apparent good: to say otherwise is little, if any thing, short of a direct and plain contradiction.

The word, *good*, in this sense, includes in its signification the removal or avoiding of evil, or of that which is disagreeable and uneasy. It is agreeable and pleasing to avoid what is disagreeable and displeasing, and to have uneasiness removed. So that here is included what Mr. Locke supposes determines the will. For when he speaks of uneasiness as determining the will, he must be understood as supposing that the end or aim which governs in the volition or act of preference, is the avoiding or removal of that uneasiness; and that is the same thing as choosing and seeking what is more easy and agreeable.

2. When I say, the will is as the greatest apparent good is, or (as I have explained it) that volition has always for its object the thing which appears most agreeable, it must be carefully observed, to avoid confusion and needless objection, that I speak of the *direct* and *immediate* object of the act of volition, and not some object that the act of will has not an immediate, but only an indirect and remote, respect to. Many acts of volition have some remote relation to an object that is different from the thing most immediately willed and chosen. Thus, when a drunkard has his liquor before him, and he has to choose whether to drink it or no, the proper and immediate objects about which his present volition is conversant, and

between which his choice now decides, are his own acts in drinking the liquor or letting it alone ; and this will certainly be done according to what, in the present view of his mind, taken in the whole of it, is most agreeable to him. If he chooses or wills to drink it, and not to let it alone, then this action, as it stands in the view of his mind, with all that belongs to its appearance there, is more agreeable and pleasing than letting it alone.

But the objects to which this act of volition may relate more remotely, and between which his choice may determine more indirectly, are the present pleasure the man expects by drinking, and the future misery which he judges will be the consequence of it : he may judge that this future misery, when it comes, will be more disagreeable and unpleasant than refraining from drinking now would be. But these two things are not the proper objects that the act of volition spoken of is nextly conversant about. For the act of will spoken of, is concerning present drinking or forbearing to drink. If he wills to drink, then drinking is the proper object of the act of his will ; and drinking, on some account or other, now appears most agreeable to him, and suits him best. If he chooses to refrain, then refraining is the immediate object of his will, and is most pleasing to him. If in the choice he makes in the case, he prefers a present pleasure to a future advantage, which he judges will be greater when it comes, then a lesser present pleasure appears more agreeable to him than a greater advantage at a distance. If, on the contrary, a future advantage is preferred, then that appears most agreeable, and

suits him best. And so still the present volition is as the greatest apparent good at present is.

I have rather chosen to express myself thus, *that the will always is as the greatest apparent good, or as what appears most agreeable is*, than to say that the will *is determined by* the greatest apparent good, or by what seems most agreeable; because an appearing most agreeable or pleasing to the mind, and the mind's preferring and choosing, seem hardly to be properly and perfectly distinct. If strict propriety of speech be insisted on, it may more properly be said, that the *voluntary action* which is the immediate consequence and fruit of the mind's volition or choice, is *determined by* that which appears most agreeable, than the preference or choice itself; but that the act of volition itself is always determined by that, in or about the mind's view of the object, which *causes it to appear* most agreeable. I say, *in or about the mind's view* of the object, because what has influence to render an object in view agreeable, is not only what appears *in* the object viewed, but also *the manner* of the view, and *the state and circumstances* of the mind that views. Particularly to enumerate all things pertaining to the mind's view of the objects of volition, which have influence in their appearing agreeable to the mind, would be a matter of no small difficulty, and might require a treatise by itself, and is not necessary to my present purpose. I shall, therefore, only mention some things in general.

I. One thing that makes an object proposed to choice agreeable, is the *apparent nature and circumstances of the object*. And there are

various things of this sort, that have a hand in rendering the object more or less agreeable; as:

1. That which appears in the object, which renders it *beautiful* and pleasant, or *deformed* and irksome to the mind, viewing it as it is *in itself*.

2. The apparent degree of pleasure or trouble *attending* the object, or the *consequence* of it. Such concomitants and consequents, being viewed as circumstances of the objects, are to be considered as belonging to it, and as it were parts of it; as it stands in the mind's view, as a proposed object of choice.

3. The *apparent state* of the pleasure or trouble that appears, with respect to *distance of time*; being either nearer or further off. It is a thing in itself agreeable to the mind, to have pleasure speedily, and disagreeable to have it delayed; so that if there be two equal degrees of pleasure set in the mind's view, and all other things are equal, but only one is beheld as near, and the other far off; the nearer will appear most agreeable, and so will be chosen. Because, though the agreeableness of the objects be exactly equal, as viewed in themselves, yet not as viewed in their circumstances: one of them having the additional agreeableness of the circumstance of nearness.

II. Another thing that contributes to the agreeableness of an object of choice, as it stands in the mind's view, is the *manner of the view*. If the object be something which appears connected with future pleasure, not only will the degree of apparent pleasure have influence, but also the manner of the view, especially in two respects.



1. With respect to the degree of *judgment*, or firmness of *assent*, with which the mind judges the pleasure to be future. Because it is more agreeable to have a *certain* happiness than an *uncertain* one; and a pleasure viewed as more probable, all other things being equal, is more agreeable to the mind than that which is viewed as less probable.

2. With respect to the degree of the *idea* of the future pleasure. With regard to things which are the subject of our thoughts, either past, present, or future, we have much more of an idea or apprehension of some things than others; that is, our idea is much more clear, lively, and strong. Thus, the ideas we have of sensible things by immediate sensation, are usually much more lively than those we have by mere imagination, or by contemplation of them when absent. My idea of the sun when I look upon it, is more vivid than when I only think of it. Our idea of the sweet relish of a delicious fruit is usually stronger when we taste it, than when we only imagine it. And sometimes, the idea we have of things by contemplation is much stronger and clearer than at other times. Thus, a man at one time has a much stronger idea of the pleasure which is to be enjoyed in eating some sort of food that he loves than at another. Now, the degree, or strength of the idea or sense that men have of future good or evil, is one thing that has great influence on their minds to excite choice or volition. When of two kinds of future pleasure, which the mind considers of, and are presented for choice, both are supposed exactly equal by the judgment, and both equally



certain, and all other things are equal, but only one of them is what the mind has a far more lively sense of than of the other; this has the greatest advantage by far to affect and attract the mind, and move the will. It is now more agreeable to the mind to take the pleasure it has a strong and lively sense of, than that which it has only a faint idea of: the view of the former is attended with the strongest appetite, and the greatest uneasiness attends the want of it; and it is agreeable to the mind to have uneasiness removed, and its appetite gratified. And if several future enjoyments are presented together, as competitors for the choice of the mind, some of them judged to be greater, and others less, the mind also having a greater sense and more lively idea of the good of some of them, and of others a less; and some are viewed as of greater certainty or probability than others, and those enjoyments that appear most agreeable in one of these respects, appear least so in others; in this case, all other things being equal, the agreeableness of a proposed object of choice will be in a degree some way compounded of the degree of good supposed by the judgment, the degree of apparent probability or certainty of that good, and the degree of the view or sense, or liveliness of the idea the mind has of that good; because all together concur to constitute the degree in which the object appears at present agreeable; and accordingly, volition will be determined.

❖ I might further observe, the state of the mind that views a proposed object of choice, is another thing that contributes to the agreeable-

ness or disagreeableness of that object: the particular temper which the mind has by nature, or that has been introduced and established by education, example, custom, or some other means, or the frame or state that the mind is in on a particular occasion. That object which appears agreeable to one, does not so to another; and the same object does not always appear alike agreeable to the same person at different times. It is most agreeable to some men to follow their reason, and to others to follow their appetites: to some men it is more agreeable to deny a vicious inclination than to gratify it; others it suits best to gratify the vilest appetites. It is more disagreeable to some men than others to counteract a former resolution. In these respects, and many others which might be mentioned, different things will be most agreeable to different persons; and not only so, but to the same persons at different times.

But, possibly, it is needless and improper to mention the frame and state of the mind, as a distinct ground of the agreeableness of objects from the other two mentioned before; viz. the apparent nature and circumstances of the objects viewed, and the manner of the view: perhaps, if we strictly consider the matter, the different temper and state of the mind makes no alteration as to the agreeableness of objects any other way, than as it makes the objects themselves appear differently beautiful or deformed, having apparent pleasure or pain attending them; and, as it occasions the manner of the view to be different, causes the idea of beauty or deformity, pleasure or uneasiness, to be more or less lively.

However, I think so much is certain, that volition, in no one instance that can be mentioned, is otherwise than the greatest apparent good is, in the manner which has been explained. The choice of the mind never departs from that which, at that time, and with respect to the direct and immediate objects of that decision of the mind, appears most agreeable and pleasing, all things considered. If the immediate objects of the will are a man's own actions, then those actions which appear most agreeable to him he wills. If it be now most agreeable to him, all things considered, to walk, then he now wills to walk. If it be now, upon the whole of what at present appears to him, most agreeable to speak, then he chooses to speak; if it suits him best to keep silence, then he chooses to keep silence. There is scarcely a plainer and more universal dictate of the sense and experience of mankind, than that, when men act voluntarily, and do what they please, then they do what suits them best, or what is most *agreeable to them*. To say that they do what they please, or what pleases them, but yet do not *do* what is *agreeable* to them, is the same thing as to say they do what they please, but do not act their pleasure; and that is to say, that they do what they please, and yet do not do what they please.

It appears from these things, that in some sense *the will always follows the last dictate of the understanding*; but then the *understanding* must be taken in a large sense, as including the whole faculty of perception or apprehension, and not merely what is called *reason* or *judgment*. If by the dictate of the under-

standing is meant what reason declares to be best, or most for the person's happiness, taking in the whole of its duration, it is not true that the will always follows the last dictate of the understanding. Such a dictate of reason is quite a different matter from things appearing now most *agreeable*; all things being put together which pertain to the mind's present perceptions, apprehensions, or ideas, in any respect. Although that dictate of reason, when it takes place, is one thing that is put into the scales, and is to be considered as a thing that has concern in the compound influence which moves and induces the will; and is one thing that is to be considered in estimating the degree of that appearance of good which the will always follows; either as having its influence added to other things, or subducted from them. When it concurs with other things, then its weight is added to them, as put into the same scale; but when it is against them, it is as a weight in the opposite scale, where it resists the influence of other things: yet its resistance is often overcome by their greater weight, and so the act of the will is determined in opposition to it.

The things which I have said, may, I hope, serve in some measure to illustrate and confirm the position I laid down in the beginning of this section, viz. that *The will is always determined by the strongest motive*, or by that view of the mind which has the greatest degree of *previous* tendency to excite volition. But whether I have been so happy as rightly to explain the thing wherein consists the strength of motives, or not, yet my failing in this will not over-

throw the position itself, which carries much of its own evidence with it, and is the thing of chief importance to the purpose of the ensuing discourse; and the truth of it, I hope, will appear with great clearness before I have finished what I have to say on the subject of human liberty.

### SECTION III.

CONCERNING THE MEANING OF THE TERMS, NECESSITY, IMPOSSIBILITY, INABILITY, &c., AND OF CONTINGENCE.

THE words *necessary*, *impossible*, &c. are abundantly used in controversies about free-will and moral agency; and, therefore, the sense in which they are used should be clearly understood.

Here I might say, that a thing is then said to be *necessary*, when it must be, and cannot be otherwise. But this would not properly be a definition of necessity, or an explanation of the word, any more than if I explained the word *must* by there being a necessity. The words *must*, *can*, and *cannot*, need explication as much as the words *necessary* and *impossible*; excepting that the former are words that children commonly use, and know something of the meaning of, earlier than the latter.

The word *necessary*, as used in common speech, is a relative term, and relates to some supposed opposition made to the existence of the thing spoken of, which is overcome, or proves in vain to hinder or alter it. That is necessary, in the original and proper sense of the word, which is, or will be, notwithstanding all supposable opposition. To say that a thing is necessary, is the same thing as to say that it



is impossible it should not be: but the word *impossible* is manifestly a relative term, and has reference to supposed power, exerted to bring a thing to pass, which is insufficient for the effect; as the word *unable* is relative, and has relation to ability or endeavour, which is insufficient; and as the word *irresistible* is relative, and has always reference to resistance which is made, or may be made, to some force or power tending to an effect, and is insufficient to withstand the power, or hinder the effect. The common notion of necessity and impossibility implies something that frustrates endeavour or desire.

Here several things are to be noted :—

1. Things are said to be necessary in *general*, which are or will be, notwithstanding any supposable opposition *from us or others*, or from whatever quarter. But things are said to be necessary *to us* which are or will be notwithstanding all opposition supposable in the case *from us*. The same may be observed of the word *impossible*, and other such like terms.

2. These terms, *necessary, impossible, irresistible, &c.*, do especially belong to controversy about liberty and moral agency, as used in the latter of the two senses now mentioned; viz. as necessary or impossible *to us*, and with relation to any supposable opposition or endeavour *of ours*.

3. As the word *necessity*, in its vulgar and common use, is relative, and has always reference to some supposable insufficient opposition; so, when we speak of any thing as necessary *to us*, it is with relation to some supposable opposition of *our wills*, or some voluntary exertion or effort of ours to the contrary. For we do

not properly make opposition to an event, any otherwise than as we *voluntarily* oppose it. Things are said to be what must be, or *necessarily* are, *as to us*, when they are, or will be, though we desire or endeavour the contrary, or try to prevent or remove their existence; but such opposition of ours always either consists in, or implies, opposition of our wills.

It is manifest, that all such like words and phrases, as vulgarly used, are used and accepted in this manner. A thing is said to be *necessary*, when we cannot help it, let us do what we will. So any thing is said to be *impossible* to us, when we would do it, or would have it brought to pass, and endeavour it; or at least may be supposed to desire and seek it; but all our desires and endeavours are, or would be, vain. And that is said to be *irresistible*, which overcomes all our opposition, resistance, and endeavour to the contrary. And we are to be said *unable* to do a thing, when our supposable desires and endeavours to do it are insufficient.

We are accustomed, in the common use of language, to apply and understand these phrases in this sense: we grow up with such a habit, which, by the daily use of these terms, in such a sense, from our childhood, becomes fixed and settled; so that the idea of a relation to a supposed will, desire, and endeavour of ours, is strongly connected with these terms, and naturally excited in our minds, whenever we hear the words used. Such ideas, and these words, are so united and associated, that they unavoidably go together—one suggests the other, and carries the other with it, and never can be separated as long as we live. And if we use

the words as terms of art, in another sense, yet, unless we are exceeding circumspect and wary, we shall insensibly slide into the vulgar use of them, and so apply the words in a very inconsistent manner. This habitual connexion of ideas will deceive and confound us in our reasonings and discourses, wherein we pretend to use these terms in that manner, as terms of art.

4. It follows from what has been observed, that when these terms, *necessary*, *impossible*, *irresistible*, *unable*, &c., are used in cases wherein no opposition, or insufficient will, or endeavour, is supposed, or can be supposed, but the very nature of the supposed case itself excludes and denies any such opposition, will, or endeavour,—these terms are then not used in their proper signification, but quite beside their use in common speech. The reason is manifest; namely, that in such cases we cannot use the words with reference to a supposable opposition, will, or endeavour. And, therefore, if any man uses these terms in such cases, he either uses them nonsensically, or in some new sense, diverse from their original and proper meaning. As, for instance, if a man should affirm after this manner: That it is necessary for a man, and what must be, that a man should choose virtue rather than vice, during the time that he prefers virtue to vice; and that it is a thing impossible and irresistible, that it should be otherwise than that he should have this choice, so long as this choice continues. Such a man would use the terms, *must*, *irresistible*, &c., with perfect insignificance and nonsense, or in some new sense, diverse from their common use;

which is with reference, as has been observed, to supposable opposition, unwillingness, and resistance ; whereas, here, the very supposition excludes and denies any such thing ; for the case supposed is that of being willing, and choosing.

5. It appears from what has been said, that these terms, *necessary*, *impossible*, &c., are often used by philosophers and metaphysicians in a sense quite diverse from their common use and original signification : for they apply them to many cases in which no opposition is supposed or supposable. Thus, they use them with respect to God's existence before the creation of the world, when there was no other being but He : so, with regard to many of the dispositions and acts of the divine Being, such as his loving Himself, his loving righteousness, hating sin, &c. So they apply these terms to many cases of the inclinations and actions of created intelligent beings, angels, and men ; wherein all opposition of the will is shut out and denied, in the very supposition of the case.

*Metaphysical* or *philosophical* necessity is nothing different from their certainty. I speak not now of the certainty of knowledge, but the certainty that is in things themselves, which is the foundation of the certainty of the knowledge of them ; or that wherein lies the ground of the infallibility of the proposition which affirms them.

What is sometimes given as the definition of philosophical necessity—namely, *That by which a thing cannot but be*, or, *whereby it cannot be otherwise*, fails of being a proper explanation of it, on two accounts ; first, the words *can*, or



*cannot*, need explanation as much as the word *necessity*; and the former may as well be explained by the latter, as the latter by the former. Thus, if any one asked us what we mean, when we say, a thing *cannot but be*, we might explain ourselves by saying, we mean, It must necessarily be so; as well as explain necessity, by saying, It is that by which a thing cannot but be. And secondly, this definition is liable to the fore-mentioned great inconvenience: the words *cannot*, or *unable*, are properly relative, and have relation to power exerted, or that may be exerted, in order to the thing spoken of; to which, as I have now observed, the word *necessity*, as used by philosophers, has no reference.

Philosophical necessity is really nothing else than the full and fixed connexion between the things signified by the subject and predicate of a proposition, which affirms something to be true. When there is such a connexion, then the thing affirmed in the proposition is necessary, in a philosophical sense, whether any opposition or contrary effort be supposed, or supposable in the case, or no. When the subject and predicate of the proposition, which affirms the existence of any thing, either substance, quality, act, or circumstance, have a full and certain connexion, then the existence or being of that thing is said to be necessary, in a metaphysical sense. And in this sense I use the word *necessity* in the following discourse, when I endeavour to prove *that necessity is not inconsistent with liberty*.

The subject and predicate of a proposition which affirms existence of something, may have a full, fixed, and certain connexion several ways.



1. They may have a full and perfect connexion *in and of themselves*, because it may imply a contradiction or gross absurdity to suppose them not connected. Thus, many things are necessary in their own nature. So, the eternal existence of being, generally considered, is necessary *in itself*; because it would be, in itself, the greatest absurdity to deny the existence of being in general, or to say there was absolute and universal nothing; and is, as it were, the sum of all contradictions, as might be shewn, if this were a proper place for it. So, God's infinity and other attributes are necessary. So, it is necessary, *in its own nature*, that two and two should be four; and it is necessary that all right lines, drawn from the centre of a circle to the circumference, should be equal. It is necessary, fit, and suitable, that men should do to others as they would that they should do to them. So, innumerable metaphysical and mathematical truths are necessary *in themselves*; the subject and predicate of the proposition which affirms them are perfectly connected *of themselves*.

2. The connexion of the subject and predicate of a proposition which affirms the existence of something, may be fixed and made certain; because the existence of that thing is already come to pass, and either now is or has been, and so has, as it were, made sure of existence. And, therefore, the proposition which affirms present and past existence of it, may by this means be made certain, and necessarily and unalterably true; the past event has fixed and decided the matter, as to its existence, and has made it impossible but that existence

should be truly predicated of it. Thus, the existence of whatever is already come to pass, is now become necessary; it is become impossible it should be otherwise than true, that such a thing has been.

3. The subject and predicate of a proposition which affirms something to be, may have a real and certain connexion *consequentially*; and so the existence of the thing may be consequentially necessary, as it may be surely and firmly connected with something else that is necessary in one of the former respects; as it is either fully and thoroughly connected with that which is absolutely necessary in its own nature, or with something which has already received and made sure of existence. This necessity lies *in*, or may be explained *by*, the connexion of two or more propositions one with another. Things which are perfectly connected with other things that are necessary, are necessary themselves, by a necessity of consequence:

And here it may be observed, that all things which are future, or which will hereafter begin to be, which can be said to be necessary, are necessary only in this last way: their existence is not necessary in itself; for if so, they always would have existed. Nor is their existence become necessary by being made sure, by being already come to pass. Therefore, the only way that any thing that is to come to pass hereafter, is or can be necessary, is by a connexion with something that is necessary in its own nature, or something that already is, or has been; so that, the one being supposed, the other certainly follows. And this, also, is the only way that all things past, excepting those which were

from eternity, could be necessary *before they came to pass*, or could come to pass necessarily; and, therefore, the only way in which any effect or event, or any thing whatsoever that ever has had or will have a beginning, has come into being necessarily, or will hereafter necessarily exist. And, therefore, *this* is the necessity which especially belongs to controversies about the acts of the will.

It may be of some use in these controversies, further to observe, concerning *metaphysical* necessity, that (agreeable to the distinction before observed of necessity, as *vulgarly* understood) things that exist may be said to be necessary, either with a *general* or *particular* necessity. The existence of a thing may be said to be necessary with a *general* necessity when, all things whatsoever being considered, there is a foundation for certainty of their existence; or when, in the most general and universal view of things, the subject and predicate of the proposition which affirms its existence, would appear with an infallible connexion.

An event, or the existence of a thing, may be said to be necessary with a *particular* necessity, or with regard to a particular person, thing, or time, when nothing that can be taken into consideration, in or about that person, thing, or time, alters the case at all, as to the certainty of that event, or the existence of that thing; or can be of any account at all, in determining the infallibility of the connexion of the subject and predicate in the proposition which affirms the existence of the thing; so that it is all one, as to that person or thing, at least, at that time, as if the existence were necessary with a neces-

sity that is most *universal* and *absolute*. Thus, there are many things that happen to particular persons, which they have no hand in, and in the existence of which no will of theirs has any concern, at least at that time ; which, whether they are necessary or not, with regard to things in general, yet are necessary to them, and with regard to any volition of theirs at that time, as they prevent all acts of the will about the affair. I shall have occasion to apply this observation to particular instances in the following discourse. Whether the same things that are necessary with a *particular* necessity, be not also necessary with a *general* necessity, may be a matter of future consideration. Let that be as it will, it alters not the case, as to the use of this distinction of the kinds of necessity.

These things may be sufficient for the explaining of the terms, *necessary* and *necessity*, as terms of art, and as often used by metaphysicians and controversial writers in divinity, in a sense diverse from and more extensive than their original meaning in common language, which was before explained.

What has been said to shew the meaning of the terms, *necessary* and *necessity*, may be sufficient for the explaining of the opposite terms, *impossible* and *impossibility* ; for there is no difference, but only the latter are negative, and the former positive. *Impossibility* is the same as *negative necessity*, or a necessity that a thing should not be ; and it is used as a term of art, in a like diversity from the original and vulgar meaning with necessity.

The same may be observed concerning the words, *unable* and *inability*. It has been ob-



served, that these terms, in their original and common use, have relation to will and endeavour, as supposable in the case, and as insufficient for the bringing to pass the thing willed and endeavoured; but as these terms are often used by philosophers and divines, especially writers on controversies about free-will, they are used in a quite different and far more extensive sense, and are applied to many cases wherein no will or endeavour for the bringing of the thing to pass is or can be supposed, but is actually denied and excluded in the nature of the case.

As the words, *necessary*, *impossible*, *unable*, &c., are used by polemic writers in a sense diverse from their common signification, the like has happened to the term, *contingent*. Any thing is said to be contingent, or to come to pass by chance or accident, in the original meaning of such words, when its connexion with its causes or antecedents, according to the established course of things, is not discerned; and so is what we have no means of the foresight of. And especially is any thing said to be contingent or accidental with regard to us, when any thing comes to pass that we are concerned in, as occasions or subjects, without our foreknowledge, and beside our design and scope.

But the word, *contingent*, is abundantly used in a very different sense; not for that whose connexion with the series of things we cannot discern, so as to foresee the event, but for something which has absolutely no previous ground or reason, with which its existence has any fixed and certain connexion.



## SECTION IV.

OF THE DISTINCTION OF NATURAL AND MORAL  
NECESSITY, AND INABILITY.

THAT necessity which has been explained, consisting in an infallible connexion of the things signified by the subject and predicate of a proposition, as intelligent beings are the subjects of it, is distinguished into *moral* and *natural* necessity.

I shall not now stand to inquire whether this distinction be a proper and perfect distinction; but shall only explain how these two sorts of necessity are understood, as the terms are sometimes used, and as they are used in the following discourse.

The phrase, *moral necessity*, is used variously: sometimes it is used for a necessity of moral obligation. So, we say a man is under necessity, when he is under bonds of duty and conscience, which he cannot be discharged from. So, the word *necessity* is often used for great obligation in point of interest. Sometimes, by moral necessity is meant that apparent connexion of things which is the ground of *moral evidence*; and so is distinguished from *absolute necessity*, or that sure connexion of things that is a foundation for *infallible certainty*. In this sense, moral necessity signifies much the same as that high degree of probability which is ordinarily sufficient to satisfy, and be relied upon by mankind, in their conduct and behaviour in the world, as they would consult their own safety and interest, and treat others properly as members of society. And sometimes by moral necessity is meant that

necessity of connexion and consequence which arises from such *moral causes*, as the strength of inclination, or motives, and the connexion which there is in many cases between these, and such certain volitions and actions. And it is in this sense that I use the phrase, *moral necessity*, in the following discourse.

By *natural necessity*, as applied to men, I mean such necessity as men are under through the force of natural causes; as distinguished from what are called moral causes, such as habits and dispositions of the heart, and moral motives and inducements. Thus, men placed in certain circumstances are the subjects of particular sensations by necessity; they feel pain when their bodies are wounded; they see the objects presented before them in a clear light when their eyes are opened: so, they assent to the truth of certain propositions as soon as the terms are understood; as that two and two make four, that black is not white, that two parallel lines can never cross one another; so, by a natural necessity, men's bodies move downwards when there is nothing to support them.

But here several things may be noted concerning these two kinds of necessity.

1. Moral necessity may be as absolute as natural necessity: that is, the effect may be as perfectly connected with its moral cause as a natural necessary effect is with its natural cause. Whether the will in every case is necessarily determined by the strongest motive, or whether the will ever makes any resistance to such a motive, or can ever oppose the strongest present inclination, or not; if that matter should be controverted, yet I suppose none will deny, but

that, in some cases, a previous bias and inclination, or the motive presented, may be so powerful, that the act of the will may be certainly and indissolubly connected therewith. When motives or previous bias are very strong, all will allow that there is some *difficulty* in going against them. And if they were yet stronger, the difficulty would be still greater. And therefore, if more were still added to their strength, to a certain degree, it would make the difficulty so great, that it would be wholly *impossible* to surmount it; for this plain reason, because, whatever power men may be supposed to have to surmount difficulties, yet that power is not infinite; and so goes not beyond certain limits. If a man can surmount ten degrees of difficulty of this kind with twenty degrees of strength, because the degrees of strength are beyond the degrees of difficulty; yet, if the difficulty be increased to thirty, or a hundred, or a thousand degrees, and his strength not also increased, his strength will be wholly insufficient to surmount the difficulty. As, therefore, it must be allowed, that there may be such a thing as a *sure* and *perfect* connexion between moral causes and effects; so this only is what I call by the name of *moral necessity*.

2. When I use this distinction of *moral* and *natural necessity*, I would not be understood to suppose, that if any thing comes to pass by the former kind of necessity, the *nature* of things is not concerned in it, as well as in the latter. I do not mean to determine, that when a *moral* habit or motive is so strong that the act of the will infallibly follows, this is not owing to the *nature of things*. But these are the names that

these two kinds of necessity have usually been called by; and they must be distinguished by some names or other; for there is a distinction or difference between them, that is very important in its consequences; which difference does not lie so much in the nature of the *connexion* as in the two terms *connected*. The cause with which the effect is connected is of a particular kind, viz. that which is of a moral nature; either some previous habitual disposition, or some motive exhibited to the understanding. And the effect is also of a particular kind; being likewise of a moral nature, consisting in some inclination or volition of the soul or voluntary action.

I suppose, that necessity which is called *natural*, in distinction from *moral* necessity, is so called, because *mere nature*, as the word is vulgarly used, is concerned, without any thing of *choice*. The word, *nature*, is often used in opposition to *choice*; not because nature has, indeed, never any hand in our choice; but this probably comes to pass by means that we first get our notion of nature from that discernible and obvious course of events, which we observe in many things that our choice has no concern in; and especially in the material world, which, in very many parts of it, we easily perceive to be in a settled course; the stated order and manner of succession being very apparent. But where we do not readily discern the rule and connexion (though there be a connexion, according to an established law, truly taking place), we signify the manner of event by some other name. Even in many things which are seen in the material and inanimate world, which

do not discernibly and obviously come to pass according to any settled course, men do not call the manner of the event by the name of *nature*, but by such names as *accident*, *chance*, *contingent*, &c. So, men make a distinction between nature and choice, as though they were completely and universally distinct. Whereas, I suppose none will deny but that choice, *in many cases*, arises from nature, as truly as other events. But the dependence and connexion between acts of volition or choice, and their causes, according to established laws, is not so sensible and obvious. And we observe that choice is as it were a new principle of motion and action, different from that established law and order of things which is most obvious, that is seen especially in corporeal and sensible things; and, also, the choice often interposes, interrupts, and alters the chain of events in these external objects, and causes them to proceed otherwise than they would do, if let alone, and left to go on according to the laws of motion among themselves. Hence, it is spoken of as if it were a principle of motion entirely distinct from nature, and properly set in opposition to it. Names being commonly given to things, according to what is most obvious, and is suggested by what appears to the senses without reflection and research.

3. It must be observed, that in what has been explained, as signified by the name of *moral necessity*, the word, *necessity*, is not used according to the original design and meaning of the word: for, as was observed before, such terms, *necessary*, *impossible*, *irresistible*, &c. in common speech, and their most proper sense, are always



relative ; having reference to some supposable voluntary opposition or endeavour that is insufficient. But no such opposition, or contrary will and endeavour, is supposable in the case of moral necessity ; which is a certainty of the inclination and will itself, which does not admit of the supposition of a will to oppose and resist it. For it is absurd to suppose the same individual will to oppose itself in its present act, or the present choice to be opposite to and resisting present choice ; as absurd as it is to talk of two contrary motions in the same moving body at the same time. And, therefore, the very case supposed never admits of any trial, whether an opposing or resisting will can overcome this necessity.

What has been said of natural and moral necessity may serve to explain what is intended by natural and moral *inability*. We are said to be naturally unable to do a thing, when we cannot do it if we will, because what is most commonly called *nature* does not allow of it, or because of some impeding defect or obstacle that is extrinsic to the will ; either in the faculty of understanding, constitution of body, or external objects. *Moral* inability consists not in any of these things ; but either in the want of inclination, or the strength of a contrary inclination, or the want of sufficient motives in view to induce and excite the act of the will, or the strength of apparent motives to the contrary. Or both these may be resolved into one ; and it may be said, in one word, that moral inability consists in the opposition or want of inclination. For when a person is unable to will or choose such a thing, through a defect of motives, or

prevalence of contrary motives, it is the same thing as his being unable, through the want of an inclination, or the prevalence of a contrary inclination, in such circumstances, and under the influence of such views.

To give some instances of this *moral inability*. —A woman of great honour and chastity may have a moral inability to prostitute herself to her slave. A child of great love and duty to his parents may be unable to be willing to kill his father. A very lascivious man, in case of certain opportunities and temptations, and in the absence of such and such restraints, may be unable to forbear gratifying his lust. A drunkard, under such and such circumstances, may be unable to forbear taking of strong drink. A very malicious man may be unable to exert benevolent acts to an enemy, or to desire his prosperity: yea, some may be so under the power of a vile disposition, that they may be unable to love those who are most worthy of their esteem and affection. A strong habit of virtue, and great degree of holiness, may cause a moral inability to love wickedness in general, may render a man unable to take complacence in wicked persons or things, or to choose a wicked life, and prefer it to a virtuous life. And, on the other hand, a great degree of habitual wickedness may lay a man under an inability to love and choose holiness, and render him utterly unable to love an infinitely holy Being, or to choose and cleave to Him as his chief good.

Here it may be of use to observe this distinction of moral inability, viz. of that which is *general and habitual*, and that which is *particular and occasional*. By a *general and habitual*

moral inability, I mean an inability in the heart to all exercises or acts of will of that nature or kind, through a fixed and habitual inclination, or an habitual and stated defect, or want of a certain kind of inclination. Thus, a very ill-natured man may be unable to exert such acts of benevolence as another, who is full of good nature, commonly exerts; and a man, whose heart is habitually void of gratitude, may be unable to exert such and such grateful acts, through that stated defect of a grateful inclination. By *particular and occasional* moral inability, I mean an inability of the will or heart to a particular act, through the strength or defect of present motives, or of inducements presented to the view of the understanding *on this occasion*. If it be so, that the will is always determined by the strongest motive, then it must always have an inability, in this latter sense, to act otherwise than it does; it not being possible, in any case, that the will should at present go against the motive which has now, all things considered, the greatest strength and advantage to excite and induce it. The former of these kinds of moral inability, consisting in that which is stated, habitual, and general, is most commonly called by the name of inability; because the word, *inability*, in its most proper and original signification, has respect to some stated defect. And this especially obtains the name of *inability* also upon another account. I before observed, that the word, inability, in its original and most common use, is a relative term; and has respect to will and endeavour, as supposable in the case, and as insufficient to bring to pass the thing desired and endeavoured. Now there

may be more of an appearance and shadow of this, with respect to the acts which arise from a fixed and strong habit, than others that arise only from transient occasions and causes. Indeed, will and endeavour against, or diverse from, *present* acts of the will, are in no case supposable, whether those acts be occasional or habitual; for, that would be to suppose the will at present to be otherwise than at present it is. But yet there may be will and endeavour against *future* acts of the will, or volitions that are likely to take place, as viewed at a distance. It is no contradiction to suppose that the acts of the will at one time may be against the acts of the will at another time; and there may be desires and endeavours to prevent or excite future acts of the will; but such desires and endeavours are, in many cases, rendered insufficient and vain, through fixedness of habit: when the occasion returns, the strength of habit overcomes and baffles all such opposition. In this respect, a man may be in miserable slavery and bondage to a strong habit. But it may be comparatively easy to make an alteration with respect to such future acts, as are only occasional and transient; because the occasion or transient cause, if foreseen, may often easily be prevented or avoided. On this account, the moral inability that attends fixed habits especially obtains the name of *inability*. And then, as the will may remotely and indirectly resist itself, and do it in vain, in the case of strong habits, so reason may resist present acts of the will, and its resistance be insufficient; and this is more commonly the case, also, when the acts arise from strong habit.

But it must be observed, concerning moral

inability, in each kind of it, that the word, *inability*, is used in a sense very diverse from its original import. The word signifies only a natural inability, in the proper use of it; and is applied to such cases only wherein a present will or inclination to the thing with respect to which a person is said to be unable, is supposable. It cannot be truly said, according to the ordinary use of language, that a malicious man, let him be never so malicious, cannot hold his hand from striking, or that he is not able to shew his neighbour kindness; or that a drunkard, let his appetite be never so strong, cannot keep the cup from his mouth. In the strictest propriety of speech, a man has a thing in his power if he has it in his choice, or at his election; and a man cannot be truly said to be unable to do a thing when he can do it if he will. It is improperly said, that a person cannot perform those external actions which are dependent on the act of the will, and which would be easily performed if the act of the will were present. And if it be improperly said, that he cannot perform those external voluntary actions which depend on the will, it is in some respect more improperly said, that he is unable to exert the acts of the will themselves; because it is more evidently false, with respect to these, that he cannot if he will: for to say so, is a downright contradiction: it is to say, he *cannot* will, if he *does* will. And in this case, not only is it true, that it is easy for a man to do the thing if he will, but the very willing is the doing; when once he has willed, the thing is performed, and nothing else remains to be done. Therefore, in these things to ascribe a non-performance to the want of power or



ability, is not just; because the thing wanting is not a being *able*, but a being *willing*. There are faculties of mind and capacity of nature, and every thing else sufficient, but a disposition: nothing is wanting but a will.

## SECTION V.

### CONCERNING THE NOTION OF LIBERTY, AND OF MORAL AGENCY.

THE plain and obvious meaning of the words, *freedom* and *liberty*, in common speech, is *power, opportunity, or advantage, that any one has to do as he pleases*. Or, in other words, his being free from hinderance or impediment in the way of doing, or conducting, in any respect, as he wills.\* And the contrary to liberty, whatever name we call that by, is a person's being hindered or unable to conduct as he will, or being necessitated to do otherwise.

If this which I have mentioned be the meaning of the word liberty, in the ordinary use of language, as I trust that none that has ever learned to talk, and is unprejudiced, will deny; then it will follow, that in propriety of speech, neither liberty, nor its contrary, can properly be ascribed to any being or thing, but that which has such a faculty, power, or property, as is called will. For that which is possessed of no such thing as *will*, cannot have any *power* or *opportunity* of doing *according to its will*, nor be necessitated to *act contrary to its will*, nor

\* I say, not only *doing*, but *conducting*; because a voluntary forbearing to do, sitting still, keeping silence, &c. are instances of persons' *conduct*, about which liberty is exercised; though they are not so properly called *doing*.

be restrained from acting agreeably to it. And therefore, to talk of liberty, or the contrary, as belonging to the *very will itself*, is not to speak good sense, if we judge of sense and nonsense by the original and proper signification of words. For the *will itself* is not an agent that *has a will*; the power of choosing itself has not a power of choosing. That which has the power of volition or choice, is the man or the soul, and not the power of volition itself. And he that has the liberty of doing according to his will, is the agent or doer who is possessed of the will, and not the will which he is possessed of. We say with propriety, that a bird let loose has power and liberty to fly; but not that the bird's power of flying has a power and liberty of flying. To be free, is the property of an agent who is possessed of powers and faculties, as much as to be cunning, valiant, bountiful, or zealous. But these qualities are the properties of men or persons, and not the properties of properties.

There are two things that are contrary to this, which is called liberty in common speech. One is *constraint*; the same is otherwise called *force*, *compulsion*, and *coaction*, which is a person's being necessitated to do a thing *contrary* to his will. The other is *restraint*; which is his being hindered, and not having power to do according to his will. But that which has no will cannot be the subject of these things. I need say the less on this head, Mr. Locke having set the same thing forth with so great clearness, in his "Essay on the Human Understanding."

But one thing more I would observe concerning what is vulgarly called *liberty*; namely, that power and opportunity for one to do and conduct

as he will, or according to his choice, is all that is meant by it; without taking into the meaning of the word, any thing of the cause or original of that choice, or at all considering how the person came to have such a volition, whether it was caused by some external motive or internal habitual bias; whether it was determined by some internal antecedent volition, or whether it happened without a cause; whether it was necessarily connected with something foregoing, or not connected. Let the person come by his volition or choice how he will, yet, if he is able, and there is nothing in the way to hinder his pursuing and executing his will, the man is fully and perfectly free, according to the primary and common notion of freedom.

What has been said may be sufficient to shew what is meant by *liberty*, according to the common notions of mankind, and in the usual and primary acceptation of the word: but the word, as used by Arminians, Pelagians, and others, who oppose the Calvinists, has an entirely different signification. These several things belong to their notion of liberty. 1. That it consists in a *self-determining power* in the will, or a certain sovereignty the will has over itself, and its own acts, whereby it determines its own volitions; so as not to be dependent in its determinations on any cause without itself, nor determined by any thing prior to its own acts. 2. *Indifference* belongs to liberty, in their notion of it, or that the mind, previous to the act of volition, be *in equilibrio*. 3. *Contingence* is another thing that belongs and is essential to it; not in the common acceptation of the word, as that has been already explained, but as opposed to all *necessity*,

or any fixed and certain connexion with some previous ground or reason of its existence. They suppose the essence of liberty so much to consist in these things, that unless the will of man be free in this sense, he has no real freedom, how much soever he may be at liberty to act according to his will.

A *moral agent* is a being that is capable of those actions that have a moral quality, and which can properly be denominated good or evil in a moral sense, virtuous or vicious, commendable or faulty. To moral agency belongs a *moral faculty*, or sense of moral good and evil, or of such a thing as desert or worthiness, of praise or blame, reward or punishment; and a capacity which an agent has of being influenced in his actions by moral inducements or motives, exhibited to the view of understanding and reason, to engage to a conduct agreeable to the moral faculty.

The sun is very excellent and beneficial in its action and influence on the earth, in warming it, and causing it to bring forth its fruits; but it is not a moral agent: its action, though good, is not virtuous or meritorious. Fire that breaks out in a city, and consumes great part of it, is very mischievous in its operation; but is not a moral agent: what it does is not faulty or sinful, or deserving of any punishment. The brute creatures are not moral agents; the actions of some of them are very profitable and pleasant; others are very hurtful: yet, seeing they have no moral faculty or sense of desert, and do not act from choice guided by understanding, or with a capacity of reasoning and reflecting, but only from instinct, and are not

capable of being influenced by moral inducements, their actions are not properly sinful or virtuous ; nor are they properly the subjects of any such moral treatment for what they do, as moral agents are for their faults or good deeds.

Here it may be noted, that there is a circumstantial difference between the moral agency of a *ruler* and a *subject*. I call it *circumstantial*, because it lies only in the difference of moral inducements they are capable of being influenced by, arising from the difference of *circumstances*. A *ruler*, acting in that capacity only, is not capable of being influenced by a moral law, and its sanctions of threatenings and promises, rewards and punishments, as the *subject* is ; though both may be influenced by a knowledge of moral good and evil. And, therefore, the moral agency of the Supreme Being, who acts only in the capacity of a *ruler* towards his creatures, and never as a *subject*, differs in that respect from the moral agency of created intelligent beings. God's actions, and particularly those which He exerts as a moral governor, have moral qualifications, are morally good in the highest degree. They are most perfectly holy and righteous ; and we must conceive of Him as influenced in the highest degree by that which, above all others, is properly a moral inducement ; viz. the moral good which He sees in such and such things ; and, therefore, He is, in the most proper sense, a moral agent, the source of all moral ability and agency, the fountain and rule of all virtue and moral good ; though, by reason of his being supreme over all, it is not possible He should be under the influence of law or command, promises or threat-



enings, rewards or punishments, counsels or warnings. The essential qualities of a moral agent are in God in the greatest possible perfection; such as understanding, to perceive the difference between moral good and evil; a capacity of discerning that moral worthiness and demerit by which some things are praiseworthy, others deserving of blame and punishment; and also a capacity of choice, and choice guided by understanding, and a power of acting according to his choice or pleasure, and being capable of doing those things which are in the highest sense praiseworthy. And herein does very much consist that image of God wherein he made man (which we read of, Gen. i. 26, 27, and chap. ix. 6), by which God distinguished man from the beasts, viz. in those faculties and principles of nature whereby He is capable of moral agency. Herein very much consists the *natural* image of God; as his *spiritual* and *moral* image, wherein man was made at first, consisted in that moral excellency that he was endowed with.

## PART II.

WHEREIN IT IS CONSIDERED, WHETHER THERE IS OR CAN BE ANY SUCH SORT OF FREEDOM OF WILL AS THAT WHEREIN ARMINIANS PLACE THE ESSENCE OF THE LIBERTY OF ALL MORAL AGENTS; AND WHETHER ANY SUCH THING EVER WAS OR CAN BE CONCEIVED OF.

## SECTION I.

SHEWING THE MANIFEST INCONSISTENCE OF THE ARMINIAN NOTION OF LIBERTY OF WILL CONSISTING IN THE WILL'S SELF-DETERMINING POWER.

HAVING taken notice of those things which may be necessary to be observed concerning the meaning of the principal terms and phrases made use of in controversies concerning human liberty, and particularly observed what *liberty* is according to the common language and general apprehension of mankind, and what it is as understood and maintained by Arminians; I proceed to consider the Arminian notion of the *freedom of the will*, and the supposed necessity of it in order to moral agency, or in order to any one's being capable of virtue or vice, and properly the subject of command or counsel, praise or blame, promises or threatenings, rewards or punishments; or whether that which has been described as the thing meant by liberty in common speech be not sufficient, and the only liberty which makes, or can make, any one a moral agent; and so properly the subject of these things. In *this* Part I shall consider whether any such thing be possible or conceivable, as that freedom of will which

Arminians insist on ; and shall inquire whether any such sort of liberty be necessary to moral agency, &c. in the *next* Part.

And, first of all, I shall consider the notion of *a self-determining power* in the will : wherein, according to the Arminians, does most essentially consist the will's freedom ; and shall particularly inquire whether it be not plainly absurd, and a manifest inconsistency, to suppose that *the will itself determines all the free acts of the will*.

Here I shall not insist on the great impropriety of such phrases, and ways of speaking, as *the will's determining itself* ; because actions are to be ascribed to agents, and not properly to the powers of agents ; which improper way of speaking leads to many mistakes, and much confusion, as Mr. Locke observes. But I shall suppose that the Arminians, when they speak of the will's determining itself, do by the *will* mean the *soul willing*. I shall take it for granted, that when they speak of the will, as the determiner, they mean *the soul in the exercise of a power of willing*, or acting voluntarily. I shall suppose this to be their meaning, because nothing else can be meant, without the grossest and plainest absurdity. In all cases when we speak of the powers or principles of acting, as doing such things, we mean that the agents which have these powers of acting do them in the exercise of those powers. So, when we say, *valour fights courageously*, we mean, the man who is under the influence of valour fights courageously. When we say, *love seeks the object loved*, we mean, the person loving seeks that object. When we say, the

understanding discerns, we mean the soul in the exercise of that faculty. So, when it is said, the will decides or determines, the meaning must be, that the person in the exercise of a power of willing and choosing, or the soul acting voluntarily, determines.

Therefore, if the will determines all its own free acts, the soul determines all the free acts of the will, in the exercise of a power of willing and choosing; or, which is the same thing, it determines them of choice; it determines its own acts by choosing its own acts. If the will determines the will, then choice orders and determines the choice; and acts of choice are subject to the decision, and follow the conduct, of other acts of choice. And, therefore, if the will determines all its own free acts, then every free act of choice is determined by a preceding act of choice, choosing that act. And if that preceding act of the will or choice be also a free act, then, by these principles, in this act too, the will is self-determined; that is, this, in like manner, is an act that the soul voluntarily chooses; or, which is the same thing, it is an act determined still by a preceding act of the will choosing that. And the like may again be observed of the last-mentioned act. Which brings us directly to a contradiction; for it supposes an act of the will preceding the first act in the whole train, directing and determining the rest; or a free act of the will, before the first free act of the will. Or else we must come at last to an act of the will, determining the consequent acts, wherein the will is not self-determined, and so is not a free act, in this notion of freedom; but if the first act in

the train, determining and fixing the rest, be not free, none of them all can be free ; as is manifest at first view, but shall be demonstrated presently.

If the will, which we find governs the members of the body, and determines and commands their motions and actions, does also govern itself, and determine its own motions and actions, it doubtless determines them the same way, even by antecedent volitions. The will determines which way the hands and feet shall move by an act of volition or choice ; and there is no other way of the will's determining, directing, or commanding any thing at all. Whatsoever the will commands, it commands by an act of the will. And if it has itself under its command, and determines itself in its own actions, it doubtless does it the same way that it determines other things which are under its command ; so that, if the freedom of the will consists in this, that it has itself and its own actions under its command and direction, and its own volitions are determined by itself, it will follow, that every free volition arises from another antecedent volition, directing and commanding that ; and if that *directing* volition be also free, in that also the will is determined ; that is to say, that directing volition is determined by another going before that, and so on, till we come to the first volition in the whole series : and if that first volition be free, and the will self-determined in it, then that is determined by another volition preceding that. Which is a contradiction ; because, by the supposition, it can have none before it, to direct or determine it, being the first in the train. But



if that first volition is not determined by any preceding act of the will, then that act is not determined by the will, and so is not free in the Arminian notion of freedom, which consists in the will's self-determination. And if that first act of the will, which determines and fixes the subsequent acts, be not free, none of the following acts, which are determined by it, can be free. If we suppose there are five acts in the train, the fifth and last determined by the fourth, and the fourth by the third, the third by the second, and the second by the first; if the first is not determined by the will, and so not free, then none of them are truly determined by the will: that is, that each of them are as they are, and not otherwise, is not first owing to the will, but to the determination of the first in the series, which is not dependent on the will, and is that which the will has no hand in the determination of. And this being that which decides what the rest shall be, and determines their existence; therefore, the first determination of their existence is not from the will. The case is just the same, if, instead of a chain of five acts of the will, we should suppose a succession of ten, or a hundred, or ten thousand. If the first act be not free, being determined by something out of the will, and this determines the next to be agreeable to itself, and that the next, and so on; they are none of them free, but all originally depend on, and are determined by, some cause out of the will: and so all freedom in the case is excluded, and no act of the will can be free, according to this notion of freedom. If we should suppose a long chain of ten thousand links, so connected

that if the first link moves it will move the next, and that the next; and so the whole chain must be determined to motion, and in the direction of its motion, by the motion of the first link; and that is moved by something else: in this case, though all the links but one are moved by other parts of the same chain, yet it appears that the motion of no one, nor the direction of its motion, is from any self-moving or self-determining power in the chain, any more than if every link were immediately moved by something that did not belong to the chain. If the will be not free in the first act, which causes the next, then neither is it free in the next, which is caused by that first act: for though, indeed, the will caused it, yet it did not cause it freely; because the preceding act, by which it was caused, was not free. And again, if the will be not free in the second act, so neither can it be in the third, which is caused by that; because, in like manner, that third was determined by an act of the will that was not free. And so we may go on to the next act, and from that to the next; and how long soever the succession of acts is, it is all one; if the first on which the whole chain depends, and which determines all the rest, be not a free act, the will is not free in causing or determining any one of those acts; because the act by which it determines them all is not a free act, and therefore the will is no more free in determining them than if it did not cause them at all. Thus, this Arminian notion of liberty of the will, consisting in the will's *self-determination*, is repugnant to itself, and shuts itself wholly out of the world.

## SECTION II.

SEVERAL SUPPOSED WAYS OF EVADING THE FOREGOING REASONING, CONSIDERED.

IF, to evade the force of what has been observed, it should be said, that when the Arminians speak of the will's determining its own acts, they do not mean that the will determines its acts by any preceding act, or that one act of the will determines another; but only that the faculty or power of will, or the soul in the use of that power, determines its own volitions; and that it does it without any act going before the act determined: such an evasion would be full of the most gross absurdity. I confess it is an evasion of my own inventing; and I do not know but I should wrong the Arminians in supposing that any of them would make use of it. But it being as good a one as I can invent, I would observe upon it a few things.

*First*, If the faculty or power of the will determines an act of volition, or the soul in the *use or exercise of that power* determines it, that is the same thing as for the soul to determine volition *by an act of will*. For an *exercise* of the power of will, and an *act* of that power, are the same thing. Therefore, to say that the power of will, or the soul in the *use or exercise* of that power, determines volition, without an *act* of will preceding the volition determined, is a contradiction.

*Secondly*, If a power of will determines the act of the will, then a power of choosing determines it. For, as was before observed, in every act of will, there is choice; and a power of will-

ing is a power of choosing. But if a power of choosing determines the act of volition, it determines it by choosing it. For it is most absurd to say that a power of choosing determines one thing rather than another, without choosing any thing. But if a power of choosing determines volition by choosing it, then here is the act of volition determined by an antecedent choice, choosing that volition.

*Thirdly*, To say, the faculty, or the soul, determines its own volition, but not by any act, is a contradiction. Because for the soul to *direct*, *decide*, or *determine* any thing, is to act; and this is supposed; for the soul is here spoken of as being a cause in this affair, bringing something to pass, or doing something; or, which is the same thing, exerting itself in order to an effect, which effect is the determination of volition, or the particular kind and manner of an act of will. But certainly, this exertion or action is not the same with the effect, in order to the production of which it is exerted; but must be something prior to it.

*Again*, The advocates for this notion of the freedom of the will speak of a certain sovereignty in the will, whereby it has power to determine its own volitions. And, therefore, the determination of volition must itself be an act of the will; for, otherwise, it can be no exercise of that supposed power and sovereignty.

*Again*, If the will determines itself, then either the will is *active* in determining its volitions, or it is not. If it be active in it, then the determination is an *act* of the will; and so there is one act of the will determining another. But if the will is not *active* in the

determination, then how does it *exercise* any liberty in it? These gentlemen suppose, that the thing wherein the will *exercises* liberty, is in its determining its own acts. But how can this be, if it be not *active* in determining? Certainly the will, or the soul, cannot *exercise any liberty* in that wherein it doth not *act*, or wherein it doth not *exercise itself*. So that, if either part of this dilemma be taken, this scheme of liberty, consisting in self-determining power, is overthrown. If there be an act of the will in determining all its own free acts, then one free act of the will is determined by another; and so we have the absurdity of every free act, even the very first, determined by a foregoing free act. But if there be no act or exercise of the will in determining its own acts, then no liberty is exercised in determining them. From whence it follows, that no liberty consists in the will's power to determine its own acts; or, which is the same thing, that there is no such thing as liberty consisting in a self-determining power of the will. )

If it should be said, that, although it be true, if the soul determines its own volitions, it must be active in so doing, and the determination itself must be an act; yet there is no need of supposing this act to be prior to the volition determined: but the will or soul determines the act of the will *in willing*; it determines its own volition, *in* the very act of volition; it directs and limits the act of the will, causing it to be so and not otherwise, *in* exerting the act, without any preceding act to exert that. If any should say after this manner, they must mean one of these three things: either (1) that



the determining act, though it be before the act determined in the order of nature, yet is not before it in order of time. Or, (2) that the determining act is not before the act determined, either in the order of time or nature, nor is truly distinct from it; but that the soul's determining the act of volition is the same thing with its exerting the act of volition: the mind's exerting such a particular act, is its causing and determining the act. Or, (3) that volition has no cause, and is no effect; but comes into existence, with such a particular determination, without any ground or reason of its existence and determination.—I shall consider these distinctly.

1. If all that is meant be, that the determining act is not before the act determined in order of *time*, it will not help the case at all, though it should be allowed. If it be before the determined act in the order of nature, being the cause or ground of its existence, this as much proves it to be distinct from it and independent on it, as if it were before in the order of time. As the cause of the particular motion of a natural body, in a certain direction, may have no distance as to time, yet cannot be the same with the motion effected by it, but must be as distinct from it as any other cause that is before its effect in the order of time: as the architect is distinct from the house which he builds, or the father distinct from the son which he begets. And if the act of the will determining be distinct from the act determined, and before it in the order of nature, then we can go back from one to another, until we come to the first in the series, which has no act of the will

before it in the order of nature, determining it ; and, consequently, is an act not determined by the will, and so not a free act, in this notion of freedom. And this being the act which determines all the rest, none of them are free acts. As, when there is a chain of many links, the first of which only is taken hold of and drawn by hand ; all the rest may follow and be moved at the same instant, without any distance of time ; but yet the motion of one link is before that of another in the order of nature ; the last is moved by the next, and that by the next, and so till we come to the first ; which not being moved by any other, but by something distinct from the whole chain, this as much proves that no part is moved by any self-moving power in the chain, as if the motion of one link followed that of another in the order of time.

2. If any should say, that the determining act is not before the determined act, either in the order of time or of nature, nor is distinct from it ; but that the *exertion* of the act is the *determination* of the act ; that for the soul to exert a particular volition, is for it to cause and determine that act of volition : I would on this observe, that the thing in question seems to be forgotten, or kept out of sight, in a darkness and unintelligibleness of speech ; unless such an objector would mean to contradict himself.—The very act of volition itself is doubtless a determination of mind ; *i. e.* it is the mind's drawing up a conclusion, or coming to a choice between two things, or more, proposed to it. But determining among external *objects* of choice is not the same with determining the *act* of choice itself, among various possible acts of choice.—

The question is, What influences, directs, or determines the mind or will to come to such a conclusion or choice as it does? Or what is the cause, ground, or reason, why it concludes thus, and not otherwise? Now it must be answered, according to the Arminian notion of freedom, that the will influences, orders, and determines itself thus to act. And if it does, I say it must be by some antecedent act. To say it is caused, influenced, and determined by something, and yet not determined by any thing antecedent, either in order of time or nature, is a contradiction. For that is what is meant by a thing's being prior in the order of nature, that it is some way the cause or reason of the thing with respect to which it is said to be prior.

If the particular act or exertion of will, which comes into existence, be any thing properly determined at all, then it has some cause of its existing, and of its existing in such a particular determinate manner, and not another; some cause, whose influence *decides the matter*: which cause is distinct from the effect, and prior to it. But to say, that the will or mind orders, influences, and determines itself to exert such an act as it does, by the very exertion itself, is to make the exertion both cause and effect; or the exerting such an act, to be a cause of the exertion of such an act. For the question is, What is the cause and reason of the soul's exerting such an act? To which the answer is: The soul exerts such an act: and that is the cause of it. And so, by this, the exertion must be prior in the order of nature to itself, and distinct from itself.

3. If the meaning be, that the soul's exertion

of such a particular act of will is a thing that comes to pass *of itself*, without any cause; and that there is absolutely no ground or reason of the soul's being determined to exert such a volition, and make such a choice, rather than another: I say, if this be the meaning of Arminians, when they contend so earnestly for the will's determining its own acts, and for liberty of will consisting in self-determining power; they do nothing but confound themselves and others with words without a meaning. In the question, *What determines the will?* and in their answer, that *the will determines itself*, and in all the dispute about it, it seems to be taken for granted, that something determines the will; and the controversy on this head is not, whether any thing at all determines it, or whether its determination has any cause or foundation at all; but where the foundation of it is, whether in the will itself, or somewhere else. But if the thing intended be what is above mentioned, then all comes to this, that nothing at all determines the will; volition having absolutely no cause or foundation of its existence, either within or without. There is a great noise made about self-determining power, as the source of all free acts of the will: but when the matter comes to be explained, the meaning is, that no power at all is the source of these acts, neither self-determining power, nor any other, but they arise from nothing; no cause, no power, no influence, being at all concerned in the matter.

However, this very thing, even that the free acts of the will are events which come to pass without a cause, is certainly implied in the

Arminian notion of liberty of will ; though it be very inconsistent with many other things in their scheme, and repugnant to some things implied in their notion of liberty. Their opinion implies, that the particular determination of volition is without any cause ; because they hold the free acts of the will to be *contingent* events ; and contingency is essential to freedom, in their notion of it. But, certainly, those things which have a prior ground and reason of their particular existence, a cause which antecedently determines them to be, and determines them to be just as they are, do not happen contingently. If something foregoing, by a causal influence and connexion, determines and fixes precisely their coming to pass, and the manner of it, then it does not remain a contingent thing whether they shall come to pass or no.

And because it is a question in many respects very important, in this controversy about the freedom of will, *whether the free acts of the will are events which come to pass without a cause* ; I shall be particular in examining this point in the two following sections.

### SECTION III.

WHETHER ANY EVENT WHATSOEVER, AND VOLITION IN PARTICULAR, CAN COME TO PASS WITHOUT A CAUSE OF ITS EXISTENCE.

BEFORE I enter on any argument on this subject, I would explain how I would be understood, when I use the word, *cause*, in this discourse ; since, for want of a better word, I shall have occasion to use it in a sense which is more extensive than that in which it is



sometimes used. The word is often used in so restrained a sense as to signify only that which has a *positive efficiency* or influence *to produce* a thing, or bring it to pass. But there are many things which have no such positive productive influence, which yet are causes in that respect, that they have truly the nature of a ground or reason why some things are, rather than others; or why they are as they are, rather than otherwise. Thus, the absence of the sun in the night is not the cause of the falling of the dew at that time, in the same manner as its beams are the cause of the ascending of the vapours in the daytime; and its withdrawment in the winter is not in the same manner the cause of the freezing of the waters, as its approach in the spring is the cause of their thawing. But yet the withdrawment or absence of the sun is an antecedent, with which these effects in the night and winter are connected, and on which they depend; and is one thing that belongs to the ground and reason why they come to pass at that time rather than at other times; though the absence of the sun is nothing positive, nor has any positive influence.

It may be further observed, that when I speak of *connexion of causes and effects*, I have respect to *moral* causes, as well as those that are called *natural* in distinction from them. Moral causes may be causes in as proper a sense as any causes whatsoever; may have as real an influence, and may as truly be the ground and reason of an event's coming to pass.

Therefore, I sometimes use the word, *cause*, in this inquiry, to signify any *antecedent*, either natural or moral, positive or negative, on which

an event, either a thing, or the manner and circumstance of a thing, so depends, that it is the ground and reason, either in whole or in part, why it is, rather than not ; or why it is as it is, rather than otherwise ; or, in other words, any antecedent with which a consequent event is so connected, that it truly belongs to the reason why the proposition which affirms that event is true, whether it has any positive influence or not. And in an agreeableness to this, I sometimes use the word, *effect*, for the consequence of another thing, which is, perhaps, rather an occasion than a cause, most properly speaking.

I am the more careful thus to explain my meaning, that I may cut off occasion from any that might seek occasion to cavil and object against some things which I may say concerning the dependence of all things which come to pass on some cause, and their connexion with their cause.

Having thus explained what I mean by *cause*, I assert, that nothing ever comes to pass without a cause. What is self-existent, must be from eternity, and must be unchangeable ; but as to all things that *begin to be*, they are not self-existent, and therefore must have some foundation of their existence without themselves.—That whatsoever begins to be, which before was not, must have a cause why it then begins to exist, seems to be the first dictate of the common and natural sense which God hath implanted in the minds of all mankind, and the main foundation of all our reasonings about the existence of things past, present, or to come.

And this dictate of common sense equally respects substances and modes, or things and the manner and circumstances of things. Thus, if we see a body, which has hitherto been at rest, start out of a state of rest, and begin to move, we do as naturally and necessarily suppose there is some cause or reason of this new mode of existence, as of the existence of a body itself which had hitherto not existed. And so, if a body, which had hitherto moved in a certain direction, should suddenly change the direction of its motion; or if it should put off its old figure, and take a new one; or change its colour: the beginning of these new modes is a new event, and the mind of mankind necessarily supposes that there is some cause or reason of them.

If this grand principle of common sense be taken away, all arguing from effects to causes ceaseth, and so all knowledge of any existence, besides what we have by the most direct and immediate intuition. Particularly, all our proof of the being of God ceases: we argue his being from our own being, and the being of other things, which we are sensible once were not, but have begun to be; and from the being of the world, with all its constituent parts, and the manner of their existence; all which we see plainly are not necessary in their own nature, and so not self-existent, and, therefore, must have a cause. But if things, not in themselves necessary, may begin to be without a cause, all this arguing is vain.

Indeed, I will not affirm, that there is in the nature of things no foundation for the knowledge of the being of God, without any evidence

of it from his works. I do suppose there is a great absurdity, in the nature of things simply considered, in supposing that there should be no God, or in denying being in general, and supposing an eternal, absolute, universal nothing: and, therefore, that here would be foundation of intuitive evidence that it cannot be, and that eternal, infinite, most perfect Being must be; if we had strength and comprehension of mind sufficient to have a clear idea of general and universal being, or, which is the same thing, of the infinite, eternal, most perfect Divine nature and essence. But then we should not properly come to the knowledge of the being of God by arguing; but our evidence would be intuitive: we should see it, as we see other things that are necessary in themselves, the contraries of which are, in their own nature, absurd and contradictory; as we see that twice two is four; and as we see that a circle has no angles. If we had as clear an idea of universal, infinite entity, as we have of these other things, I suppose we should most intuitively see the absurdity of supposing such being not to be; should immediately see there is no room for the question, whether it is possible that being, in the most general abstracted notion of it, should not be. But we have not that strength and extent of mind, to know this certainly in this intuitive independent manner: but the way that mankind come to the knowledge of the being of God, is that which the apostle speaks of, Rom. i. 20, “The invisible things of him, from the creation of the world, are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made; even his eternal power and Godhead.” We



*first ascend*, and prove *à posteriori*, or from effects, that there must be an eternal cause; and then, *secondly*, prove by argumentation, not intuition, that this being must be necessarily existent; and then, *thirdly*, from the proved necessity of his existence, we may *descend*, and prove many of his perfections *à priori*.

But if once this grand principle of common sense be given up, that *what is not necessary in itself, must have a cause*; and we begin to maintain, that things may come into existence, and begin to be, which heretofore have not been, of themselves, without any cause; all our means of ascending in our arguing from the creature to the Creator, and all our evidence of the being of God, is cut off at one blow. In this case, we cannot prove that there is a God, either from the being of the world and the creatures in it, or from the manner of their being, their order, beauty, and use. For if things may come into existence without any cause at all, then they doubtless may without any cause answerable to the effect. Our minds do alike naturally suppose and determine both these things; namely, that what begins to be has a cause, and, also, that it has a cause proportionable and agreeable to the effect. The same principle which leads us to determine, that there cannot be any thing coming to pass without a cause, leads us to determine that there cannot be more in the effect than in the cause.

Yea, if once it should be allowed, that things may come to pass without a cause, we should not only have no proof of the being of God, but we should be without evidence of the existence of any thing whatsoever, but our own imme-



diately present ideas and consciousness. For we have no way to prove any thing else, but by arguing from effects to causes: from the ideas now immediately in view, we argue other things not immediately in view; from sensations now excited in us, we infer the existence of things without us, as the causes of these sensations; and from the existence of these things, we argue other things, which they depend on, as effects on causes. We infer the past existence of ourselves, or any thing else, by memory; only as we argue, that the ideas which are now in our minds, are the consequences of past ideas and sensations. We immediately perceive nothing else but the ideas which are this moment extant in our minds. We perceive or know other things only *by means* of these, as necessarily connected with others, and dependent on them. But if things may be without causes, all this necessary connexion and dependence is dissolved, and so all means of our knowledge is gone. If there be no absurdity or difficulty in supposing one thing to start out of non-existence into being of itself without a cause, then there is no absurdity or difficulty in supposing the same of millions of millions. For nothing, or no difficulty multiplied, still is nothing, or no difficulty: nothing multiplied by nothing does not increase the sum.

And indeed, according to the hypothesis I am opposing, of the acts of the will coming to pass without a cause, it is the case in fact, that millions of millions of events are continually coming into existence *contingently*, without any cause or reason why they do so, all over the world, every day and hour, through all ages.

So it is, in a constant succession, in every moral agent. This contingency, this efficient nothing, this effectual no-cause, is always ready at hand to produce this sort of effects, as long as the agent exists, and as often as he has occasion.

If it were so, that things only of one kind, viz. acts of the will, seemed to come to pass of themselves, but those of this sort in general came into being thus; and it were an event that was continual, and that happened in a course, wherever were capable subjects of such events; this very thing would demonstrate that there was some cause of them, which made such a difference between this event and others, and that they did not really happen contingently. For contingency is blind, and does not pick and choose for a particular sort of events. Nothing has no choice. This no-cause, which causes no existence, cannot cause the existence which comes to pass to be of one particular sort only, distinguished from all others. Thus, that only one sort of matter drops out of the heavens, even water, and that this comes so often, so constantly and plentifully, all over the world, in all ages, shews that there is some cause or reason of the falling of water out of the heavens; and that something besides mere contingency has a hand in the matter.

If we should suppose nonentity to be about to bring forth; and things were coming into existence without any cause or antecedent, on which the existence, or kind or manner of existence, depends; or which could at all determine whether the things should be stones, or stars, or beasts, or angels, or human bodies, or souls, or only some new motion or figure in

natural bodies, or some new sensations in animals, or new ideas in the human understanding, or new volitions in the will; or any thing else of all the infinite number of possibles; then certainly it would not be expected, although many millions of millions of things are coming into existence in this manner, all over the face of the earth, that they should all be only of one particular kind, and that it should be thus in all ages, and that this sort of existences should never fail to come to pass where there is room for them, or a subject capable of them, and that constantly, whenever there is occasion for them.

If any should imagine, there is something in the sort of event that renders it possible for it to come into existence without a cause, and should say, that the free acts of the will are existences of an exceeding different nature from other things; by reason of which they may come into existence without any previous ground or reason of it, though other things cannot: if they make this objection in good earnest, it would be an evidence of their strangely forgetting themselves; for they would be giving an account of some ground of the existence of a thing, when at the same time they would maintain there is no ground of its existence. Therefore I would observe, that the particular nature of existence, be it never so diverse from others, can lay no foundation for that thing's coming into existence without a cause; because to suppose this, would be to suppose the particular nature of existence to be a thing prior to the existence; and so a thing which makes way for existence, with such a circumstance,

namely, without a cause or reason of existence. But that which in any respect makes way for a thing's coming into being, or for any manner or circumstance of its first existence, must be prior to the existence. The distinguished nature of the effect, which is something belonging to the effect, cannot have influence backward, to act before it is. The peculiar nature of that thing called volition, can do nothing, can have no influence, while it is not. And afterwards it is too late for its influence : for then the thing has made sure of existence already, without its help.

So that it is indeed as repugnant to reason to suppose that an act of the will should come into existence without a cause, as to suppose the human soul, or an angel, or the globe of the earth, or the whole universe, should come into existence without a cause. And if once we allow that such a sort of effect as a volition may come to pass without a cause, how do we know but that many other sorts of effects may do so too ? It is not the particular kind of effect that makes the absurdity of supposing it has being without a cause, but something which is common to all things that ever begin to be, viz. that they are not self-existent, or necessary in the nature of things.

#### SECTION IV.

WHETHER VOLITION CAN ARISE WITHOUT A CAUSE,  
THROUGH THE ACTIVITY OF THE NATURE OF THE SOUL.

THE author of the " Essay on the Freedom of the Will in God and the Creatures," in answer to that objection against his doctrine of a self-determining power in the will (pp. 68, 69), *That*

*nothing is, or comes to pass, without a sufficient reason why it is, and why it is in this manner rather than another,* allows that it is thus in corporeal things, *which are, properly and philosophically speaking, passive being ;* but denies that it is thus in *spirits, which are beings of an active nature, who have the spring of action within themselves, and can determine themselves.* By which it is plainly supposed, that such an event as an act of the will may come to pass in a spirit, without a sufficient reason why it comes to pass, or why it is after this manner rather than another, by reason of the activity of the nature of a spirit. But certainly this author, in this matter, must be very unwary and inadvertent. For,

1. The objection or difficulty proposed by this author seems to be forgotten in his answer or solution. The very difficulty, as he himself proposes it, is this: how an event can *come to pass without a sufficient reason why it is, or why it is in this manner rather than another?* Instead of solving this difficulty, or answering this question with regard to volition, as he proposes, he forgets himself, and answers another question quite diverse, and wholly inconsistent with this, viz. What is a sufficient reason why it is, and why it is in this manner rather than another? And he assigns the active being's own determination as the cause, and a cause sufficient for the effect; and leaves all the difficulty unresolved, and the question unanswered, which yet returns, even, How the soul's own determination, which he speaks of, came to exist, and to be what it was, without a cause? The activity of the soul may enable it to be the cause of



effects ; but it does not at all enable or help it to be the subject of effects which have no cause, which is the thing this author supposes concerning acts of the will. Activity of nature will no more enable a being to produce effects, and determine the manner of their existence, *within* itself, without a cause, than *out of* itself, in some other being. But if an active being should, through its activity, produce and determine an effect in some external object, how absurd would it be to say that the effect was produced without a cause !

2. The question is not so much, How a spirit endowed with activity comes to act ? as, Why it exerts such an act and not another ; or why it acts with such a particular determination ? If activity of nature be the cause why a spirit (the soul of man, for instance,) acts, and does not lie still, yet that alone is not the cause why its action is thus and thus limited, directed, and determined. Active nature is a *general* thing ; it is an ability or tendency of nature to action, generally taken, which may be a cause why the soul acts as occasion or reason is given ; but this alone cannot be a sufficient cause why the soul exerts such a *particular* act, at such a time, rather than others. In order to this, there must be something besides a *general* tendency to action ; there must also be a *particular* tendency to that individual action. If it should be asked, why the soul of man uses its activity in such a manner as it does ; and it should be answered, that the soul uses its activity thus rather than otherwise, because it has activity, would such an answer satisfy a rational man ? Would it not rather be looked upon as a very impertinent one ?

3. An active being can bring no effects to pass by his activity but what are consequent upon his acting; he produces nothing by his activity, any other way than by the exercise of his activity, and so nothing but the fruits of its exercise; he brings nothing to pass by a dormant activity. But the exercise of his activity is action; and so his action, or exercise of his activity, must be prior to the effects of his activity. If an active being produces an effect in another being, about which his activity is conversant, the effect being the fruit of his activity, his activity must be first exercised or exerted, and the effect of it must follow. So it must be, with equal reason, if the active being is his own object, and his activity is conversant about himself, to produce and determine some effect in himself; still the exercise of his activity must go before the effect, which he brings to pass and determines by it. And therefore his activity cannot be the cause of the determination of the first action, or exercise of activity itself, whence the effects of activity arise; for that would imply a contradiction: it would be to say, the first exercise of activity is before the first exercise of activity, and is the cause of it.

4. That the soul, though an active substance, cannot *diversify* its own acts, but by first acting; or be a determining cause of *different* acts, or any different effects, sometimes of one kind and sometimes of another, any other way than in consequence of its own diverse acts, is manifest by this: that, if so, then the *same* cause, the *same* causal power, force, or influence, *without variation in any respect*, would produce *different* effects at different times. For

the same substance of the soul before it acts, and the same active nature of the soul before it is exerted (*i. e.* before in the order of nature), would be the cause of different effects, viz. different volitions at different times. But the substance of the soul before it acts, and its active nature before it is exerted, are the same without variation. For it is some act that makes the first variation in the cause, as to any causal exertion, force, or influence. But if it be so that the soul has no different causality, or diverse causal force or influence in producing these diverse effects; then it is evident that the soul has no influence, no hand in the diversity of the effect, and that the difference of the effect cannot be owing to any thing in the soul; or, which is the same thing, the soul does not determine the diversity of the effect; which is contrary to the supposition. It is true, the substance of the soul, before it acts, and before there is any difference in that respect, may be in a different state and circumstances: but those whom I oppose will not allow the different circumstances of the soul to be the determining causes of the acts of the will, as being contrary to their notion of self-determination and self-motion.

5. Let us suppose, as these divines do, that there are no acts of the soul, strictly speaking, but free volitions; then it will follow, that the soul is an active being in nothing further than it is a voluntary or elective being; and whenever it produces effects actively, it produces effects voluntarily and electively. But to produce effects thus is the same thing as to produce effects *in consequence of*, and *according to*, its own choice. And if so, then surely the soul

does not by its activity produce all its own acts of will or choice themselves; for this, by the supposition, is to produce all its free acts of choice voluntarily and electively, or in consequence of its own free acts of choice, which brings the matter directly to the fore-mentioned contradiction, of a free act of choice before the first free act of choice. According to these gentlemen's own notion of action, if there arises in the mind a volition, without a free act of the will or choice to determine and produce it, the mind is not the active voluntary cause of that volition; because it does not arise from, nor is regulated by, choice or design. And therefore it cannot be, that the mind should be the active, voluntary, determining cause of the first and leading volition that relates to the affair. The mind's being a *designing* cause only enables it to produce effects in consequence of its *design*; it will not enable it to be the designing cause of all its own designs. The mind's being an *elective* cause will only enable it to produce effects in consequence of its *elections*, and according to them; but cannot enable it to be the elective cause of all its own elections; because that supposes an election before the first election. So the mind's being an *active* cause enables it to produce effects in consequence of its own *acts*, but cannot enable it to be the determining cause of all its own *acts*; for that is still in the same manner a contradiction, as it supposes a determining act conversant about the first act, and prior to it, having a causal influence on its existence and manner of existence.

I can conceive of nothing else that can be meant by the soul's having power to cause and

determine its own volitions, as a being to whom God has given a power of action, but this : that God has given power to the soul, sometimes, at least, to excite volitions at its pleasure, or according as it chooses. And this certainly supposes, in all such cases, a choice preceding all volitions which are thus caused, even the first of them ; which runs into the fore-mentioned great absurdity.

Therefore the activity of the nature of the soul affords no relief from the difficulties which the notion of a self-determining power in the will is attended with ; nor will it help, in the least, its absurdities and inconsistencies.

#### SECTION V.

SHEWING, THAT IF THE THINGS ASSERTED IN THESE EVASIONS SHOULD BE SUPPOSED TO BE TRUE, THEY ARE ALTOGETHER IMPERTINENT, AND CANNOT HELP THE CAUSE OF ARMINIAN LIBERTY ; AND HOW (THIS BEING THE STATE OF THE CASE) ARMINIAN WRITERS ARE OBLIGED TO TALK INCONSISTENTLY.

WHAT was last observed in the preceding section, may shew, not only that the active nature of the soul cannot be a reason why an act of the will is, or why it is in this manner rather than another ; but also that if it could be so, and it could be proved that volitions are contingent events, in that sense, that their being and manner of being is not fixed or determined by any cause, or any thing antecedent ; it would not at all serve the purpose of Arminians to establish the freedom of the will, according to their notion of its freedom, as consisting in the will's *determination of itself* ; which supposes every free act of the will to be determined by



some act of the will going before to determine it ; inasmuch as for the *will* to determine a thing, is the same as for the soul to determine a thing by *willing* ; and there is no other way that the *will* can determine an act of the will, than by willing that act of the will, or, which is the same thing, *choosing* it. So that here must be two acts of the will in the case, one going before another, one conversant about the other, and the latter the object of the former, and chosen by the former. If the will does not cause and determine the act by choice, it does not cause or determine it at all ; for that which is not determined by choice is not determined voluntarily or *willingly* ; and to say that the will determines something which the soul does not determine willingly, is as much as to say that something is done by the will which the soul doth not with its will.

So that if Arminian liberty of will, consisting in the will's determining its own acts, be maintained, the old absurdity and contradiction must be maintained, that every free act of will is caused and determined by a foregoing free act of will ; which doth not consist with the free acts arising without any cause, and being so contingent as not to be fixed by any thing foregoing. So that this evasion must be given up, as not at all relieving, and as that which, instead of supporting this sort of liberty, directly destroys it.

And if it should be supposed that the soul determines its own acts of will some other way than by a foregoing act of will, still it will not help the cause of their liberty of will. If it determines them by an act of the understanding, of some other power, then *the will* does not

determine *itself*; and so the *self-determining* power of the will is given up. And what liberty is there exercised, according to their own opinion of liberty, by the soul's being determined by something besides *its own choice*? The acts of the will, it is true, may be directed and effectually determined and fixed; but it is not done by the soul's own will and pleasure; there is no exercise at all of choice or will in producing the effect; and if *will* and choice are not exercised in it, how is the *liberty of the will* exercised in it?

So that let Arminians turn which way they please, with their notion of liberty consisting in the will's determining its own acts, their notion destroys itself. If they hold every free act of will to be determined by the soul's own free choice, or foregoing free act of will, *foregoing* either in the order of time or nature, it implies that gross contradiction, that the first free act belonging to the affair is determined by a free act which is before it; or if they say that the free acts of the will are determined by some *other act* of the soul, and not an act of will or choice, this also destroys their notion of liberty consisting in the acts of the will being determined by the *will itself*; or if they hold that the acts of the will are determined by *nothing at all* that is prior to them, but that they are contingent in that sense, that they are determined and fixed by no cause at all, this also destroys their notion of liberty consisting in the will's determining its own acts.

This being the true state of the Arminian notion of liberty, it hence comes to pass that the writers that defend it are forced into gross

inconsistencies in what they say upon this subject. To instance in Dr. Whitby: he, in his discourse on the freedom of the will,\* opposes the opinion of the Calvinists, who place man's liberty *only in a power of doing what he will*, as that wherein they plainly agree with Mr. Hobbes. And yet he himself mentions the very same notion of liberty as the dictate of *the sense and common reason of mankind, and a rule laid down by the light of nature*; viz. *that liberty is a power of acting from ourselves, or DOING WHAT WE WILL*.† This is, indeed, as he says, a thing agreeable to *the sense and common reason of mankind*; and therefore it is not so much to be wondered at, that he unawares acknowledges it against himself: for if liberty does not consist in this, what else can be devised that it should consist in? If it be said, as Dr. Whitby elsewhere insists, that it does not only consist in liberty of *doing what we will*, but also a liberty of willing without necessity, still the question returns, what does that liberty of willing without necessity consist in, but in a power of willing *as we please*, without being impeded by a contrary necessity, or, in other words, a liberty for the soul in its willing to act *according to its own choice*? Yea, this very thing the same author seems to allow, and suppose again and again, in the use he makes of sayings of the Fathers, whom he quotes as his vouchers. Thus he cites the words of Origen, which he produces as a testimony on his side:‡ *The soul acts by HER OWN CHOICE, and it is free for her to incline to*

\* In his book on the Five Points, second edition, pp. 350, 351, 352.

† Ibid. pp. 325, 326.

‡ Ibid. p. 342.

*whatever part SHE WILL.* And those words of Justin Martyr :\* *the doctrine of the Christians is this, that nothing is done or suffered according to fate, but that every man doth good or evil ACCORDING TO HIS OWN FREE CHOICE.* And from Eusebius these words :† *If fate be established, philosophy and piety are overthrown ; all these things depending upon the necessity introduced by the stars, and not upon meditation and exercise PROCEEDING FROM OUR OWN FREE CHOICE.* And again, the words of Maccarius :‡ *God, to preserve the liberty of man's will, suffered their bodies to die, that it might be IN THEIR CHOICE to turn to good or evil. They who are acted by the Holy Spirit are not held under any necessity, but have liberty to turn themselves, and DO WHAT THEY WILL in this life.*

Thus, the doctor, in effect, comes into that very notion of liberty which the Calvinists have ; which he at the same time condemns, as agreeing with the opinion of Mr. Hobbes, namely, *the soul's acting by its own choice, men's doing good or evil according to their own free choice, their being in that exercise which proceeds from their own free choice, having it in their choice to turn to good or evil, and doing what they will.* So that if men exercise this liberty in the acts of the will themselves, it must be in exerting acts of will as they will, or *according to their own free choice, or exerting acts of will that proceed from their choice.* And if it be so, then let every one judge whether this does not suppose a free choice going before the free act of will, or whe-

\* In his book on the Five Points, second edition, p. 360.

† Ibid p. 363.

‡ Ibid. pp. 369. 370.

ther an act of choice does not go before that act of the will which *proceeds from it*. And if it be thus with all free acts of the will, then let every one judge, whether it will not follow, that there is a free choice or will going before the first free act of the will exerted in the case. And then let every one judge, whether this be not a contradiction. And finally, let every one judge whether, in the scheme of these writers, there be any possibility of avoiding these absurdities.

If liberty consists, as Dr. Whitby himself says, in a man's *doing what he will*; and a man exercises this liberty, not only in external actions, but in the acts of the will themselves; then, so far as liberty is exercised in the latter, it consists in *willing what he wills*: and if any say so, one of these two things must be meant; either, 1. That a man has power to will, as he does will; because what he wills, he wills; and therefore has power to will what he has power to will. If this be their meaning, then all this mighty controversy about freedom of the will and self-determining power, comes wholly to nothing; all that is contended for being no more than this, that the mind of man does what it does, and is the subject of what it is the subject of, or that what is, is; wherein none has any controversy with them. Or, 2. The meaning must be, that a man has power to will as he pleases or chooses to will: that is, he has power by one act of choice, to choose another; by an antecedent act of will, to choose a consequent act; and therein to execute his own choice. And if this be their meaning, it is nothing but shuffling with those they dispute



with, and baffling their own reason. For still the question returns, Wherein lies man's liberty in that antecedent act of will which chose the consequent act? The answer, according to the same principles, must be, that his liberty in this also lies in his willing as he would, or as he chose, or agreeable to another act of choice preceding that. And so the question returns *in infinitum*, and the like answer must be made *in infinitum*: in order to support their opinion, there must be no beginning, but free acts of will must have been chosen by foregoing free acts of will in the soul of every man, without beginning; and so before he had a being, from all eternity.

#### SECTION VI.

CONCERNING THE WILL'S DETERMINING IN THINGS WHICH ARE PERFECTLY INDIFFERENT IN THE VIEW OF THE MIND.

A GREAT argument for self-determining power is the supposed experience we universally have of an ability to determine our wills, in cases wherein no prevailing motive is presented: the will (as is supposed) has its choice to make between two or more things, that are perfectly equal in the view of the mind; and the will is apparently altogether indifferent; and yet we find no difficulty in coming to a choice; the will can instantly determine itself to one, by a sovereign power which it has over itself, without being moved by any preponderating inducement.

Thus, the fore-mentioned author of an "Essay on the Freedom of the Will," &c. pp. 25, 26, 27, supposes, "That there are many instances wherein the will is determined neither by pre-

sent uneasiness nor by the greatest apparent good, nor by the last dictate of the understanding, nor by any thing else, but merely by itself, as a sovereign self-determining power of the soul; and that the soul does not will this or that action, in some cases, by any other influence but because it will. Thus (says he) I can turn my face to the south, or the north; I can point with my finger upward or downward.—And thus, in some cases, the will determines itself in a very sovereign manner, because it will, without a reason borrowed from the understanding; and hereby it discovers its own perfect power of choice, rising from within itself, and free from all influence or restraint of any kind.” And in pages 66, 70, and 73, 74, this author very expressly supposes the will in many cases to be determined by *no motive at all, and acts altogether without motive or ground of preference*.—Here I would observe,

1. The very supposition which is here made directly contradicts and overthrows itself. For the thing supposed, wherein this grand argument consists, is, that among several things the will actually chooses one before another, at the same time that it is perfectly indifferent; which is the very same thing as to say the mind has a preference, at the same time that it has no preference. What is meant cannot be, that the mind is indifferent before it comes to have a choice, or until it has a preference; or, which is the same thing, that the mind is indifferent until it comes to be not indifferent. For certainly this author did not suppose he had a controversy with any person in supposing this. And then it is nothing to his purpose, that the

mind which chooses was indifferent once ; unless it chooses, remaining indifferent ; for otherwise, it does not choose at all in that case of indifference, concerning which is all the question. Besides, it appears, in fact, that the thing which this author supposes, is not that the will chooses one thing before another, concerning which it is indifferent *before it chooses*, but also is indifferent *when it chooses*, and that its being otherwise than indifferent is not until afterwards, in consequence of its choice ; that the chosen things appearing preferable and more agreeable than another, arises from its choice already made. His words are (p. 30), “ Where the objects which are proposed appear equally fit or good, the will is left without a guide or director ; and therefore must take its own choice by its own determination ; it being properly a self-determining power. And in such cases the will does as it were make a good to itself by its own choice, *i. e.* creates its own pleasure or delight in this self-chosen good. Even as a man, by seizing upon a spot of unoccupied land in an uninhabited country, makes it his own possession and property, and as such rejoices in it. Where things were indifferent before, the will finds nothing to make them more agreeable, considered merely in themselves ; but the pleasure it feels ARISING FROM ITS OWN CHOICE, and its perseverance therein. We love many things which we have chosen, AND PURELY BECAUSE WE CHOSE THEM.”

This is as much as to say, that we first begin to prefer many things, now ceasing any longer to be indifferent with respect to them, purely because we have preferred and chosen them

before.—These things must needs be spoken inconsiderately by this author. Choice or preference cannot be before itself in the same instance, either in the order of time or nature. It cannot be the foundation of itself, or the fruit or consequence of itself. The very act of choosing one thing *rather than another*, is *preferring* that thing, and that is setting a higher value on that thing. But that the mind sets a higher value on one thing than another, is not, in the first place, the fruit of its setting a higher value on that thing.

This author says, p. 36, “The will may be perfectly indifferent, and yet the will may determine itself to choose one or the other.” And again, in the same page, “I am entirely indifferent to either; and yet my will may determine itself to choose.” And again, “Which I shall choose must be determined by the mere act of my will.” If the choice is determined by a mere act of will, then the choice is determined by a mere act of choice. And concerning this matter, viz. That the act of the will itself is determined by an act of choice, this writer is express, in p. 72. Speaking of the case where there is no superior fitness in objects presented, he has these words: “There it must act by its own CHOICE, and determine itself as it PLEASES.” Where it is supposed that the very *determination*, which is the ground and spring of the will's act, is an act of *choice* and *pleasure*, wherein one act is more agreeable, and the mind better pleased in it, than another; and this *preference*, and *superior pleasedness*, is the ground of all it does in the case. And if so, the mind is not indifferent when it determines itself, but *had rather* do one thing than another, had

rather determine itself one way than another. And therefore the will does not act at all in indifference, not so much as in the first step it takes, or the first rise and beginning of its acting. If it be possible for the understanding to act in indifference, yet to be sure the will never does ; because the will's beginning to act is the very same thing as its beginning to choose or prefer. And if in the very first act of the will, the mind prefers something, then the idea of that thing preferred does at that time preponderate, or prevail in the mind ; or, which is the same thing, the idea of it has a prevailing influence on the will. So that this wholly destroys the thing supposed, viz. That the mind can by a sovereign power choose one of two or more things, which in the view of the mind are, in every respect, perfectly equal, one of which does not at all preponderate, nor has any prevailing influence on the mind above another.

So that this author, in his grand argument for the ability of the will to choose one of two or more things, concerning which it is perfectly indifferent, does at the same time, in effect, deny the thing he supposes, and allows and asserts the point he endeavours to overthrow ; even that the will, in choosing, is subject to no prevailing influence of the idea, or view of the thing chosen. And, indeed, it is impossible to offer this argument without overthrowing it ; the thing supposed in it being inconsistent with itself, and that which denies itself. To suppose the will to act at all in a state of perfect indifference, either to determine itself, or to do any thing else, is to assert that the mind chooses without choosing. To say that when it is indifferent, it can do as it pleases, is



to say that it can follow its pleasure, when it has no pleasure to follow. And therefore, if there be any difficulty in the instances of two cakes, or two eggs, &c. which are exactly alike, one as good as another; concerning which this author supposes the mind in fact has a *choice*, and so in effect supposes that it has a *preference*, it as much concerned himself to solve the difficulty, as it does those whom he opposes. For if these instances prove any thing to his purpose, they prove that a man chooses without choice. And yet this is not to his purpose; because if this is what he asserts, his own words are as much against him, and do as much contradict him, as the words of those he disputes against can do.

2. There is no great difficulty in shewing, in such instances as are alleged, not only *that it must needs be so*, that the mind must be influenced in its choice by something that has a preponderating influence upon it, but also *how it is so*. A little attention to our own experience, and a distinct consideration of the acts of our own minds, in such cases, will be sufficient to clear up the matter.

Thus, supposing I have a chess-board before me; and because I am required by a superior, or desired by a friend, or to make some experiment concerning my own ability and liberty, or on some other consideration, I am determined to touch some one of the spots or squares on the board with my finger; not being limited or directed in the first proposal, or my own first purpose, which is general, to any one in particular; and there being nothing in the squares, in themselves considered, that recommends any one of all the sixty-four, more than another: in

this case my mind determines to give itself up to what is vulgarly called *accident*,\* by determining to touch that square which happens to be most in view, which my eye is especially upon at that moment, or which happens to be then most in my mind, or which I shall be directed to by some other such like accident. Here are several steps of the mind's proceeding (though all may be done as it were in a moment): the *first* step is its *general* determination that it will touch one of the squares. The *next* step is another *general* determination to give itself up to accident, in some certain way; as to touch that which shall be most in the eye or mind at that time, or to some other such like accident. The *third* and last step is a *particular* determination to touch a certain individual spot, even that square which, by that sort of accident the mind has pitched upon, has actually offered itself beyond others. Now it is apparent, that in none of these several steps does the mind proceed in absolute indifference, but in each of them is influenced by a preponderating inducement. So it is in the *first* step: the mind's general determination to touch one of the sixty-four spots: the mind is not absolutely indifferent whether it does so or no; it is induced to it, for the sake of making some experiment, or by the desire of a friend, or some other motive that prevails. So it is in the *second* step; the mind's

\* I have elsewhere observed what that is which is vulgarly called *accident*; that it is nothing akin to the Arminian metaphysical notion of *contingence*, something not connected with any thing foregoing; but that it is something that comes to pass in the course of things, in some affair that men are concerned in, unforeseen, and not owing to their design.

determining to give itself up to accident, by touching that which shall be most in the eye, or the idea of which shall be most prevalent in the mind, &c. The mind is not absolutely indifferent whether it proceeds by this rule or no; but chooses it because it appears at that time a convenient and requisite expedient in order to fulfil the general purpose aforesaid. And so it is in the *third* and last step; it is determining to touch that individual spot which actually does prevail in the mind's view. The mind is not indifferent concerning this; but is influenced by a prevailing inducement and reason; which is, that this is a prosecution of the preceding determination, which appeared requisite, and was fixed before in the second step.

Accident will ever serve a man, without hindering him a moment, in such a case. It will always be so among a number of objects in view; one will prevail in the eye, or in idea, beyond others. When we have our eyes open in the clear sunshine, many objects strike the eye at once, and innumerable images may be at once painted in it by the rays of light; but the attention of the mind is not equal to several of them at once; or if it be it does not continue so for any time. And so it is with respect to the ideas of the mind in general: several ideas are not in equal strength in the mind's view and notice at once; or, at least, do not remain so for any sensible continuance. There is nothing in the world more constantly varying, than the ideas of the mind: they do not remain precisely in the same state for the least perceivable space of time; as is evident by this: That all perceivable time is judged and perceived by the mind

only by the succession or the successive changes of its own ideas. Therefore, while the views or perceptions of the mind remain precisely in the same state, there is no perceivable space or length of time, because no sensible succession at all.

As the acts of the will, in each step of the fore-mentioned procedure, do not come to pass without a particular cause, every act is owing to a prevailing inducement: so the accident, as I have called it, or that which happens in the unsearchable course of things, to which the mind yields itself, and by which it is guided, is not any thing that comes to pass without a cause; and the mind in determining to be guided by it, is not determined by something that has no cause; any more than if it determined to be guided by a lot, or the casting of a die. For though the die's falling in such a manner be accidental to him that casts it, yet none will suppose that there is no cause why it falls as it does. The involuntary changes in the succession of our ideas, though the cause may not be observed, have as much a cause, as the changeable motions of the motes that float in the air, or the continual, infinitely various, successive changes of the unevennesses on the surface of the water.

There are two things especially, which are probably the occasions of confusion in the minds of them who insist upon it, that the will acts in a proper indifference, and without being moved by any inducement, in its determinations in such cases as have been mentioned.

1. They seem to mistake the point in question, or at least not to keep it distinctly in view. The question they dispute about, is, Whether

the mind be indifferent about the *objects* presented, one of which is to be taken, touched, pointed to, &c., as two eggs, two cakes, which appear equally good. Whereas the question to be considered, is, Whether the person be indifferent with respect to his own *actions*; whether he does not, on some consideration or other, prefer one act with respect to these objects before another. The mind in its determination and choice, in these cases, is not most immediately and directly conversant about the *objects presented*; but *the acts to be done* concerning these objects. The objects may appear equal, and the mind may never properly make any choice between them: but the next act of the will being about the external actions to be performed, taking, touching, &c., these may not appear equal, and one action may properly be chosen before another. In each step of the mind's progress, the determination is not about the objects, unless indirectly and improperly, but about the actions, which it chooses for other reasons than any preference of the objects, and for reasons not taken at all from the objects.

There is no necessity of supposing that the mind does ever at all properly choose one of the objects before another; either before it has taken, or afterwards. Indeed the man chooses to *take* or *touch* one rather than another; but not because it chooses the *thing taken*, or *touched*; but from foreign considerations. The case may be so, that of two things offered, a man may, for certain reasons, choose and prefer the taking of that which he *undervalues*, and choose to neglect to take that which his mind *prefers*. In such a case, choosing the thing



taken, and choosing to take, are diverse ; and so they are in a case where the things presented are equal in the mind's esteem, and neither of them preferred. All that fact and experience make evident is, that the mind chooses one action rather than another ; and therefore the arguments which they bring, in order to be to their purpose, ought to be to prove that the mind chooses the action in perfect indifference with respect to *that action* ; and not to prove that the mind chooses the action in perfect indifference with respect to the *object* ; which is very possible, and yet the will not act at all without prevalent inducement, and proper preponderation.

2. Another reason of confusion and difficulty in this matter seems to be, not distinguishing between a *general* indifference, or an indifference with respect to what is to be done in a more distant and general view of it, and a *particular* indifference, or an indifference with respect to the next immediate act, viewed with its particular and present circumstances. A man may be perfectly indifferent with respect to his own *actions*, in the former respect, and yet not in the latter. Thus, in the foregoing instance of touching one of the squares of a chess-board ; when it is first proposed that I should touch one of them, I may be perfectly indifferent which I touch ; because as yet I view the matter remotely and generally, being but in the first step of the mind's progress in the affair. But yet, when I am actually come to the last step, and the very next thing to be determined is, which is to be touched, having already determined that I will touch that which

happens to be most in my eye or mind, and my mind being now fixed on a particular one, the act of touching that, considered thus immediately, and in these particular present circumstances, is not what my mind is absolutely indifferent about.

## SECTION VII.

CONCERNING THE NOTION OF LIBERTY OF WILL,  
CONSISTING IN INDIFFERENCE.

WHAT has been said in the foregoing section has a tendency, in some measure, to evince the absurdity of the opinion of such as place liberty in indifference, or in that equilibrium whereby the will is without all antecedent determination, or bias, and left hitherto free from any prepossessing inclination to one side or the other; that the determination of the will to either side may be entirely from itself, and that it may be owing only to its own power, and that sovereignty which it has over itself, that it goes this way rather than that.\*

\* Dr. Whitby, and some other Arminians, make a distinction of different kinds of freedom; one of God, and perfect spirits above; another, of persons in a state of trial. The former, Dr. Whitby allows to consist with necessity; the latter, he holds to be without necessity; and this latter he supposes to be requisite to our being the subjects of praise or dispraise, rewards or punishments, precepts and prohibitions, promises and threats, exhortations and dehortations, and a covenant treaty. And to this freedom he supposes *indifference* to be requisite. In his discourse on the Five Points, pp. 299, 300, he says:—"It is a freedom (speaking of a freedom not only from co-action, but from necessity) requisite, as we conceive, to render us capable of trial or probation, and to render our actions worthy of praise or dispraise, and our persons of rewards or punishments." And in

But inasmuch as this has been of such long standing, and has been so generally received, and so much insisted on by Pelagians, semi-Pelagians, Jesuits, Socinians, Arminians, and others, it may deserve a more full consideration. And, therefore, I shall now proceed to a more particular and thorough inquiry into this notion.

Now, lest some should suppose that I do not understand those that place liberty in indifference, or should charge me with misrepresenting their opinion, I would signify, that I am sensible there are some, who, when they talk of the liberty of the will as consisting in indifference, express themselves as though they would not be understood of the indifference of the inclination or tendency of the will, but of, I know not what, indifference of the soul's power of willing; or that the will, with respect to its power or ability to choose, is indifferent, can go either way indifferently, either to the right hand or left, either act or forbear to act, one as well as the other. Though this seems to be a refining only of some particular writers, and newly invented, and which will by no means consist with the manner of expression used by the defenders of liberty of indifference in general. (And I wish such refiners would

the next page, speaking of the same matter, he says, "Excellent to this purpose are the words of Mr. Thorndike: *We say not that indifference is requisite to all freedom, but to the freedom of man alone in this state of travail and proficience: the ground of which is God's tender of a treaty, and conditions of peace and reconcilment to fallen man, together with those precepts and prohibitions, those promises and threats, those exhortations and dehortations, it is enforced with.*"

thoroughly consider whether they distinctly know their own meaning, when they make a distinction between indifference of the soul as to its *power* or *ability* of willing or choosing, and the soul's indifference as to the preference or choice itself: and whether they do not deceive themselves in imagining that they have any distinct meaning at all. The indifference of the soul as to its ability or power to will, must be the same thing as the indifference of the state of the power or faculty of the will, or the indifference of the state which the soul itself, which has that power or faculty, hitherto remains in, as to the exercise of that power, in the choice it shall by and by make.)

But not to insist any longer on the abstruseness and inexplicableness of this distinction, let what will be supposed concerning the meaning of them that make use of it, thus much must, at least, be intended by Arminians when they talk of indifference as essential to liberty of will, if they intend any thing, in any respect to their purpose; viz. that it is such an indifference as leaves the will not determined already, but free from actual possession, and vacant of predetermination, so far, that there may be room for the exercise of the *self-determining power* of the will; and that the will's freedom consists in, or depends upon, this vacancy and opportunity that is left for the will itself to be the determiner of the act that is to be the free act.

And here I would observe, in the *first* place, that to make out this scheme of liberty, the indifference must be *perfect* and *absolute*; there must be a perfect freedom from all antecedent

preponderation, or inclination. Because, if the will be already inclined, before it exerts its own sovereign power on itself, then its inclination is not wholly owing to itself: if when two opposites are proposed to the soul for its choice, the proposal does not find the soul wholly in a state of indifference, then it is not found in a state of liberty for mere self-determination. The least degree of an antecedent bias must be inconsistent with their notion of liberty. For so long as prior inclination possesses the will, and is not removed, it binds the will, so that it is utterly impossible that the will should act otherwise than agreeably to it. Surely the will cannot act or choose contrary to a remaining prevailing inclination of the will. To suppose otherwise, would be the same thing as to suppose that the will is *inclined* contrary to its present prevailing *inclination*, or contrary to what it is *inclined* to. That which the will chooses and prefers, that, all things considered, it preponderates and inclines to. It is equally impossible for the will to choose contrary to its own remaining and present preponderating inclination, as it is to *prefer* contrary to its own present *preference*, or *choose* contrary to its own present *choice*. The will, therefore, so long as it is under the influence of an old preponderating inclination, is not at liberty for a new free act, or any act that shall now be an act of self-determination. The act which is a self-determined free act, must be an act which the will determines in the possession and use of such a liberty, as consists in a freedom from every thing, which, if it were there, would make it impossible that the will, at that



time, should be otherwise than that way to which it tends.

If any one should say there is no need that the indifference should be perfect ; but although a former inclination and preference still remains, yet, if it be not very strong and violent, possibly the strength of the will may oppose and overcome it : this is grossly absurd ; for the strength of the will, let it be never so great, does not at all enable it to act one way, and the contrary way, both at the same time. It gives it no such sovereignty and command, as to cause itself to prefer and not to prefer at the same time, or to choose contrary to its own present choice.

Therefore, if there be the least degree of antecedent preponderation of the will, it must be perfectly abolished before the will can be at liberty to determine itself the contrary way. And if the will determines itself the same way, it was not a *free determination*, because the will is not wholly at liberty in so doing : its determination is not altogether *from itself*, but it was partly determined before, in its prior inclination ; and all the freedom the will exercises in the case is in an increase of inclination, which it gives itself, over and above what it had by foregoing bias ; so much is from itself, and so much is from perfect indifference. For, though the will had a previous tendency that way, yet as to that additional degree of inclination, it had no tendency ; therefore the previous tendency is of no consideration, with respect to the act wherein the will is free. So that it comes to the same thing which was said at first, that as to the act of the will,

wherein the will is free, there must be *perfect indifference or equilibrium*.

To illustrate this: if we should suppose a sovereign self-moving power in a natural body, but that the body is in motion already, by an antecedent bias; for instance, gravitation towards the centre of the earth; and has one degree of motion already, by virtue of that previous tendency; but by its self-moving power it adds one degree more to its motion, and moves so much more swiftly towards the centre of the earth than it would do by its gravity only: it is evident, that all that is owing to a self-moving power in this case, is the additional degree of motion; and that the other degree of motion which it had from gravity, is of no consideration in the case, does not help the effect of the free self-moving power in the least; the effect is just the same as if the body had received from itself one degree of motion from a state of perfect rest. So, if we should suppose a self-moving power given to the scale of a balance, which has a weight of one degree beyond the opposite scale; and we ascribe to it an ability to add to itself another degree of force the same way, by its self-moving power: this is just the same thing as to ascribe to it a power to give itself one degree of preponderation from a perfect equilibrium; and so much power as the scale has to give itself an over-balance from a perfect equipoise, so much self-moving self-preponderating power it has, and no more. So that its free power this way is always to be measured from perfect equilibrium.

I need say no more to prove, that if indifference

be essential to liberty, it must be perfect indifference; and that so far as the will is destitute of this, so far it is destitute of that freedom by which it is its own master, and in a capacity of being its own determiner, without being at all passive, or subject to the power and sway of something else, in its motions and determinations.

Having observed these things, let us now try whether this notion of the liberty of will consisting in indifference and equilibrium, and the will's self-determination in such a state, be not absurd and inconsistent.

And here I would lay down this as an axiom of undoubted truth; *that every free act is done in a state of freedom, and not only after such a state.* If an act of the will be an act wherein the soul is free, it must be exerted in a *state of freedom*, and in the *time of freedom*. It will not suffice, that the act immediately follows a state of liberty; but liberty must yet continue, and co-exist with the act; the soul remaining in possession of liberty. Because that is the notion of a free act of the soul, even an act wherein the soul *uses* or *exercises liberty*. But, if the soul is not, in the very time of the act, in the *possession* of liberty, it cannot at that time be in the *use* of it.

Now the question is, whether ever the soul of man puts forth an act of will, while it yet remains in a state of liberty, in that notion of a state of liberty, viz. as implying a state of indifference; or whether the soul ever exerts an act of choice or preference, while at that very time the will is in a perfect equilibrium, not inclining one way more than another.

The very putting of the question is sufficient to shew the absurdity of the affirmative answer; for, how ridiculous would it be for any body to insist, that the soul chooses one thing before another, when at the very same instant it is perfectly indifferent with respect to each! This is the same thing as to say, the soul prefers one thing to another, at the very same time that it has no preference.—Choice and preference can no more be in a state of indifference, than motion can be in a state of rest, or than the preponderation of the scale of a balance can be in a state of equilibrium. Motion may be the next moment after rest; but cannot co-exist with it in *any*, even the *least* part of it. So, choice may be immediately after a state of indifference, but has no co-existence with it: even the very beginning of it is not in a state of indifference. And, therefore, if this be liberty, no act of the will, in any degree, is ever performed in a state of liberty, or in the time of liberty. Volition and liberty are so far from agreeing together, and being essential one to another, that they are contrary one to another, and one excludes and destroys the other, as much as motion and rest, light and darkness, or life and death. So that the will acts not at all, does not so much as begin to act, in the time of such liberty: freedom is perfectly at an end, and has ceased to be, at the first moment of action; and, therefore, liberty cannot reach the action, to effect, or qualify it, or give it a denomination, or any part of it, any more than if it had ceased to be, twenty years before the action began. The moment that liberty ceases to be, it ceases to be a qualifica-

tion of any thing. If light and darkness succeed one another instantaneously, light qualifies nothing after it is gone out, to make any thing lightsome or bright, any more at the first moment of perfect darkness, than months or years after. Life denominates nothing *vital* at the first moment of perfect death. So, freedom, if it consists in, or implies, indifference, can denominate nothing free, at the first moment of preference or preponderation. Therefore it is manifest, that no liberty which the soul is possessed of, or ever uses, in any of its acts of volition, consists in indifference; and that the opinion of such as suppose that indifference belongs to the very essence of liberty, is to the highest degree absurd and contradictory.

If any one should imagine, that this manner of arguing is nothing but a trick and delusion; and, to evade the reasoning, should say, that the thing wherein the will exercises its liberty, is not in the act of choice or preponderation itself, but in *determining* itself to a certain choice or preference; that the act of the will wherein it is free, and uses its own sovereignty, consists in its *causing* or *determining* the *change* or *transition* from a state of indifference to a certain preference, or determining to give a certain turn to the balance, which has hitherto been even; and that this act the will exerts in a state of liberty, or while the will yet remains in equilibrium, and perfect master of itself:—I say, if any one chooses to express his notion of liberty after this, or some such manner, let us see if he can make out his matters any better than before.

What is asserted is, that the will, while it yet remains in perfect equilibrium, without prefer-



ence, determines to change itself from that state, and excite in itself a certain choice or preference. Now, let us see whether this does not come to the same absurdity we had before. If it be so, that the will, while it yet remains perfectly indifferent, determines to put itself out of that state, and give itself a certain preponderation; then, I would inquire, whether the soul does not determine this of choice; or whether the will's coming to a determination to do so, be not the same thing as the soul's coming to a choice to do so. If the soul does not determine this of choice, or in the exercise of choice, then it does not determine it voluntarily; and if the soul does not determine it voluntarily, or of its own *will*, then in what sense does its *will* determine it? And if the will does not determine it, then how is the *liberty of the will* exercised in the determination? What sort of liberty is exercised by the soul in those determinations, wherein there is no exercise of choice, which are not voluntary, and wherein the will is not concerned?—But if it be allowed, that this determination is an act of choice, and it be insisted on, that the soul, while it yet remains in a state of perfect indifference, chooses to put itself out of that state, and to turn itself one way; then the soul is already come to a choice, and chooses that way. And so we have the very same absurdity which we had before. Here is the soul in a state of choice, and in a state of equilibrium, both at the same time: the soul already choosing one way, while it remains in a state of perfect indifference, and has no choice of one way more than the other.—And, indeed, this manner of talking, though it may a little hide

the absurdity in the obscurity of expression, is more nonsensical, and increases the inconsistency. To say, the free act of the will, or the act which the will exerts in a state of freedom and indifference, does not imply preference in it, but is what the will does in order to causing or producing a preference, is as much as to say, the soul chooses (for to will and to choose are the same thing) without choice, and prefers without preference, in order to cause or produce the beginning of a preference, or the first choice. And that is, that the first choice is exerted without choice, in order to produce itself.

If any, to evade these things, should own, that a state of liberty and a state of indifference are not the same, and that the former may be without the latter; but should say, that indifference is still *essential* to the freedom of an act of will, in some sort, namely, as it is necessary to go immediately *before* it; it being essential to the freedom of an act of will that it should directly and immediately *arise out* of a state of indifference: still this will not help the cause of Arminian liberty, or make it consistent with itself. For, if the act springs immediately out of a state of indifference, then it does not arise from *antecedent* choice or preference. But, if the act arises directly out of a state of indifference, without any intervening choice to choose and determine it, then, the act not being determined by choice, is not determined by the will; the mind exercises no free choice in the affair, and free choice and free will have no hand in the determination of the act. Which is entirely inconsistent with their notion of the freedom of volition.

If any should suppose, that these difficulties

and absurdities may be avoided, by saying, that the liberty of the mind consists in a power to *suspend* the act of the will, and so to keep it in a state of *indifference* until there has been opportunity for consideration ; and so shall say, that however indifference is not essential to liberty in such a manner that the mind must make its choice in a state of indifference, which is an inconsistency, or that the act of will must spring immediately out of indifference, yet indifference may be essential to the liberty of acts of the will in this respect, viz. That liberty consists in a power of the mind to forbear or suspend the act of volition, and keep the mind in a state of indifference for the present, until there has been opportunity for proper deliberation : I say, if any one imagines that this helps the matter, it is a great mistake ; it reconciles no inconsistency, and relieves no difficulty, which the affair is attended with.—For here the following things must be observed :

1. That this *suspending* of volition, if there be properly any such thing, is itself an act of volition. If the mind determines to suspend its act, it determines it voluntarily ; it chooses, on some consideration, to suspend it. And this choice or determination is an act of the will : and, indeed, it is supposed to be so in the very hypothesis ; for, it is supposed that the liberty *of the will* consists in its power to do this, and that its doing it is the very thing wherein *the will exercises its liberty*. But, how can the will exercise liberty in it, if it be not an act of the will ? The liberty of the will is not exercised in any thing but what the will does.

2. This determining to suspend acting is not

only an act of the will, but it is supposed to be the only free act of the will ; because it is said, that *this is the thing wherein the liberty of the will consists*.—Now, if this be so, then this is all the act of will that we have to consider in this controversy, about the liberty of will, and in our inquiries, wherein the liberty of man consists. And now the fore-mentioned difficulties remain : the former question returns upon us, viz. Wherein consists the freedom of the will *in those acts* wherein it is free ? And if this act of determining a suspension be the only act in which the will is free, then, wherein consists the will's freedom with respect to this act of suspension ? And how is indifference essential to this act ? The answer must be, according to what is supposed in the evasion under consideration—That the liberty of the will, in this act of suspension, consists in a power to suspend even this act, until there has been opportunity for thorough deliberation. But, this will be to plunge directly into the grossest nonsense : for, it is the act of suspension itself that we are speaking of ; and there is no room for a space of deliberation and suspension in order to determine whether we will suspend or no. For that supposes, that even suspension itself may be deferred ; which is absurd : for the very deferring the determination of suspension, to consider whether we will suspend or no, will be actually suspending. For, during the space of suspension, to consider whether to suspend the act is *ipso facto* suspended. There is no medium between suspending to act, and immediately acting ; and, therefore, no possibility of avoiding either the one or the other one moment.

And besides, this is attended with ridiculous absurdity another way : for now it is come to that, that liberty consists wholly in the mind having power to suspend its determination whether to suspend or no ; that there may be time for consideration, whether it be best to suspend. And if liberty consists in this only, then this is the liberty under consideration : we have to inquire now, how liberty with respect to this act of suspending a determination of suspension, consists in indifference, or how indifference is essential to it. The answer, according to the hypothesis we are upon, must be, that it consists in a power of suspending even this last-mentioned act, to have time to consider whether to suspend that. And then the same difficulties and inquiries return over again with respect to that ; and so on, for ever. Which, if it would shew any thing, would shew only that there is no such thing as a free act. It drives the exercise of freedom back *in infinitum* ; and that is to drive it out of the world.

And besides all this, there is a delusion, and a latent gross contradiction, in the affair another way ; inasmuch as, in explaining how, or in what respect, the will is free with regard to a particular act of volition, it is said, that its liberty consists in a power to determine to suspend *that act*, which places liberty not in *that act* of volition which the inquiry is about, but altogether in another antecedent act. Which contradicts the thing supposed in both the question and answer. The question is, wherein consists the mind's liberty *in any particular act* of volition ? And the answer, in pretending to shew wherein lies the mind's liberty *in that act*,



in effect says, it does not lie in that act at all, but in another, viz. a volition *to suspend that act*. And, therefore, the answer is both contradictory, and altogether impertinent and beside the purpose. For, it does not shew wherein the liberty of the will consists in the act in question; instead of that, it supposes it does not consist in that act at all, but in another distinct from it, even a volition to suspend that act, and take time to consider of it. And no account is pretended to be given wherein the mind is free with respect to that act, wherein this answer supposes the liberty of the mind indeed consists, viz. the act of suspension, or of determining the suspension.

On the whole, it is exceedingly manifest, that the liberty of the mind does not consist in indifference, and that indifference is not essential or necessary to it, or at all belonging to it, as the Arminians suppose; that opinion being full of nothing but absurdity and self-contradiction.

#### SECTION VIII.

CONCERNING THE SUPPOSED LIBERTY OF THE WILL, AS  
OPPOSITE TO ALL NECESSITY.

IT is a thing chiefly insisted on by Arminians, in this controversy, as a thing most important and essential in human liberty, that volitions, or the acts of the will, are *contingent* events; understanding contingency as opposite, not only to constraint, but to all necessity. Therefore, I would particularly consider this matter. And,

1. I would inquire, whether there is, or can be, any such thing as a volition which is contingent in such a sense, as not only to come to

pass without any necessity of constraint or co-action, but, also, without a *necessity of consequence*, or an infallible connexion with any thing foregoing.

2. Whether, if it were so, this would at all help the cause of liberty.

I would consider whether volition is a thing that ever does, or can come to pass, in this manner, contingently.

And here it must be remembered, that it has been already shewn, that nothing can ever come to pass without a cause, or reason why it exists in this manner rather than another; and the evidence of this has been particularly applied to the acts of the will. Now, if this be so, it will demonstrably follow, that the acts of the will are never contingent, or without necessity, in the sense spoken of; inasmuch as those things which have a cause or reason of their existence, must be connected with their cause. This appears by the following considerations.

1. For an event to have a cause and ground of its existence, and yet not to be connected with its cause, is an inconsistency. For, if the event be not connected with the cause, it is not dependent on the cause; its existence is, as it were, loose from its influence, and may attend it, or may not; it being a mere contingency, whether it follows or attends the influence of the cause, or not: and that is the same thing as not to be dependent on it. And to say, the event is not dependent on its cause, is absurd: it is the same thing as to say, it is not its cause, nor the event the effect of it; for dependence on the influence of a cause is the very notion of an effect. If there be no such relation between

one thing and another, consisting in the connexion and dependence of one thing on the influence of another, then it is certain there is no such relation between them as is signified by the terms, *cause* and *effect*. So far as an event is dependent on a cause and connected with it, so much causality is there in the case, and no more. The cause does, or brings to pass, no more in any event, than is dependent on it. If we say, the connexion and dependence is not total, but partial, and that the effect, though it has some connexion and dependence, yet is not entirely dependent on it; that is the same thing as to say, that not all that is in the event is an effect of that cause, but that only part of it arises from thence, and part some other way.

2. If there are some events which are not necessarily connected with their causes, then it will follow, that there are some things which come to pass without any cause, contrary to the supposition. For, if there be any event which was not necessarily connected with the influence of the cause under such circumstances, then it was contingent whether it would attend or follow the influence of the cause, or no; it might have followed, and it might not, when the cause was the same, its influence the same, and under the same circumstances. And if so, why did it follow, rather than not follow? There is no cause or reason of this. Therefore, here is something without any cause or reason why it is, viz. the following of the effect on the influence of the cause, with which it was not necessarily connected. If there be a necessary connexion of the effect on any thing antecedent,

then we may suppose, that sometimes the event will follow the cause, and sometimes not, when the cause is the same, and in every respect in the same state and circumstances. And what can be the cause and reason of this strange phenomenon, even this diversity, that in one instance, the effect should follow, in another, not? It is evident by the supposition, that this is wholly without any cause or ground. Here is something in the present manner of the existence of things, and state of the world, that is absolutely without a cause. Which is contrary to the supposition, and contrary to what has been before demonstrated.

3. To suppose there are some events which have a cause and ground of their existence, that yet are not necessarily connected with their cause, is to suppose that they have a cause which is not their cause. Thus, if the effect be not necessarily connected with the cause, with its influence, and influential circumstances; then, as I observed before, it is a thing possible and supposable, that the cause may sometimes exert the same influence, under the same circumstances, and yet the effect not follow. And if this actually happens in any instance, this instance is a proof, in fact, that the influence of the cause is not sufficient to produce the effect. For, if it had been sufficient, it would have done it. And yet, by the supposition, in another instance, the same cause, with perfectly the same influence, and when all circumstances which have any influence are the same, it *was followed* with the effect. By which it is manifest, that the effect in this last instance was not owing to the influence of the

cause, but must come to pass some other way. For it was proved before, that the influence of the cause was not sufficient to produce the effect. And if it was not sufficient to produce it, then the production of it could not be owing to that influence, but must be owing to something else, or owing to nothing. And if the effect be not owing to the influence of the cause, then it is not the cause. Which brings us to the contradiction, of a cause, and no cause; that which is the ground and reason of the existence of a thing, and at the same time is not the ground and reason of its existence, nor is sufficient to be so.

If the matter be not already so plain as to render any further reasoning upon it impertinent, I would say, that that which seems to be the cause in the supposed case, can be no cause; its power and influence having, on a full trial, proved insufficient to produce such an effect: and if it be not sufficient to produce it, then it does not produce it. To say otherwise, is to say, there is power to do that which there is not power to do. If there be in a cause sufficient power exerted, and in circumstances sufficient to produce an effect, and so the effect be actually produced at *one time*; these things all concurring, will produce the effect at *all times*. And so we may turn it the other way; that which proves not sufficient at one time, cannot be sufficient at another, with precisely the same influential circumstances. And, therefore, if the effect follows, it is not owing to that cause; unless the different time be a circumstance which has influence: but that is contrary to the supposition; for it is supposed that all



circumstances that have influence are the same. And besides, this would be to suppose the time to be the cause ; which is contrary to the supposition of the other thing being the cause. But, if merely diversity of time has no influence, then it is evident that it is as much of an absurdity to say, the cause was sufficient to produce the effect at one time, and not at another ; as to say, that it is sufficient to produce the effect at a certain time, and yet not sufficient to produce the same effect at the same time.

On the whole, it is clearly manifest, that every effect has a necessary connexion with its cause, or with that which is the true ground and reason of its existence. And, therefore, if there be no event without a cause, as was proved before, then no event whatsoever is contingent in the manner that Arminians suppose the free acts of the will to be contingent.

### SECTION IX.

#### OF THE CONNEXION OF THE ACTS OF THE WILL WITH THE DICTATES OF THE UNDERSTANDING.

IT is manifest, that the acts of the will are none of them contingent in such a sense as to be without all necessity, or so as not to be necessary with a necessity of consequence and connexion ; because every act of the will is some way connected with the understanding, and is as the greatest apparent good is, in the manner which has already been explained ; namely, that the soul always wills or chooses that which, in the present view of the mind, considered in the whole of that view, and all that belongs to

it, appears most agreeable. Because, as was observed before, nothing is more evident than that, when men act voluntarily, and do what they please, then they do what appears most agreeable to them; and to say otherwise, would be as much as to affirm, that men do not choose what appears to suit them best, or what seems most pleasing to them; or that they do not choose what they prefer. Which brings the matter to a contradiction.

And it is very evident in itself, that the acts of the will have some connexion with the dictates or views of the understanding; so this is allowed by some of the chief of the Arminian writers, particularly by Dr. Whitby and Dr. Samuel Clarke. Dr. Turnbull, though a great enemy to the doctrine of necessity, allows the same thing. In his "Christian Philosophy," (p. 196) he with much approbation cites another philosopher, as of the same mind, in these words: "No man (says an excellent philosopher) sets himself about any thing, but upon some view or other, which serves him for a reason for what he does; and whatsoever faculties he employs, the understanding, with such light as it has, well or ill formed, constantly leads; and by that light, true or false, all her operative powers are directed. The will itself, how absolute and incontrollable soever it may be thought, never fails in its obedience to the dictates of the understanding. Temples have their sacred images; and we see what influence they have always had over a great part of mankind; but in truth, the ideas and images in men's minds are the invisible powers that

constantly govern them ; and to these they all pay universally a ready submission."

But, whether this be in a just consistence with themselves, and their own notions of liberty, I desire may now be impartially considered.

Dr. Whitby plainly supposes, that the acts and determinations of the will always follow the understanding's apprehension or view of the greatest good to be obtained, or evil to be avoided ; or, in other words, that the determinations of the will constantly and infallibly follow these two things in the understanding: 1. The *degree of good* to be obtained, and evil to be avoided, proposed to the understanding, and apprehended, viewed, and taken notice of by it. 2. The *degree of the understanding's view*, notice, or apprehension of that good or evil ; which is increased by attention and consideration. That this is an opinion he is exceeding peremptory in (as he is in every opinion which he maintains in his controversy with the Calvinists), with disdain of the contrary opinion, as absurd and self-contradictory, will appear by the following words of his, in his discourse on the Five Points.\*

" Now, it is certain, that what naturally makes the understanding to perceive, is evidence proposed and apprehended, considered or adverted to : for nothing else can be requisite to make us come to the knowledge of the truth. Again, what makes the will choose, is something approved by the understanding ; and, consequently, appearing to the soul as good. And whatsoever it refuseth, is something represented

\* Second edit. pp. 211, 212, 213.

by the understanding, and so appearing to the will as evil. Whence all that God requires of us is and can be only this; to refuse the evil, and choose the good. Wherefore, to say that evidence proposed, apprehended, and considered, is not sufficient to make the understanding approve; or that the greatest good proposed, the greatest evil threatened, when equally believed and reflected on, is not sufficient to engage the will to choose the good and refuse the evil, is in effect to say, *that which alone doth move the will to choose or to refuse*, is not sufficient to engage it so to do; which, being contradictory to itself, must of necessity be false. Be it then so, that we naturally have an aversion to the truths proposed to us in the Gospel; that only can make us indisposed to attend to them, but cannot hinder our conviction, when we do apprehend them, and attend to them. Be it, that there is in us also a renitency to the good we are to choose; that only can indispose us to believe it is, and to approve it as our chiefest good. Be it, that we are prone to the evil that we should decline; that only can render it the more difficult for us to believe it is the worst of evils. But yet, *what we do really believe to be our chiefest good, will still be chosen; and what we apprehend to be the worst of evils, will, whilst we do continue under that conviction, be refused by us.* It, therefore, can be only requisite, in order to these ends, that the good Spirit should so illuminate our understandings, that we, attending to, and considering, what lies before us, should apprehend; and be convinced of our duty; and that the blessings of the Gospel should be so propounded to us, as that we may discern them to

be our chiefest good ; and the miseries it threateneth, so as we may be convinced that they are the worst of evils ; that we may choose the one, and refuse the other.”

Here let it be observed, how plainly and peremptorily it is asserted, *that the greatest good proposed, and the greatest evil threatened, when equally believed and reflected on, is sufficient to engage the will to choose the good, and refuse the evil, and is that alone which doth move the will to choose or to refuse ; and that it is contradictory to itself, to suppose otherwise ; and, therefore, must of necessity be false ; and then what we do really believe to be our chiefest good, will still be chosen ; and what we apprehend to be the worst of evils, will, whilst we continue under that conviction, be refused by us.* Nothing could have been said more to the purpose, fully to signify and declare, that the determinations of the will must evermore follow the illumination, conviction, and notice of the understanding, with regard to the greatest good and evil proposed, reckoning both the degree of good and evil understood, and the degree of understanding, notice, and conviction, of that proposed good and evil ; and that it is thus necessarily, and can be otherwise in no instance ; because it is asserted, that it implies a contradiction, to suppose it ever to be otherwise.

I am sensible, the doctor's aim in these assertions is against the Calvinists ; to shew, in opposition to them, that there is no need of any physical operation of the Spirit of God on the will, to change and determine that to a good choice, but that God's operation and assistance is only moral, suggesting ideas to the under-



standing; which he supposes to be enough, if those ideas are attended to, infallibly to obtain the end. But, whatever his design was, nothing can more directly and fully prove, that every determination of the will in choosing and refusing, *is necessary*; directly contrary to his own notion of the liberty of the will. For, if the determination of the will evermore in this manner follows the light, conviction, and view of the understanding, concerning the greatest good and evil, and this be that alone which moves the will, and it be a contradiction to suppose otherwise; then it is *necessarily* so, the will necessarily follows this light or view of the understanding, not only in some of its acts, but in every act of choosing and refusing. So that the will does not determine itself in any one of its own acts; but all its acts, every act of choice and refusal, depends on, and is necessarily connected with, some antecedent cause; which cause is not the will itself, nor any act of its own, nor any thing pertaining to that faculty, but something belonging to another faculty, whose acts go before the will, in all its acts, and govern and determine them every one.

Here, if it should be replied, that although it be true, that, according to the doctor, the final determination of the will always depends upon, and is infallibly connected with, the understanding's conviction, and notice of the greatest good; yet the acts of the will are not necessary, because that conviction and notice of the understanding is first dependent on a preceding act of the will, in determining to attend to, and take notice of, the evidence exhibited; by which means the mind obtains that degree of convic-

tion, which is sufficient and effectual to determine the consequent and ultimate choice of the will; and that the will with regard to that preceding act, whereby it determines whether to attend or no, is not necessary; and that in this the liberty of the will consists, that when God holds forth sufficient objective light, the will is at liberty whether to command the attention of the mind to it.

Nothing can be more weak and inconsiderate than such a reply as this. For that preceding act of the will, in determining to attend and consider, still is an *act of the will* (it is so to be sure, if the *liberty of the will* consists in it, as is supposed), and if it be an act of the will, it is an act of *choice or refusal*. And, therefore, if what the doctor asserts be true, it is determined by some antecedent light in the understanding, concerning the greatest apparent good or evil. For he asserts, it is that light *which alone doth move the will to choose or refuse*. And, therefore, the will must be moved by that in choosing to attend to the objective light offered, in order to another consequent act of choice: so that this act is no less necessary than the other. And if we suppose another act of the will, still preceding both these mentioned, to determine both, still that also must be an act of the will, and an act of choice; and so must, by the same principles, be infallibly determined by some certain degree of light in the understanding concerning the greatest good. And let us suppose as many acts of the will, one preceding another, as we please, yet they are every one of them necessarily determined by a certain degree of light in the understanding, concerning the

greatest and most eligible good in that case; and so, not one of them free, according to Dr. Whitby's notion of freedom. And if it be said, the reason, why men do not attend to light held forth, is because of ill habits contracted by evil acts committed before, whereby their minds are indisposed to attend to, and consider of, the truth held forth to them by God; the difficulty is not at all avoided: still the question returns, What determined the will in those preceding evil acts? It must, by Dr. Whitby's principles, still be the view of the understanding concerning the greatest good and evil. If this view of the understanding be *that alone which doth move the will to choose or refuse*, as the doctor asserts, then every act of *choice* or *refusal*, from a man's first existence, is moved and determined by this view; and this view of the understanding exciting and governing the act, must be before the act: and, therefore, the will is necessarily determined, in every one of its acts, from a man's first existence, by a cause beside the will, and a cause that does not proceed from, or depend on, any act of the will at all. Which at once utterly abolishes the doctor's whole scheme of liberty of will; and he, at one stroke, has cut the sinews of all his arguments from the goodness, righteousness, faithfulness, and sincerity of God, in his commands, promises, threatenings, calls, invitations, expostulations; which he makes use of, under the heads of reprobation, election, universal redemption, sufficient and effectual grace, and the freedom of the will of man; and has enervated and made vain all those exclamations against the doctrine of the Calvinists, as charging God with manifest

unrighteousness, unfaithfulness, hypocrisy, fallaciousness, and cruelty ; which he has over, and over, and over again, numberless times in his book.

Dr. Samuel Clarke, in his “ Demonstration of the Being and Attributes of God,”\* to evade the argument to prove the necessity of volition, from its necessary connexion with the last dictate of the understanding, supposes the latter not to be diverse from the act of the will itself. But, if it be so, it will not alter the case as to the evidence of the necessity of the act of the will. If the dictate of the understanding be the very same with the determination of the will or choice, as Dr. Clarke supposes, then this determination is no *fruit* or *effect of choice* : and if so, no liberty of choice has any hand in it : as to volition or choice, it is necessary, that is, choice cannot prevent it. If the last dictate of the understanding be the same with the determination of volition itself, then the existence of that determination must be necessary as to volition ; inasmuch as volition can have no opportunity to determine whether it shall exist or no, it having existence already before volition has opportunity to determine any thing. It is itself the very rise and existence of volition. But a thing, after it exists, has no opportunity to determine as to its own existence ; it is too late for that.

If liberty consists in that which Arminians suppose, viz. in the will determining its own acts, having free opportunity, and being without all necessity ; this is the same as to say, that liberty consists in the soul having power and opportunity to have what determinations of

\* Sixth edit. p. 93.

the will it pleases or chooses. And if the determinations of the will, and the last dictates of the understanding, be the same thing, then liberty consists in the mind having power to have what dictates of the understanding it pleases, having opportunity to choose its own dictates of understanding. But this is absurd ; for it is to make the determination of choice prior to the dictate of the understanding, and the ground of it, which cannot consist with the dictate of understanding being the determination of choice itself.

Here is no way to do in this case, but only to recur to the old absurdity of one determination before another, and the cause of it ; and another before that, determining that ; and so on, *in infinitum*. If the last dictate of the understanding be the determination of the will itself, and the soul be free with regard to that dictate, in the Arminian notion of freedom ; then the soul, before that dictate of its understanding exists, voluntarily and according to its own choice determines, in every case, what that dictate of the understanding shall be ; otherwise, that dictate, as to the will, is necessary, and the acts determined by it must also be necessary. So that here is a determination of the mind prior to that dictate of the understanding ; an act of choice going before it, choosing and determining what that dictate of the understanding shall be : and this preceding act of choice, being a free act of will, must also be the same with another last dictate of the understanding : and if the mind also be free in that dictate of understanding, that must be determined still by another ; and so on, for ever.



Besides, if the dictate of the understanding, and determination of the will, be the same, this confounds the understanding and will, and makes them the same. Whether they be the same or no, I will not now dispute ; but only would observe, that if it be so, and the Arminian notion of liberty consists in a self-determining power in the understanding, free of all necessity ; being independent, undetermined by any thing prior to its own acts and determinations ; and the more the understanding is thus independent, and sovereign over its own determinations, the more free. By this, therefore, the freedom of the soul, as a moral agent, must consist in the independence of the understanding on any evidence or appearance of things, or any thing whatsoever, that stands forth to the view of the mind, prior to the understanding's determination. And what a sort of liberty is this ! consisting in an ability, freedom, and easiness of judging, either according to evidence, or against it ; having a sovereign command over itself at all times, to judge either agreeably or disagreeably to what is plainly exhibited to its own view. Certainly, it is no liberty that renders persons the proper subjects of persuasive reasoning, arguments, expostulations, and such like moral means and inducements. The use of which with mankind is a main argument of the Arminians, to defend their notion of liberty without all necessity. For according to this, the more free men are, the less they are under the government of such means, less subject to the power of evidence and reason, and more independent on their influence in their determinations.

And whether the understanding and will are

the same or no, as Dr. Clarke seems to suppose, yet, in order to maintain the Arminian notion of liberty without necessity, the free will is not determined by the understanding, nor necessarily connected with the understanding; and the further from such connexion, the greater the freedom. And when the liberty is full and complete, the determinations of the will have no connexion at all with the dictates of the understanding. And if so, in vain are all the applications to the understanding, in order to induce to any free virtuous act; and so in vain are all instructions, counsels, invitations, exhortations, and all arguments and persuasives whatsoever; for these are but applications to the understanding, and a clear and lively exhibition of the objects of choice to the mind's view. But if, after all, the will must be self-determined, and independent on the understanding, to what purpose are things thus represented to the understanding, in order to determine the choice?

## SECTION X.

VOLITION NECESSARILY CONNECTED WITH THE INFLUENCE OF MOTIVES: WITH PARTICULAR OBSERVATIONS ON THE GREAT INCONSISTENCE OF MR. CHUBB'S ASSERTIONS AND REASONINGS ABOUT THE FREEDOM OF THE WILL.

THAT every act of the will has some cause, and consequently (by what has been already proved) has a necessary connexion with its cause, and so is necessary by a necessity of connexion and consequence, is evident by this, that every act of the will whatsoever is excited by some motive: which is manifest, because, if

the will or mind, in willing and choosing after the manner that it does, is excited so to do by no motive or inducement, then it has no end which it proposes to itself, or pursues, in so doing ; it aims at nothing, and seeks nothing. And if it seeks nothing, then it does not go after any thing, or exert any inclination or preference towards any thing. Which brings the matter to a contradiction ; because, for the mind to will something, and for it to go after something by an act of preference and inclination, are the same thing.

But if every act of the will is excited by a motive, then that motive is the cause of the act of the will. If the acts of the will are excited by motives, then motives are the causes of their being excited ; or, which is the same thing, the cause of their being put forth into act and existence. And if so, the existence of the acts of the will is properly the effect of their motives. Motives do nothing as motives or inducements, but by their influence ; and so much as is done by their influence is the effect of them. For that is the notion of an effect, something that is brought to pass by the influence of another thing.

And if volitions are properly the effects of their motives, then they are necessarily connected with their motives ; every effect and event being, as was proved before, necessarily connected with that which is the proper ground and reason of its existence. Thus, it is manifest that volition is necessary, and is not from any self-determining power in the will ; the volition, which is caused by previous motive and inducement, is not caused by the will exercising a

sovereign power over itself, to determine, cause, and excite volitions in itself. This is not consistent with the will's acting in a state of indifference and equilibrium, to determine itself to a preference; for the way in which motives operate, is by biassing the will, and giving it a certain inclination or preponderation one way.

Here it may be proper to observe, that Mr. Chubb, in his Collection of tracts on various subjects, has advanced a scheme of liberty which is greatly divided against itself, and thoroughly subversive of itself; and that many ways.

I. He is abundant in asserting, that the will, in all its acts, is influenced by motive and excitement; and that this is the *previous ground and reason* of all its acts, and that it is never otherwise in any instance. He says, p. 262: *No action can take place without some motive to excite it.* And in p. 263: *Volition cannot take place without some PREVIOUS reason or motive to induce it.* And in p. 310: *Action would not take place without some reason or motive to induce it; it being absurd to suppose, that the active faculty would be exerted without some PREVIOUS reason to dispose the mind to action.* So also, p. 257. And he speaks of these things, as what we may be absolutely certain of, and which are the foundation, the only foundation we have, of a certainty of the moral perfections of God. Pages 252—255, 261—264.

And yet, at the same time, by his scheme, the influence of motives upon us, to excite to action, and to be actually a ground of volition, is *consequent* on the volition or choice of the mind. For he very greatly insists upon it, that in all free



actions, before the mind is the subject of those volitions which motives excite, it chooses to be so. It chooses, whether it will comply with the motive which presents itself in view, or not; and when various motives are presented, it chooses which it will yield to, and which it will reject. So, p. 256: *Every man has power to act, or to refrain from acting, agreeably with, or contrary to, any motive that presents.* P. 257: *Every man is at liberty to act, or refrain from acting, agreeably with, or contrary to, what each of these motives, considered singly, would excite him to.— Man has power, and is as much at liberty, to reject the motive that does prevail, as he has power, and is at liberty, to reject those motives that do not.* And so, pp. 310, 311: *In order to constitute a moral agent, it is necessary that he should have power to act, or to refrain from acting, upon such moral motives as he pleases.* And to the like purpose in many other places. According to these things, the will acts first, and chooses or refuses to comply with the motive that is presented, before it falls under its prevailing influence: and it is first determined by the mind's pleasure or choice, what motives it will be induced by, before it is induced by them.

Now, how can these things hang together? How can the mind first act, and by its act of *volition* and *choice* determine what motives shall be the ground and reason of its *volition* and *choice*? For this supposes the choice is already made before the motive has its effect; and that the volition is already exerted before the motive prevails, so as actually to be the ground of the volition; and makes the prevailing of the motive, the consequence of the volition, which yet



it is the ground of. If the mind has already chosen to comply with a motive, and to yield to its excitement, it does not need to yield to it after this: for the thing is effected already that the motive would excite to, and the will is beforehand with the excitement; and the excitement comes in too late, and is needless and in vain afterwards. If the mind has already chosen to yield to a motive which *invites* to a thing, that implies, and in fact is, a choosing the thing *invited to*; and the very act of choice is before the influence of the motive which induces, and is the ground of the choice: the son is beforehand with the father that begets him: the choice is supposed to be the ground of that influence of the motive, which very influence is supposed to be the ground of the choice. And so, *vice versâ*, the choice is supposed to be the consequence of the influence of the motive, which influence of the motive is the consequence of that very choice.

And besides, if the will acts first towards the motive before it falls under its influence, and the prevailing of the motive upon it to induce it to act and choose, be the fruit and consequence of its act and choice, then, how is the motive a *PREVIOUS* ground and reason of the act and choice, so that *in the nature of the things, volition cannot take place without some PREVIOUS reason and motive to induce it*; and that this act is consequent upon, and follows the motive? Which things Mr. Chubb often asserts, as of certain and undoubted truth. So that the very same motive is both *previous* and *consequent*, both before and after, both the ground and fruit of the very same thing!

II. Agreeable to the fore-mentioned inconsistent notion of the will's first acting towards the motive, choosing whether it will comply with it, in order to its becoming a ground of the will's acting, before any act of volition can take place, Mr. Chubb frequently calls motives and excitements to the action of the will, *the passive ground or reason of that action*. Which is a remarkable phrase; than which I presume there is none more unintelligible, and void of distinct and consistent meaning, in all the writings of Duns Scotus or Thomas Aquinas. When he represents the motive to action or volition as passive, he must mean—passive in that affair, or passive with respect to that action, which he speaks of; otherwise it is nothing to his purpose, or relating to the design of his argument: he must mean (if that can be called a meaning), that the motive to volition is first acted *upon* or *towards* by the volition choosing to yield to it, making it a ground of action, or determining to fetch its influence from thence; and so to make it a previous ground of its own excitation and existence. Which is the same absurdity, as if one should say, that the soul of man, or any other thing, should, previous to its existing, choose what cause it would come into existence by, and should act upon its cause to fetch influence from thence to bring it into being; and so its cause should be a passive ground of its existence!

Mr. Chubb does very plainly suppose motive or excitement to be the *ground of the being* of volition. He speaks of it as the ground or reason of the EXERTION of an act of the will, pp. 391, 392, and expressly says, that *volition cannot TAKE PLACE* without some *previous ground or*

*motive to induce it*, p. 363. And he speaks of the act as *FROM the motive*, and *FROM THE INFLUENCE of the motive*, p. 352; and from *the influence that the motive has on the man for the PRODUCTION of an action*, p. 317. Certainly, there is no need of multiplying words about this; it is easily judged, whether motive can be the ground of volition being exerted and taking place, so that the very production of it is from the influence of the motive, and yet the motive, before it becomes the ground of the volition, is passive, or acted upon by the volition. But this I will say, that a man, who insists so much on clearness of meaning in others, and is so much in blaming their confusion and inconsistency, ought, if he was able, to have explained his meaning in this phrase of *passive ground of action*, so as to shew it not to be confused and inconsistent.

If any should suppose that Mr. Chubb, when he speaks of motive as a *passive ground of action*; does not mean passive with regard to that volition which it is the ground of, but some other antecedent volition (though his purpose and argument, and whole discourse, will by no means allow of such a supposition), yet it would not help the matter in the least. For (1.) if we suppose there to be an act of volition or choice, by which the soul chooses to yield to the invitation of a motive to another volition, by which the soul chooses something else; both these supposed volitions are in effect the very same. A volition, or choosing to yield to the force of a motive inviting to choose something, comes to just the same thing as choosing the thing which the motive invites to, as I observed before. So

that here can be no room to help the matter, by a distinction of two volitions. (2.) If the motive be passive with respect, not to the same volition that the motive excites to, but one truly distinct and prior; yet, by Mr. Chubb, that prior volition cannot take place, without a motive or excitement, as a *previous ground* of its existence. For he insists, that *it is absurd to suppose any volition should take place without some previous motive to induce it*. So that at last it comes to just the same absurdity; for if *every* volition must have a previous motive, then the very *first* in the whole series must be excited by a previous motive; and yet the motive to that first volition is passive; but cannot be passive with regard to another antecedent volition, because, by the supposition, it is the very first: therefore, if it be passive with respect to any volition, it must be so with regard to that very volition that it is the ground of, and that is excited by it.

III. Though Mr. Chubb asserts, as above, that every volition has some motive, and that *in the nature of the thing, no volition can take place without some motive to induce it*; yet he asserts, that volition does not always follow the strongest motive; or, in other words, is not governed by any superior strength of the motive that is followed, beyond motives to the contrary, previous to the volition itself. His own words, p. 258, are as follow: " Though with regard to physical causes, that which is strongest always prevails, yet it is otherwise with regard to moral causes. Of these, sometimes the stronger, sometimes the weaker, prevails. And the ground of this difference is evident,



namely, that what we call moral causes, strictly speaking, are no causes at all, but barely passive reasons of, or excitements to, the action, or to the refraining from acting: which excitements we have power, or are at liberty, to comply with or reject, as I have shewed above." And so, throughout the paragraph, he, in a variety of phrases, insists, that the will is not always determined by the strongest motive, unless by strongest we preposterously mean actually prevailing in the event; which is not in the motive, but in the will; but that the will is not always determined by the motive, which is strongest, by any strength previous to the volition itself. And he elsewhere does abundantly assert, that the will is determined by no superior strength or advantage that motives have from any constitution or state of things, or any circumstances whatsoever, previous to the actual determination of the will. And indeed his whole discourse on human liberty implies it, his whole scheme is founded upon it.

But these things cannot stand together. — There is such a thing as a diversity of strength in motives to choice, previous to the choice itself. Mr. Chubb himself supposes, that they do *previously invite, induce, excite, and dispose the mind to action*. This implies that they have something in themselves that is *inviting*, some tendency to *induce* and *dispose* to volition, previous to volition itself. And if they have in themselves this nature and tendency, doubtless they have it in certain limited degrees, which are capable of diversity; and some have it in greater degrees, others in less; and they that have most of this tendency, considered with all



their nature and circumstances, previous to volition, they are the strongest motives ; and those that have least are the weakest motives.

Now, if volition sometimes does not follow the motive which is strongest, or has most previous tendency or advantage, all things considered, to induce or excite it, but follows the weakest, or that which, as it stands previously in the mind's view, has least tendency to induce it : herein the will apparently acts wholly without motive, without any previous reason to dispose the mind to it, contrary to what the same author supposes. The act, wherein the will must proceed without a previous motive to induce it, is the act of preferring the weakest motive. For how absurd is it to say, the mind sees previous reason in the motive to prefer that motive before the other ; and at the same time to suppose, that there is nothing in the motive, in its nature, state, or any circumstance of it whatsoever, as it stands in the previous view of the mind, that gives it any preference ; but, on the contrary, the other motive that stands in competition with it, in all these respects, has most belonging to it that is inviting and moving, and has most of a tendency to choice and preference. This is certainly as much as to say, there is previous ground and reason in the motive for the act of preference, and yet no previous reason for it. By the supposition, as to all that is in the two rival motives, which tends to preference, previous to the act of preference, it is not in that which is preferred, but wholly in the other ; because appearing superior strength, and all appearing preferableness, is in that ; and yet Mr. Chubb supposes, that

the act of preference is from *previous ground and reason* in the motive which is preferred. But are these things consistent? Can there be previous ground in a thing for an event that takes place, and yet no previous tendency in it to that event? If one thing follows another, without any previous tendency to its following, then I should think it very plain that it follows it without any manner of previous reason why it should follow.

Yea, in this case, Mr. Chubb supposes that the event follows an antecedent or a previous thing, as the ground of its existence, not only that has *no tendency* to it, but a *contrary tendency*. The event is, the preference which the mind gives to that motive which is weaker, as it stands in the previous view of the mind; the immediate antecedent is, the view the mind has of the two rival motives conjunctly; in which previous view of the mind, all the preferableness, or previous tendency to preference, is supposed to be on the other side, or in the contrary motive; and all the unworthiness of preference, and so previous tendency to comparative neglect, rejection, or undervaluing, is on that side which is preferred: and yet in this view of the mind is supposed to be the *previous ground or reason* of this act of preference, *exciting it and disposing the mind to it*. Which I leave the reader to judge, whether it be absurd or not. If it be not, then it is not absurd to say, that the previous tendency of an antecedent to a consequent, is the ground and reason why that consequent does not follow; and the want of a previous tendency to an event, yea, a tendency to the contrary, is the

true ground and reason why that event does follow.

An act of choice or preference is a comparative act, wherein the mind acts with reference to two or more things that are compared, and stand in competition in the mind's view. If the mind, in this comparative act, prefers that which appears inferior in the comparison, then the mind herein acts absolutely without motive, or inducement, or any temptation whatsoever. Then, if a hungry man has the offer of two sorts of food, both which he finds an appetite to, but has a stronger appetite to one than the other, and there be no circumstances or excitements whatsoever in the case to induce him to take either the one or the other, but merely his appetite; if, in the choice he makes between them, he chooses that which he has least appetite to, and refuses that to which he has the strongest appetite, this is a choice made absolutely without previous motive, excitement, reason, or temptation, as much as if he were perfectly without all appetite to either: because his volition in this case is a comparative act, attending and following a comparative view of the food which he chooses, viewing it as related to, and compared with, the other sort of food, in which view his preference has absolutely no previous ground, yea, is against all previous ground and motive. And if there be any principle in man, from whence an act of choice may arise after this manner, from the same principle, volition may arise wholly without motive on either side. If the mind in its volition can go beyond motive, then it can go without motive; for when it is beyond the motive, it is out of the reach of the

motive, out of the limits of its influence, and so without motive. If volition goes beyond the strength and tendency of motive, and especially if it goes against its tendency, this demonstrates the independence of volition or motive. And if so, no reason can be given for what Mr. Chubb so often asserts, even that *in the nature of things volition cannot take place without a motive to induce it.*

If the Most High should endow a balance with agency or activity of nature, in such a manner, that when unequal weights are put into the scales, its agency could enable it to cause that scale to descend which has the least weight, and so to raise the greater weight; this would clearly demonstrate, that the motion of the balance does not depend on weights in the scales, at least as much as if the balance should move itself, when there is no weight in either scale. And the activity of the balance, which is sufficient to move itself against the greater weight, must certainly be more than sufficient to move it when there is no weight at all.

Mr. Chubb supposes, that the will cannot stir at all without some motive; and also supposes, that if there be a motive to one thing, and none to the contrary, volition will infallibly follow that motive. This is virtually to suppose an entire dependence of the will on motives: if it were not wholly dependent on them, it could surely help itself a little without them, or help itself a little against a motive, without help from the strength and weight of a contrary motive. And yet his supposing that the will, when it has before it various opposite motives, can use them

as it pleases, and choose its own influence from them, and neglect the strongest, and follow the weakest, supposes it to be wholly independent on motives.

It further appears, on Mr. Chubb's supposition, that volition must be without any previous ground in any motive, thus: if it be, as he supposes, that the will is not determined by any previous superior strength of the motive, but determines and chooses its own motive, then, when the rival motives are exactly equal in strength and tendency to induce in all respects, it may follow either; and may in such a case sometimes follow one, sometimes the other. And if so, this diversity which appears between the acts of the will, is plainly without previous ground in either of the motives; for all that is previously in the motives, is supposed precisely and perfectly the same, without any diversity whatsoever. Now, perfect identity, as to all that is previous in the antecedent, cannot be the ground and reason of diversity in the consequent. Perfect identity in the ground cannot be a reason why it is not followed with the same consequence. And, therefore, the source of this diversity of consequence must be sought for elsewhere.

And lastly, it may be observed, that however Mr. Chubb does much insist that no volition can take place without some motive to induce it, which previously disposes the mind to it; yet, as he also insists that the mind, without reference to any superior strength of motives, picks and chooses for its motive to follow; he himself herein plainly supposes, that with regard to the



mind's preference of one motive before another, it is not the motive that disposes the will, but the will disposes itself to follow the motive. ✓

IV. Mr. Chubb supposes necessity to be utterly inconsistent with *agency*; and that to suppose a being to be an agent in that which is necessary, is a plain contradiction. At p. 311, and throughout his discourses on the subject of liberty, he supposes, that necessity cannot consist with agency, or freedom; and that to suppose otherwise, is to make liberty and necessity, action and passion, the same thing. And so he seems to suppose, that there is no action, strictly speaking, but volition; and that as to the effects of volition in body or mind, in themselves considered, being necessary, they are said to be free, only as they are the effects of an act that is not necessary.

And yet, according to him, volition itself is the *effect of volition*; yea, every act of free volition: and, therefore, every act of free volition must, by what has now been observed from him, be necessary. That every act of free volition is itself the effect of volition, is abundantly supposed by him. In p. 341, he says, "If a man is such a creature as I have proved him to be, that is, if he has in him a power or liberty of doing either good or evil, and either of these is the subject of his own free choice, so that he might, IF HE HAD PLEASED, have CHOSEN and done the contrary."—Here he supposes, all that is good or evil in man is the effect of his choice; and so that his good or evil choice itself is the effect of his pleasure or choice, in these words, *he might, if he had PLEASED, have CHOSEN the contrary*. So, in p. 356, "Though it

be highly reasonable, that a man should always choose the greater good,—yet he may, if he PLEASE, CHOOSE otherwise.” Which is the same thing as if he had said, *he may, if he chooses, choose otherwise*. And then he goes on,—“that is, he may, *if he pleases, choose* what is good for himself,” &c. And again, in the same page, “The will is not confined by the understanding to any particular sort of good, whether greater or less; but is at liberty *to choose* what kind of good *it pleases*.” If there be any meaning in the last words, the meaning must be this, that *the will is at liberty to choose what kind of good it chooses to choose*; supposing the act of choice itself determined by an antecedent choice. The liberty Mr. Chubb speaks of, is not only a man’s having power to move his body agreeably to an antecedent act of choice, but to use or exert the faculties of his soul. Thus, in p. 379, speaking of the faculties of his mind, he says, “Man has power, and is at liberty, to neglect these faculties, to use them aright, or to abuse them, *as he pleases*.” And that he supposes an act of choice, or exercise of pleasure, properly distinct *from*, and antecedent *to*, those acts thus chosen, directing, commanding, and producing the chosen acts, and even the acts of choice themselves, is very plain in p. 283. “He can *command his actions*, and herein consists his liberty; he can give or deny himself that pleasure, *as he pleases*.” And p. 377: “If the actions of men are not the *produce of a free choice*, or election, but spring from a necessity of nature,—he cannot in reason be the object of reward or punishment on their account. Whereas, if action in man, whether good or evil, is *the produce of will or free choice*,

so that a man, in either case, had it in his power, and was at liberty, to have CHOSEN the contrary; he is the proper object of reward or punishment, according as he CHOOSES to behave himself." Here, in these last words, he speaks of *liberty of CHOOSING, according as he CHOOSES*. So that the behaviour which he speaks of, as subject to his choice, is his *choosing* itself, as well as his external conduct consequent upon it. And therefore, it is evident, he means not only external actions, but the acts of choice themselves, when he speaks of *all free actions as the PRODUCE of free choice*. And this is abundantly evident in what he says in pp. 372, 373.

Now these things imply a twofold great absurdity and inconsistency.

1. To suppose, as Mr. Chubb plainly does, that every free act of choice is *commanded by*, and is the *produce of, free choice*, is to suppose the first free act of choice belonging to the case, yea, the first free act of choice that ever man exerted, to be *the produce* of an antecedent act of choice. But I hope I need not labour at all to convince my readers, that it is an absurdity to say, the very *first* act is the produce of another act that went *before* it.

2. If it were both possible and real, as Mr. Chubb insists, that every free act of choice were the produce or the effect of a free act of choice: yet even then, according to his principles, no one act of choice would be free, but every one necessary; because, every act of choice being the effect of a foregoing act, every act would be necessarily connected with that foregoing cause. For Mr. Chubb himself says, p. 389, "When the self-moving power is exerted, it becomes

the necessary cause of its effects.”—So that his notion of a free act, that is rewardable or punishable, is a heap of contradictions. It is a free act, and yet, by his own notion of freedom, is necessary; and, therefore, by him it is a contradiction to suppose it to be free. According to him, every free act is the produce of a free act; so that there must be an infinite number of free acts in succession, without any beginning, in an agent that has a beginning. And, therefore, here is an infinite number of free acts, every one of them free; and yet, not any one of them free, but every act in the whole infinite chain a necessary effect. All the acts are rewardable or punishable, and yet the agent cannot, in reason, be the object of reward or punishment, on account of any one of these actions. He is active in them all, and passive in none; yet active in none, but passive in all, &c.

V. Mr. Chubb does most strenuously deny that motives are *causes* of the acts of the will; or that the moving principle in man is *moved*, or *caused to be exerted*, by motives. His words, pp. 388, 389, are, “ If the moving principle in man is *MOVED*, or *CAUSED TO BE EXERTED*, by something external to man, *which all motives are*, then it would not be a self-moving principle, seeing it would be moved by a principle external to itself. And to say, that a self-moving principle is *MOVED*, or *CAUSED TO BE EXERTED*, by a cause external to itself, is absurd and a contradiction,” &c.—And in the next page it is particularly and largely insisted, that motives are causes in no case, that *they are merely passive in the production of action, and have no causality in*

*the production of it—no causality to be the cause of the exertion of the will.*

Now I desire it may be considered, how this can possibly consist with what he says in other places. Let it be noted here,

1. Mr. Chubb abundantly speaks of motives as *excitements of the acts of the will*; and says, that *motives do excite volition, and induce it*, and that they are necessary to this end; that *in the reason and nature of things, volition cannot take place without motives to excite it*. But now, if motives *excite* the will, they *move* it; and yet he says, it is absurd to say the will is moved by motives. And again (if language is of any significance at all), if motives excite volition, then they are the *cause* of its being excited; and to cause volition to be excited, is to cause it to be put forth or *exerted*. Yea, Mr. Chubb says himself, p. 317, motive is necessary to the *exertion* of the active faculty. To excite, is positively to *do* something; and certainly that which does something, is the cause of the thing *done* by it. To create, is to cause to be created; to make, is to cause to be made; to kill, is to cause to be killed; to quicken, is to cause to be quickened; and *to excite*, is to *cause to be excited*. To excite, is to be a cause, in the most proper sense; not merely a negative occasion, but a ground of existence by positive influence. The notion of *exciting*, is exerting influence to cause the effect to arise or come forth into existence.

2. Mr. Chubb himself, p. 317, speaks of motives as the ground and reason of action BY INFLUENCE, and BY PREVAILING INFLUENCE. Now, what can be meant by a cause, but some-



thing that is the ground and reason of a thing by its influence, an influence that is *prevalent*, and so effectual?

3. This author not only speaks of motives as the ground and reason of action, by prevailing influence; but expressly of their *influence as prevailing* FOR THE PRODUCTION of an action, in the same page (317): which makes the inconsistency still more palpable and notorious. The production of an effect is certainly the *causing* of an effect; and *productive influence* is *causal influence*, if any thing is; and that which has this influence prevalently, so as thereby to become the ground of another thing, is a cause of that thing, if there be any such thing as a cause. This influence, Mr. Chubb says, motives have to produce an action; and yet, he says it is absurd and a contradiction to say they are causes.

4. In the same page, he once and again speaks of motives as *disposing* the agent to action, *by their influence*. His words are these: "As motive, which takes place in the understanding, and is the product of intelligence, is NECESSARY to action, that is, to the EXERTION of the active faculty, because that faculty would not be exerted without some PREVIOUS REASON to DISPOSE the mind to action; so from hence it plainly appears, that when a man is said to be *disposed* to one action rather than another, this properly signifies the PREVAILING INFLUENCE that one motive has upon a man FOR THE PRODUCTION of an action, or for the being at rest, before all other motives for the *production* of the contrary. For as motive is the ground and reason of any action, so the motive that *prevails*,

DISPOSES the agent to the performance of that action.

Now, if motives dispose the mind to action, then they *cause* the mind to be disposed ; and to cause the mind to be disposed, is to cause it to be willing ; and to cause it to be willing, is to cause it to will ; and that is the same thing as to be the cause of an act of the will. And yet this same Mr. Chubb holds it to be absurd to suppose motive to be a cause of the act of the will.

And if we compare these things together, we have here again a whole heap of inconsistencies. *Motives are the previous ground and reason of the acts of the will ; yea, the necessary ground and reason of their exertion, without which they will not be exerted, and cannot, in the nature of things, take place ; and they do excite these acts of the will, and do this by a prevailing influence ; yea, an influence which prevails for the production of the act of the will, and for the disposing of the mind to it ; and yet it is absurd to suppose motive to be a cause of an act of the will, or that a principle of will is moved or caused to be exerted by it, or that it has any causality in the production of it, or any causality to be the cause of the exertion of the will.*

A due consideration of these things which Mr. Chubb has advanced, the strange inconsistencies which the notion of liberty, consisting in the will's power of self-determination void of all necessity, united with that dictate of common sense, that there can be no volition without a motive, drove him into, may be sufficient to convince us, that it is utterly impossible ever to make that notion of liberty consistent with the influence of motives in volition. And as it is in

a manner self-evident, that there can be no act of will, choice, or preference of the mind, without some motive or inducement, something in the mind's view, which it aims at, seeks, inclines to, and goes after; so it is most manifest, there is no such liberty in the universe as Arminians insist on; nor any such thing possible or conceivable.

### SECTION XI.

#### THE EVIDENCE OF GOD'S CERTAIN FOREKNOWLEDGE OF THE VOLITIONS OF MORAL AGENTS.

THAT the acts of the wills of moral agents are not contingent events, in that sense as to be without all necessity, appears by God's certain foreknowledge of such events.

In handling this argument, I would, in the *first* place, prove that God has a certain foreknowledge of the voluntary acts of moral agents; and, *secondly*, shew the consequence, or how it follows from hence, that the volitions of moral agents are not contingent, so as to be without necessity of connexion and consequence.

First, I am to prove, that God has an absolute and certain foreknowledge of the free actions of moral agents.

One would think it should be wholly needless to enter on such an argument with any that profess themselves Christians; but so it is: God's certain foreknowledge of the free acts of moral agents, is denied by some that pretend to believe the Scriptures to be the word of God; and especially of late. I, therefore, shall consider the evidence of such a prescience in the Most High, as fully as the designed limits of this essay will admit of; supposing myself

herein to have to do with such as own the truth of the Bible.

Arg. I. My *first* argument shall be taken from God's *prediction* of such events. Here I would, in the first place, lay down these two things as axioms.

1. If God does not foreknow, he cannot foretell such events; that is, he cannot peremptorily and certainly foretell them. If God has no more than an uncertain guess concerning events of this kind, then he can declare no more than an uncertain guess. Positively to foretell, is to profess to foreknow, or declare positive foreknowledge.

2. If God does not certainly foreknow the future volitions of moral agents, then neither can he certainly foreknow those events which are consequent and dependent on these volitions. The existence of the one depending on the existence of the other, the knowledge of the existence of the one depends on the knowledge of the existence of the other; and the one cannot be more certain than the other.

Therefore, how many, how great, and how extensive soever the consequences of the volitions of moral agents may be; though they should extend to an alteration of the state of things through the universe, and should be continued in a series of successive events to all eternity, and should, in the progress of things, branch forth into an infinite number of series, each of them going on in an endless line or chain of events; God must be as ignorant of all these consequences, as he is of the volition whence they first take their rise: all these events, and the whole state of things depending

on them, how important, extensive, and vast soever, must be hid from him.

These positions being such as, I suppose, none will deny, I now proceed to observe the following things.

1. Men's moral conduct and qualities, their virtues and vices, their wickedness and good practice, things rewardable and punishable, have often been foretold by God.—Pharaoh's moral conduct, in refusing to obey God's command, in letting his people go, was foretold. God says to Moses, *Exod. iii. 19*, "I am sure that the King of Egypt will not let you go." Here God professes not only to guess at, but to know, Pharaoh's future disobedience. In *chap. vii. 4*, God says, "but Pharaoh shall not hearken unto you; that I may lay mine hand upon Egypt." &c. And *chap. ix. 30*, Moses says to Pharaoh, "as for thee, and thy servants, I know that ye will not fear the Lord." See, also, *chap. xi. 9*.—The moral conduct of Josiah, by name, in his zealously exerting himself in opposition to idolatry, in particular acts of his, was foretold above three hundred years before he was born, and the prophecy sealed by a miracle, and renewed and confirmed by the words of a second prophet, as what surely would not fail, *1 Kings, xiii. 1–6, 32*. This prophecy was also in effect a prediction of the moral conduct of the people, in upholding their schismatical and idolatrous worship until that time, and the idolatry of those priests of the high places, which it is foretold Josiah should offer upon that altar of Bethel.—Micaiah foretold the foolish and sinful conduct of Ahab in refusing to hearken to the word of the Lord by him, and



choosing rather to hearken to the false prophets, in going to Ramoth-Gilead to his ruin, 1 Kings, xxi. 20—22. The moral conduct of Hazael was foretold, in that cruelty he should be guilty of; on which Hazael says, “What, is thy servant a dog, that he should do this thing?” The prophet speaks of the event as what he knew, and not what he conjectured, 2 Kings, viii. 12. “I know the evil that thou wilt do unto the children of Israel: thou wilt dash their children, and rip up their women with child.” The moral conduct of Cyrus is foretold long before he had a being, in his mercy to God’s people, and regard to the true God, in turning the captivity of the Jews, and promoting the building of the temple, Isai. xlv. 28. and lxv. 13. Compare 2 Chron. xxxvi. 22, 23, and Ezra, i. 1—4. How many instances of the moral conduct of the kings of the north and south, particular instances of the wicked behaviour of the kings of Syria and Egypt, are foretold in the 11th chapter of Daniel? their corruption, violence, robbery, treachery, and lies. And particularly, how much is foretold of the horrid wickedness of Antiochus Epiphanes, called there a *vile person*, instead of Epiphanes, or *illustrious*. In that chapter, and also in chap. viii. ver. 9, 14, 23, to the end, are foretold his flattery, deceit, and lies, his having *his heart set to do mischief*, and set *against the holy covenant*, his *destroying and treading under foot the holy people*, in a marvellous manner, *his having indignation against the holy covenant, setting his heart against it, and conspiring against it, his polluting the sanctuary of strength, treading it under foot, taking away the daily sacrifice, and*

*placing the abomination that maketh desolate ; his great pride, magnifying himself against God, and uttering marvellous blasphemies against him, until God in indignation should destroy him.* Withal, the moral conduct of the Jews, on occasion of his persecution, is predicted. It is foretold, that “ he should corrupt many by flatteries,” chap. xi. 32—34. But that others should behave with a glorious constancy and fortitude, in opposition to him, ver. 32. And that some good men should fall and repent, ver. 35. Christ foretold Peter’s sin in denying his Lord, with its circumstances, in a peremptory manner. And so that great sin of Judas in betraying his Master, and its dreadful and eternal punishment in hell, was foretold in the like positive manner, Matt. xxvi. 21—25, and parallel places in the other Evangelists.

2. Many events have been foretold by God, which are consequent and dependent on the moral conduct of particular persons, and were accomplished either by their virtuous or vicious actions. Thus, the children of Israel’s going down into Egypt to dwell there, was foretold to Abraham, Gen. xv., which was brought about by the wickedness of Joseph’s brethren in selling him, and the wickedness of Joseph’s mistress, and his own signal virtue in resisting her temptation. The accomplishment of the thing prefigured in Joseph’s dream, depended on the same moral conduct. Jotham’s parable and prophecy, Judges, ix. 15—20, was accomplished by the wicked conduct of Abimelech and the men of Shechem. The prophecies against the house of Eli, 1 Sam. chap. ii. and iii. were accomplished by the wickedness of Doeg

the Edomite in accusing the priests, and the great impiety and extreme cruelty of Saul in destroying the priests at Nob, 1 Sam. xxii. Nathan's prophecy against David, 2 Sam. xii. 11, 12, was fulfilled by the horrible wickedness of Absalom, in rebelling against his father, seeking his life, and lying with his concubines in the sight of the sun. The prophecy against Solomon, 1 Kings, xi. 11—13, was fulfilled by Jeroboam's rebellion and usurpation, which are spoken of as his wickedness, 2 Chron. xiii. 5, 6, compare ver. 18. The prophecy against Jeroboam's family, 1 Kings, xiv. was fulfilled by the conspiracy, treason, and cruel murders of Baasha, 2 Kings, xv. 27, &c. The predictions of the prophet Jehu against the house of Baasha, 1 Kings, xvi. at the beginning, were fulfilled by the treason and parricide of Zimri, 1 Kings, xvi. 9—13, 20.

3. How often has God foretold the future moral conduct of nations and people, of numbers, bodies, and successions of men; with God's judicial proceedings, and many other events consequent and dependent on their virtues and vices; which could not be foreknown, if the volitions of men, wherein they acted as *moral agents*, had not been foreseen? The future cruelty of the Egyptians in oppressing Israel, and God's judging and punishing them for it, was foretold long before it came to pass, Gen. xv. 13, 14. The continuance of the iniquity of the Amorites, and the increase of it until it *should be full*, and they ripe for destruction, was foretold above four hundred years beforehand, Gen. xv. 16. Acts, vii. 6, 7. The prophecies of the destruction of Jerusalem and the land of Judah, were

absolute; 2 Kings, xx. 17—19. chap. xxii. 15, to the end. It was foretold in Hezekiah's time, and was abundantly insisted on in the book of the prophet Isaiah, who wrote nothing after Hezekiah's days. It was foretold in Josiah's time, in the beginning of a great reformation, 2 Kings, xxii. And it is manifest by innumerable things in the prediction of the prophets, relating to this event, its time, its circumstances, its continuance and end; the return from the captivity, the restoration of the temple, city, and land, and many circumstances and consequences of *that*; I say, these shew plainly that the prophecies of this great event were *absolute*. And yet this event was connected with, and dependent on, two things in men's moral conduct: first, the injurious rapine and violence of the king of Babylon and his people, as the efficient cause; which God often speaks of as what he highly resented, and would severely punish; and, secondly, the final obstinacy of the Jews. That great event is often spoken of as suspended on this, Jer. iv. 1. and v. 1. vii. 1—7. xi. 1—6. xvii. 24, to the end. xxv. 1—7. xxvi. 1—8, 13. and xxxviii. 17, 18. Therefore this destruction and captivity could not be foreknown, unless such a moral conduct of the Chaldeans and Jews had been foreknown. And then it was foretold, that the people *should be finally obstinate*, to the destruction and utter desolation of the city and land. Isai. vi. 9—11. Jer. i. 18, 19. vii. 27, 29. Ezek. iii. 7. and xxiv. 13, 14.

The final obstinacy of those Jews who were left in the land of Israel, in their idolatry and rejection of the true God, was foretold by God,

and the prediction confirmed with an oath, Jer. xlv. 26, 27. And God tells the people, Isai. xlviii. 3, 4—8, that he had predicted those things which should be consequent on their treachery and obstinacy, because he knew they would be obstinate; and that he had declared these things beforehand, for their conviction of his being the only true God, &c.

The destruction of Babylon, with many of the circumstances of it, was foretold, as the judgment of God for the exceeding pride and haughtiness of the heads of that monarchy, Nebuchadnezzar, and his successors, and their wickedly destroying other nations, and particularly for their exalting themselves against the true God and his people, before any of these monarchs had a being; Isai. chap. xiii. xiv. xlvii.: compare Habakkuk, ii. 5. to the end, and Jer. chap. 1. and li. That Babylon's destruction was to be a "recompense, according to the works of their own hands," appears by Jer. xxv. 14. The immorality which the people of Babylon, and particularly her princes and great men, were guilty of, that very night that the city was destroyed, their revelling and drunkenness at Belshazzar's idolatrous feast, was foretold, Jer. li. 39, 57.

The return of the Jews from the Babylonish captivity is often very particularly foretold, with many circumstances, and the promises of it are very peremptory; Jer. xxxi. 35—40. and xxxii. 6—15, 41—44. and xxxiii. 24—26. And the very time of their return was prefixed; Jer. xxv. 11, 12. xxix. 10, 11. 2 Chron. xxxvi. 21. Ezek. iv. 6. and Dan. ix. 2. And yet the prophecies represent their return as consequent



on their repentance. And their repentance itself is very expressly and particularly foretold, Jer. xxix. 12, 13, 14. xxxi. 8, 9, 18—31. xxxiii. 8. 1, 4, 5. Ezek. vi. 8, 9, 10. vii. 16. xiv. 22, 23. and xx. 43, 44.

It was foretold under the Old Testament, that the Messiah should suffer greatly through the malice and cruelty of men ; as is largely and fully set forth, Psal. xxii. applied to Christ in the New Testament, Matt. xxvii. 35, 43. Luke, xxiii. 34. John, xix. 24. Heb. ii. 12. And likewise in Psal. lxix. which, it is also evident by the New Testament, is spoken of Christ ; John, xv. 25. vii. 5, &c. and ii. 17. Rom. xv. 3. Matt. xxvii. 34, 48. Mark, xv. 23. John, xix. 29. The same thing is also foretold, Isai. liii. and l. 6. and Mic. v. 1. This cruelty of men was their sin, and what they acted as moral agents. It was foretold, that there should be an union of heathen and Jewish rulers against Christ, Psal. ii. 1, 2. compared with Acts, iv. 25—28. It was foretold, that the Jews should generally reject and despise the Messiah, Isai. xlix. 5, 6, 7. and liii. 1—3. Psal. xxii. 6, 7. and lxix. 4, 8, 19, 20. And it was foretold, that the body of that nation should be rejected in the Messiah's days from being God's people, for their obstinacy in sin ; Isai. xlix. 4—7. and viii. 14, 15, 16, compared with Rom. x. 19. and Isai. lxv. at the beginning compared with Rom. x. 20, 21. It was foretold, that Christ should be rejected by the chief priests and rulers among the Jews, Psalm cxviii. 22, compared with Matt. xxi. 42. Acts, iv. 11. 1 Pet. ii. 4, 7.

Christ himself foretold his being delivered into the hands of the elders, chief priests, and scribes, and his being cruelly treated by them

and condemned to death ; and that he by them should be *delivered to the Gentiles* ; and that he should be *mocked*, and *scourged*, and *crucified* (Matt. xvi. 21. and xx. 17 — 19. Luke, ix. 22. John, viii. 28) ; and that the people should be concerned in and consenting to his death (Luke, xx. 13 — 18), especially the inhabitants of Jerusalem ; Luke, xiii. 33 — 35. He foretold, that the disciples should all be offended because of him that night that he was betrayed, and should forsake him ; Matt. xxvi. 31. John, xvi. 32. He foretold, that he should be rejected of that generation, even the body of the people, and that they should continue obstinate, to their ruin ; Matt. xii. 45. xxi. 33 — 42. and xxii. 1 — 7, Luke, xiii. 16, 21, 24. xvii. 25. xix. 14, 27, 41 — 44. xx. 13 — 18. and xxiii. 34 — 39.

As it was foretold in both Old Testament and New, that the Jews should reject the Messiah, so it was foretold that the Gentiles should receive him, and so be admitted to the privileges of God's people : in places too many to be now particularly mentioned. It was foretold in the Old Testament, that the Jews should envy the Gentiles on this account : Deut. xxxii. 21, compared with Rom. x. 19. Christ himself often foretold, that the Gentiles would embrace the true religion, and become his followers and people : Matt. viii. 10, 11, 12. xxi. 41 — 43. and xxii. 8 — 10. Luke, xiii. 28. xiv. 16 — 24. and xx. 16. John, x. 16. He also foretold the Jews' envy of the Gentiles on this occasion ; Matt. xx. 12 — 16. Luke, xv. 26, to the end. He foretold, that they should continue in this opposition and envy, and should manifest it in the cruel persecutions of his followers, to their utter destruction ; Matt.

xxi. 33—42. xxii. 6. and xxiii. 34—39. Luke, xi. 49—51. The Jews' obstinacy is also foretold, Acts, xxii. 18. Christ often foretold the great persecutions his followers should meet with, both from Jews and Gentiles; Matt. x. 16—18, 21, 22, 34—36. and xxiv. 9. Mark, xiii. 9. Luke, x. 3. xii. 11, 49—53. and xxi. 12, 16, 17. John, xv. 18—21. and xvi. 1—4, 20—22, 23. He foretold the martyrdom of particular persons; Matt. xx. 23. John, xiii. 36. and xxi. 18, 19, 22. He foretold the great success of the Gospel in the city of Samaria, as near approaching; which afterwards was fulfilled by the preaching of Philip; John, iv. 35—38. He foretold the rising of many deceivers after his departure, Matt. xxiv. 4, 5, 11. and the apostasy of many of his professed followers, Matt. xxiv. 10—12.

The persecutions which the apostle Paul was to meet with in the world, were foretold; Acts, ix. 16. xx. 23. and xxi. 11. The apostle says to the Christian Ephesians, Acts, xx. 29, 30. "I know, that after my departure shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock: also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them." The apostle says, *he knew this*: but he did not know it, if God did not know the future actions of moral agents.

4. Unless God foreknows the future acts of moral agents, all the prophecies we have in Scripture concerning the great antichristian apostasy; the rise, reign, wicked qualities, and deeds, of the *man of sin*, and his instruments and adherents; the extent and long continuance of his dominion, his influence on the minds of princes and others, to corrupt them, and draw

them away to idolatry and other foul vices ; his great and cruel persecutions ; the behaviour of the saints under these great temptations, &c. &c. I say, unless the volitions of moral agents are foreseen, all these prophecies are uttered without knowing the things foretold.

The predictions relating to this great apostasy are all of a moral nature, relating to men's virtues and vices, and their exercises, fruits, and consequences, and events depending on them ; and are very particular ; and most of them often repeated, with many precise characteristics, descriptions, and limitations of qualities, conduct, influence, effects, extent, duration, periods, circumstances, final issue, &c. which it would be very long to mention particularly. And to suppose all these are predicted by God without any certain knowledge of the future moral behaviour of free agents, would be to the utmost degree absurd.

5. Unless God foreknows the future acts of men's wills, and their behaviour as moral agents, all those great things which are foretold in both Old Testament and New concerning the erection, establishment, and universal extent of the *kingdom* of the *Messiah*, were predicted and promised while God was in ignorance whether any of these things would come to pass or no, and did but guess at them. For that kingdom is not of this world, it does not consist in things external, but is within men, and consists in the dominion of virtue in their hearts, in righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost ; and in these things made manifest in practice, to the praise and glory of God. The Messiah came to *save men from their sins*, and deliver

them *from their spiritual enemies; that they might serve him in righteousness and holiness before him: he gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.* And, therefore, his success consists in gaining men's hearts to virtue, in their being made *God's willing people in the day of his power.* His conquest of his enemies consists in his victory over men's corruptions and vices. And such success, such victory, and such a reign and dominion, is often expressly foretold: that his kingdom *shall fill the earth; that all people, nations; and languages, should serve and obey him:* and so that *all nations should go up to the mountain of the house of the Lord, that he might teach them his ways, and that they might walk in his paths:* and that *all men should be drawn to Christ, and the earth be full of the knowledge of the Lord* (by which, in the style of Scripture, is meant true virtue and religion), *as the waters cover the seas; that God's law should be put into men's inward parts, and written in their hearts; and that God's people should be all righteous, &c. &c.*

A very great part of the prophecies of the Old Testament is taken up in such predictions as these.—And here I would observe, that the prophecies of the universal prevalence of the kingdom of the Messiah, and true religion of Jesus Christ. are delivered in the most peremptory manner, and confirmed by the oath of God, *Isai. xlv. 22, to the end, "Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth; for I am God, and there is none else. I have sworn by my self, the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not return, That unto*



me every knee shall bow, and every tongue shall swear. SURELY, shall one say, In the Lord have I righteousness and strength: even to him shall men come," &c. But here this peremptory declaration, and great oath of the Most High, are delivered with such mighty solemnity to things which God did not know, if he did not certainly foresee the volitions of moral agents.

And all the predictions of Christ and his apostles, to the like purpose, must be without knowledge: as those of our Saviour comparing the kingdom of God to a grain of mustard-seed, growing exceeding great, from a small beginning; and to leaven, hid in three measures of meal, until the whole was leavened, &c. — And the prophecies in the epistles concerning the restoration of the nation of the Jews to the true church of God, and the bringing in the fulness of the Gentiles; and the prophecies in all the Revelation concerning the glorious change in the moral state of the world of mankind, attending the destruction of antichrist, *the kingdoms of the world becoming the kingdoms of our Lord and of his Christ; and its being granted to the church to be arrayed in that fine linen, white and clean, which is the righteousness of saints, &c.*

Corol. 1. Hence that great promise and oath of God to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, so much celebrated in Scripture, both in the Old Testament and New, namely, *That in their seed all the nations and families of the earth should be blessed*, must be made on uncertainties, if God does not certainly foreknow the volitions of moral agents. For the fulfilment of this promise consists in that success of Christ in the

work of redemption, and that setting up of his spiritual kingdom over the nations of the world, which has been spoken of. Men are *blessed in Christ* no otherwise than as they are brought to acknowledge him, trust in him, love and serve him, as is represented and predicted in Psal. lxxii. 11. "All kings shall fall down before him; all nations shall serve him." With ver. 17. "Men shall be blessed in him; all nations shall call him blessed." This oath to Jacob and Abraham is fulfilled in subduing men's iniquities; as is implied in that of the prophet Micah, chap. vii. 19, 20.

Corol. 2. Hence also it appears, that first gospel-promise that ever was made to mankind, that great prediction of the salvation of the Messiah, and his victory over Satan, made to our first parents, Gen. iii. 15, if there be no certain prescience of the volitions of moral agents, must have no better foundation than conjecture. For Christ's victory over Satan consists in men's being saved from sin, and in the victory of virtue and holiness, over that vice and wickedness, which Satan by his temptation has introduced, and wherein his kingdom consists.

6. If it be so, that God has not a prescience of the future actions of moral agents, it will follow, that the prophecies of Scripture in *general* are without foreknowledge. For Scripture prophecies, almost all of them, if not universally without any exception, are either predictions of the actings and behaviours of moral agents, or of events depending on them, or some way connected with them; judicial dispensations, judgments on men for their wickedness, or rewards of virtue and righteousness, remarkable mani-

festations of favour to the righteous, or manifestations of sovereign mercy to sinners, forgiving their iniquities, and magnifying the riches of Divine grace ; or dispensations of providence, in some respect or other, relating to the conduct of the subjects of God's moral government, wisely adapted thereto ; either providing for what should be in a future state of things, through the volitions and voluntary actions of moral agents, or consequent upon them, and regulated and ordered according to them. So that all events that are foretold, are either moral events, or other events which are connected with, and accommodated to, moral events.

That the predictions of Scripture in general must be without knowledge, if God does not foresee the volitions of men, will further appear, if it be considered, that almost all events belonging to the future state of the world of mankind, the changes and revolutions which come to pass in empires, kingdoms, and nations, and all societies, depend innumerable ways on the acts of men's wills ; yea, on an innumerable multitude of millions of millions of volitions of mankind. Such is the state and course of things in the world of mankind, that one single event, which appears in itself exceeding inconsiderable, may, in the progress and series of things, occasion a succession of the greatest, and most important, and extensive events ; causing the state of mankind to be vastly different from what it would otherwise have been, for all succeeding generations.

For instance, the coming into existence of those particular men, who have been the great conquerors of the world, which, under God, have had the main hand in all the consequent

state of the world in all after ages; such as Nebuchadnezzar, Cyrus, Alexander, Pompey, Julius Cæsar, &c. undoubtedly depended on many millions of acts of the will, which followed and were occasioned one by another, in their parents. And, perhaps, most of these volitions depended on millions of volitions of hundreds and thousands of others, their contemporaries of the same generation; and most of these on millions of millions of volitions of others in preceding generations.—As we go back, still the number of volitions, which were some way the occasion of the event, multiply as the branches of a river, until they come at last, as it were, to an infinite number. This will not seem strange to any one who well considers the matter, if we recollect what philosophers tell us of the innumerable multitudes of those things which are, as it were, the *principia*, or *stamina vitæ*, concerned in generation; the *animalcula* in *semen masculo*, and the *ova* in the womb of the female; the impregnation, or animating of one of these in distinction from all the rest, must depend on things infinitely minute, relating to the time and circumstances of the act of the parents, the state of their bodies, &c. which must depend on innumerable foregoing circumstances and occurrences; which must depend infinite ways, on foregoing acts of their wills; which are occasioned by innumerable things that happen in the course of their lives, in which their own, and their neighbours' behaviour, must have a hand an infinite number of ways. And as the volitions of others must be so many ways concerned in the conception and birth of such men; so, no less in their preservation, and circumstances of life,

their particular determinations and actions, on which the great revolutions they were the occasions of, depended. As, for instance, when the conspirators in Persia against the Magi, were consulting about a succession to the empire, it came into the mind of one of them to propose, that he whose horse neighed first, when they came together the next morning, should be king. Now such a thing coming into his mind, might depend on innumerable incidents, wherein the volitions of mankind had been concerned. But, in consequence of this accident, Darius the son of Hystaspes, was king. And if this had not been, probably his successor would not have been the same, and all the circumstances of the Persian empire might have been far otherwise. And then, perhaps, Alexander might never have conquered that empire. And then, probably, the circumstances of the world, in all succeeding ages, might have been vastly otherwise. I might further instance in many other occurrences: such as those on which depended Alexander's preservation in the many critical junctures of his life, wherein a small trifle would have turned the scale against him; and the preservation and success of the Roman people in the infancy of their kingdom and commonwealth, and afterwards; which all the succeeding changes in their state, and the mighty revolutions that afterwards came to pass in the habitable world, depended upon. But these hints may be sufficient for every discerning considerate person, to convince him, that the whole state of the world of mankind, in all ages, and the very being of every person who has ever lived in it, in every age, since the times of the ancient pro-



phets, has depended on more volitions, or acts of the wills of men, then there are sands on the sea-shore.

And, therefore, unless God does most exactly and perfectly foresee the future acts of men's wills, all the predictions which he ever uttered concerning David, Hezekiah, Josiah, Nebuchadnezzar, Cyrus, Alexander ; concerning the four monarchies, and the revolutions in them ; and concerning all the wars, commotions, victories, prosperities, and calamities, of any of the kingdoms, nations, or communities of the world, have all been without knowledge.

So that, according to this notion of God's not foreseeing the volitions and free actions of men, God could foresee nothing appertaining to the state of the world of mankind in future ages ; not so much as the being of one person that should live in it ; and could foreknow no events, but only such as he would bring to pass himself by the extraordinary interposition of his immediate power ; or things which should come to pass in the natural material world, by the laws of motion, and course of nature, wherein that is independent on the actions or works of mankind : that is, as he might, like a very able mathematician and astronomer, with great exactness calculate the revolutions of the heavenly bodies, and the greater wheels of the machine of the external creation.

And if we closely consider the matter, there will appear reason to convince us, that he could not, with any absolute certainty, foresee even these. As to the *first*, namely, things done by the immediate and extraordinary interposition of God's power, these cannot be foreseen, unless

it can be foreseen when there shall be occasion for such extraordinary interposition. And that cannot be foreseen, unless the state of the moral world can be foreseen. For whenever God thus interposes, it is with regard to the state of the moral world requiring such divine interposition. Thus, God could not certainly foresee the universal deluge, the calling of Abraham, the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, the plagues on Egypt, and Israel's redemption out of it, the expelling the seven nations of Canaan, and the bringing Israel into that land; for these all are represented as connected with things belonging to the state of the moral world. Nor can God foreknow the most proper and convenient time of the day of judgment and general conflagration; for that chiefly depends on the course and state of things in the moral world.

Nor, *secondly*, can we on this supposition reasonably think, that God can certainly foresee what things shall come to pass, in the course of things, in the natural and material world, even those which in an ordinary state of things might be calculated by a good astronomer. For the moral world is the end of the natural world; and the course of things in the former is undoubtedly subordinate to God's designs with respect to the latter. Therefore, he has seen cause, from regard to the state of things in the moral world, extraordinarily to interpose, to interrupt and lay an arrest on the course of things in the natural world; and even in the greater wheels of its motion, even so as to stop the sun in its course. And unless he can foresee the volitions of men, and so know something of the future state of the moral world, he cannot

know but that he may still have as great occasion to interpose in this manner, as ever he had : nor can he foresee how, or when, he shall have occasion thus to interpose.

Corol. 1. It appears from the things which have been observed, that unless God foresees the volitions of moral agents, that cannot be true which is observed by the apostle James, Acts, xv. 18. “ Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world.”

Corol. 2. It appears from what has been observed, that unless God foreknows the volitions of moral agents, all the prophecies of Scripture have no better foundation than mere conjecture ; and *that*, in most instances, a conjecture which must have the utmost uncertainty ; depending on an innumerable, and, as it were, infinite multitude of volitions, which are all, even to God, uncertain events : however, these prophecies are delivered as absolute predictions, and very many of them in the most positive manner with asseverations ; and some of them with the most solemn oaths.

Corol. 3. It also follows, from what has been observed, that if this notion of God’s ignorance of future volitions be true, in vain did Christ say (after uttering many great and important predictions concerning God’s moral kingdom, and things depending on men’s moral actions), Matt. xxiv. 35. “ Heaven and earth shall pass away ; but my word shall not pass away.”

Corol. 4. From the same notion of God’s ignorance, it would follow, that in vain has God himself often spoken of the predictions of his word as evidences of foreknowledge ; and so as evidences of that which is his prerogative

as GOD, and his peculiar glory, greatly distinguishing him from all other beings; as in Isai. xli. 22—26. xliii. 9, 10. xlv. 8. xlv. 21. xlvi. 10. and xlviii. 14.

Arg. II. If God does not foreknow the volitions of moral agents, then he did not foreknow the *fall* of man, nor of angels, and so could not foreknow the great things which are *consequent* on these events; such as his sending his Son into the world to die for sinners, and all things pertaining to the great work of redemption; all the things which were done for four thousand years before Christ came, to prepare the way for it; and the incarnation, life, death, resurrection, and ascension of Christ; and the setting him at the head of the universe, as king of heaven and earth, angels and men; and the setting up his church and kingdom in this world, and appointing him the judge of the world; and all that Satan should do in the world in oppositon to the kingdom of Christ: and the great transactions of the day of judgment, that men and devils shall be the subjects of, and angels concerned in; they are all what God was ignorant of before the fall. And if so, the following Scriptures, and others like them, must be without any meaning, or contrary to truth. Eph. i. 4. “According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world.” 1 Pet. i. 20. “Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world.” 2 Tim. i. 9. “Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling; not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began.” So. Eph. iii. 11. (speaking of the

wisdom of God in the work of redemption), “According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus,” Tit. i. 2. “In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began.” Rom. viii. 29. “Whom he did foreknow, them he also did predestinate,” &c. 1 Pet. i. 2. “Elect, according to the foreknowledge of God the Father.

If God did not foreknow the fall of man, nor the redemption by Jesus Christ, nor the volitions of man since the fall; then he did not foreknow the saints in any sense; neither as particular persons, nor as societies or nations; either by election, or mere foresight of their virtue or good works; or any foresight of any thing about them relating to their salvation; or any benefit they have by Christ, or any manner of concern of theirs with a Redeemer.

Arg. III. On the supposition of God’s ignorance of the future volitions of free agents, it will follow, that God must in many cases truly *repent* what he has done, so as properly to wish he had done otherwise: by reason that the event of things, in those affairs which are most important, viz. the affairs of his moral kingdom, being uncertain and contingent, often happens quite otherwise than he was aware beforehand. And there would be reason to understand that in the most literal sense in Gen. vi. 6. “It repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart.” And that 1 Sam. xv. 11. contrary to that, Num. xxiii. 19. “God is not the son of man, that he should repent.” And 1 Sam. xv. 15, 29. “Also the strength of Israel will not lie, nor repent; for he is not a man, that he should



repent." Yea, from this notion it would follow, that God is liable to repent and be grieved at his heart, in a literal sense, continually; and is always exposed to an infinite number of real disappointments in his governing the world; and to manifold, constant, great perplexity and vexation: but this is not very consistent with his title of *God over all, blessed for evermore*; which represents him as possessed of perfect, constant, and uninterrupted tranquillity and felicity, as God over the universe, and in his management of the affairs of the world as supreme and universal ruler. See Rom. i. 25. ix. 5. 2 Cor. xi. 31. 1 Tim. vi. 15.

Arg. IV. It will also follow, from this notion, that as God is liable to be continually repenting what he has done, so he must be exposed to be constantly *changing* his mind and intentions as to his future conduct; altering his measures, relinquishing his old designs, and forming new schemes and projections. For his purposes, even as to the main parts of his scheme, namely, such as belong to the state of his moral kingdom, must be always liable to be broken, through want of foresight; and he must be continually putting his system to rights, as it gets out of order, through the contingency of the actions of moral agents: he must be a being, who, instead of being absolutely immutable, must necessarily be the subject of infinitely the most numerous acts of repentance and changes of intention, of any being whatsoever; for this plain reason, that his vastly extensive charge comprehends an infinitely greater number of those things which are to him contingent and uncertain. In such a situ-

ation, he must have little else to do but to mend broken links as well as he can, and be rectifying his disjointed frame and disordered movements in the best manner the case will allow. The supreme Lord of all things must needs be under great and miserable disadvantages, in governing the world which he has made and has the care of, through his being utterly unable to find out things of chief importance which hereafter shall befall his system, which, if he did but know, he might make seasonable provision for. In many cases, there may be very great necessity that he should make provision, in the manner of his ordering and disposing things, for some great events which are to happen, of vast and extensive influence, and endless consequence to the universe, which he may see afterwards, when it is too late, and may wish in vain that he had known beforehand, that he might have ordered his affairs accordingly. And it is in the power of man, on these principles, by his devices, purposes, and actions, thus to disappoint God, break his measures, make him continually to change his mind, subject him to vexation, and bring him into confusion.

But how do these things consist with reason, or with the word of God? which represents that *all God's works*, all that he has ever to do, the whole scheme and series of his operations, are *from the beginning* perfectly in his view; and declares that, whatever devices and designs are in the hearts of men, "the counsel of the Lord is that which shall stand, and the thoughts of his heart to all generations," Prov. xix. 21. Psal. xxxiii. 10, 11. "And that which the Lord

of Hosts hath purposed none shall disannul," Isai. xiv. 27. And that he cannot be frustrated in one design or thought, Job, xlii. 2. And "that which God doth, it shall be for ever, that nothing can be put to it or taken from it," Eccl. iii. 14. The stability and perpetuity of God's counsels are expressly spoken of as connected with the foreknowledge of God, Isaiah, xlv. 10: "Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done; saying, My counsel shall stand, and I would do all my pleasure." And how are these things consistent with what the Scripture says of God's immutability, which represents him as *without variableness or shadow of turning*; and speaks of him most particularly as unchangeable with regard to his purposes, Mal. iii. 6. "I am the Lord; I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed." Exod. iii. 14. "I AM THAT I AM." Job, xxiii. 13, 14. "He is in one mind; and who can turn him? And what his soul desireth, even that he doth: for he performeth the thing that is appointed for me."

Arg. V. If this notion of God's ignorance of future volitions of moral agents be thoroughly considered in its consequences, it will appear to follow from it, that God, after he had made the world, was liable to be wholly *frustrated of his end* in the création of it; and so has been, in like manner, liable to be frustrated of his end in all the great works he hath wrought. It is manifest, the moral world is the end of the natural: the rest of the creation is but an house which God hath built, with furniture, for moral agents: and the good or bad state of the moral

world depends on the improvement they make of their natural agency, and so depends on their volitions. And, therefore, if these cannot be foreseen by God, because they are contingent, and subject to no kind of necessity, then the affairs of the moral world are liable to go wrong, to any assignable degree; yea, liable to be utterly ruined. As, on this scheme, it may well be supposed to be literally said, when mankind, by the abuse of their moral agency, became very corrupt before the flood, *that the Lord repented that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart*; so, when he made the universe, he did not know but that he might be so disappointed in it, that it might grieve him at his heart that he had made it. It actually proved, that all mankind became sinful, and a very great part of the angels apostatised: and how could God know beforehand that all of them would not? And how could God know but that all mankind, notwithstanding means used to reclaim them, being still left to the freedom of their own will, would continue in their apostasy, and grow worse and worse, as they of the old world before the flood did!

According to the scheme I am endeavouring to confute, neither the fall of men nor angels could be foreseen, and God must be greatly disappointed in these events; and so the grand scheme and contrivance for our redemption, and destroying the works of the devil, by the Messiah, and all the great things God has done in the prosecution of these designs, must be only the fruits of his own disappointment, and contrivances of his to mend and patch up, as well as he could, his system, which originally

was all very good, and perfectly beautiful, but was marred, broken, and confounded, by the free will of angels and men. And still he must be liable to be totally disappointed a second time. He could not know that he should have his desired success, in the incarnation, life, death, resurrection, and exaltation, of his only-begotten Son, and other great works accomplished to restore the state of things: he could not know, after all, whether there would actually be any tolerable measure of restoration; for this depended on the free will of man. There has been a general great apostasy of almost all the Christian world, to that which was worse than heathenism, which continued for many ages. And how could God, without foreseeing men's volitions, know whether ever Christendom would return from this apostasy? And which way could he tell beforehand how soon it would begin? The apostle says it began to work in his time; and how could it be known how far it would proceed in that age? Yea, how could it be known, that the Gospel, which was not effectual for the reformation of the Jews, would ever be effectual for the turning of the heathen nations from their heathen apostasy, which they had been confirmed in for so many ages?

It is represented often in Scripture, that God, who made the world for himself, and created it for his pleasure, would infallibly obtain his end in the creation, and in all his works; that as all things are *of* him, so they would all be *to* him; and that in the final issue of things, it would appear that he is *the first and the last*. Rev. xxi. 6. "And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the



end, the first and the last." But these things are not consistent with God's being so liable to be disappointed in all his works, nor indeed with his failing of his end in any thing that he has undertaken or done.

## SECTION XII.

GOD'S CERTAIN FOREKNOWLEDGE OF THE FUTURE VOLITIONS OF MORAL AGENTS, INCONSISTENT WITH SUCH A CONTINGENCE OF THOSE VOLITIONS AS IS WITHOUT ALL NECESSITY.

HAVING proved that GOD has a certain and infallible prescience of the act of the will of moral agents, I come now, in the *second* place, to shew the consequence ; to shew how it follows from hence, that these events are *necessary*, with a necessity of connexion or consequence.

The chief Arminian divines, so far as I have had opportunity to observe, deny this consequence ; and affirm, that if such foreknowledge be allowed, it is no evidence of any necessity of the event foreknown. Now, I desire that this matter may be particular and thoroughly inquired into. I cannot but think that, on particular and full consideration, it may be perfectly determined, whether it be indeed so or not.

In order to a proper consideration of this matter, I would observe the following things.

I. It is very evident, with regard to a thing whose existence is infallibly and indissolubly connected with something which already hath or has had existence, the existence of that thing is necessary. Here may be noted :

1. I observed before, in explaining the nature of necessity, that in things which are past, their

past existence is now necessary ; having already made sure of existence, it is too late for any possibility of alteration in that respect : it is now impossible that it should be otherwise than true, that that thing has existed.

2. If there be any such thing as a divine foreknowledge of the volitions of free agents, that foreknowledge, by the supposition, is a thing which already *has*, and long ago *had*, existence ; and so, now its existence is necessary ; it is now utterly impossible to be otherwise than that this foreknowledge should be, or should have been.

3. It is also very manifest, that those things which are indissolubly connected with other things that are necessary, are themselves necessary. As that proposition whose truth is necessarily connected with another proposition, which is necessarily true, is itself necessarily true. To say otherwise, would be a contradiction : it would be in effect to say, that the connexion was indissoluble, and yet was not so, but might be broken. If that, whose existence is indissolubly connected with something whose existence is now necessary, is itself not necessary, then it may *possibly not exist*, notwithstanding that indissoluble connexion of its existence.—Whether the absurdity be not glaring, let the reader judge.

4. It is no less evident, that if there be a full, certain, and infallible foreknowledge of the future existence of the volitions of moral agents, then there is a certain infallible and indissoluble connexion between those events and that foreknowledge ; and that, therefore, by the preceding observations, those events are necessary events ;

being infallibly and indissolubly connected with that, whose existence already is, and so is now necessary, and cannot but have been.

To say the foreknowledge is certain and infallible, and yet the connexion of the event with that foreknowledge is not indissoluble, but dissoluble and fallible, is very absurd. To affirm it, would be the same thing as to affirm that there is no necessary connexion between a proposition being infallibly known to be true, and it being true indeed. So that it is perfectly demonstrable, that if there be any infallible knowledge of future volitions, the event is *necessary*; or, in other words, that it is *impossible* but the event should come to pass. For if it be not impossible but that it may be otherwise, then it is not impossible but that the proposition which affirms its future coming to pass, may not now be true. But how absurd is that, on the supposition that there is now an infallible knowledge (*i. e.* knowledge which it is impossible should fail) that it is true. There is this absurdity in it, that it is not impossible but that there now should be no truth in that proposition which is now infallibly known to be true.

II. That no future event can be certainly foreknown, whose existence is contingent, and without all necessity, may be proved thus: it is impossible for a thing to be certainly known to any intellect without *evidence*. To suppose otherwise, implies a contradiction: because, for a thing to be certainly known to any understanding, is for it to be *evident* to that understanding: and for a thing to be *evident* to any understanding, is the same thing as for that

understanding to *see evidence* of it: but no understanding, created or increated, can *see evidence* where there is none: for that is the same thing as to see that to be which is not. And, therefore, if there be any truth which is absolutely without evidence, that truth is absolutely unknowable, insomuch that it implies a contradiction to suppose that it is known.

But if there be any future event, whose existence is contingent, without all necessity, the future existence of the event is absolutely *without evidence*. If there be any evidence of it, it must be one of these two sorts, either *self-evidence* or *proof*; for there can be no other sort of evidence but one of these two: an evident thing must be either evident *in itself*, or evident *in something else*; that is, evident by connexion with something else. But a future thing, whose existence is without all necessity, can have neither of these sorts of evidence. It cannot be *self-evident*; for if it be, it may be now known, by what is now to be seen in the thing itself; either its present existence, or the necessity of its nature: but both these are contrary to the supposition. It is supposed, both that the thing has no present existence to be seen, and also that it is not of such a nature as to be necessarily existent for the future: so that its future existence is not self-evident. And, *secondly*, neither is there any *proof*, or evidence *in any thing else*, or evidence of connexion with something else that is evident; for this is also contrary to the supposition. It is supposed, that there is now nothing existent, with which the future existence of the *contingent* event is con-

nected. For such a connexion destroys its *contingence*, and supposes necessity. Thus, it is demonstrated, that there is in the nature of things absolutely no evidence at all of the future existence of that event, which is contingent, without all necessity (if any such event there be), neither self-evidence nor proof. And, therefore, the thing, in reality, is not evident; and so cannot be seen to be evident, or, which is the same thing, cannot be known.

Let us consider this in an example. Suppose that five thousand seven hundred and sixty years ago there was no other being but the Divine Being; and then this world, or some particular body or spirit, all at once starts out of nothing into being, and takes on itself a particular nature and form; all in *absolute contingence*, without any concern of God, or any other cause, in the matter; without any manner of ground or reason of its existence; or any dependence upon, or connexion at all with, any thing foregoing: I say, that if this be supposed, there was no evidence of that event beforehand. There was no evidence of it to be seen *in the thing itself*; for the thing itself as yet was not. And there was no evidence of it to be seen *in any thing else*; for *evidence in something else*, is *connexion with* something else: but such connexion is contrary to the supposition. There was no evidence before, that this thing *would happen*; for, by the supposition, there was no reason why *it should happen*, rather than something else, or rather than nothing. And if so, then all things before were exactly equal, and the same, with respect to that and other possible things; there was no prepon-



deration, no superior weight or value ; and, therefore, nothing that could be of any weight or value to determine any understanding. The thing was absolutely without evidence, and absolutely unknowable. An increase of understanding, or of the capacity of discerning, has no tendency, and makes no advance, to a discerning any signs or evidences of it, let it be increased never so much ; yea, if it be increased infinitely. The increase of the strength of sight may have a tendency to enable to discern the evidence which is far off, and very much hid, and deeply involved in clouds and darkness ; but it has no tendency to enable to discern evidence where there is none. If the sight be infinitely strong, and the capacity of discerning infinitely great, it will enable to see all that there is, and to see it perfectly, and with ease : yet it has no tendency at all to enable a being to discern that evidence which is not ; but, on the contrary, it has a tendency to enable to discern with great certainty that there is none.

III. To suppose the future volitions of moral agents not to be necessary events ; or, which is the same thing, events which it is not impossible but that they may not come to pass ; and yet to suppose that God certainly foreknows them, and knows all things, is to suppose God's knowledge to be inconsistent with itself. For to say, that God certainly, and without all conjecture, knows that a thing will infallibly be, which at the same time he knows to be so *contingent* that it may possibly not be, is to suppose his knowledge inconsistent with itself ; or that one thing that he knows, is utterly inconsistent with another thing that he knows. It is the same thing as to say, he now knows a proposition to be of

certain infallible truth, which he knows to be of contingent uncertain truth. If a future volition is so without all necessity, that there is nothing hinders but that it may not be, then the proposition which asserts its future existence, is so uncertain, that there is nothing hinders but that the truth of it may entirely fail. And if God knows all things, he knows this proposition to be thus uncertain. And that is inconsistent with his knowing that it is infallibly true, and so inconsistent with his infallibly knowing that it is true. If the thing be indeed contingent, God views it so, and judges it to be contingent, if he views things as they are. If the event be not necessary, then it is possible it may never be: and if it be possible it may never be, God knows it may possibly never be; and that is to know that the proposition which affirms its existence, may possibly not be true; and that is to know that the truth of it is uncertain; which surely is inconsistent with his knowing it as a certain truth. If volitions are in themselves contingent events, without all necessity, then it is no argument of perfection of knowledge in any being to determine peremptorily that they will be; but, on the contrary, an argument of ignorance and mistake; because it would argue, that he supposes that proposition to be certain, which in its own nature, and all things considered, is uncertain and contingent. To say in such a case, that God may have ways of knowing contingent events which we cannot conceive of, is ridiculous; as much so, as to say that God may know contradictions to be true, for aught we know, or that he may know a thing to be certain, and at the same time know it not to be certain, though we

cannot conceive how ; because he has ways of knowing, which we cannot comprehend.

Corol. 1. From what has been observed, it is evident that the absolute *decrees* of God are no more inconsistent with human liberty, on account of any necessity of the event which follows from such decrees, than the absolute *foreknowledge* of God. Because the connexion between the event and certain foreknowledge, is as infallible and indissoluble as between the event and an absolute decree. That is, it is no more impossible, that the event and decree should not agree together, than that the event and absolute knowledge should disagree. The connexion between the event and foreknowledge is absolutely perfect, by the supposition ; because it is supposed, that the certainty and infallibility of the knowledge is absolutely perfect. And it being so, the certainty cannot be increased ; and, therefore, the connexion between the knowledge and thing known, cannot be increased ; so that if a decree be added to the foreknowledge, it does not at all increase the connexion, or make it more infallible and indissoluble. If it were not so, the certainty of knowledge might be increased by the addition of a decree : which is contrary to the supposition, which is, that the knowledge is absolutely perfect, or perfect to the highest possible degree.

There is as much of an impossibility but that the things which are infallibly foreknown, should be, or (which is the same thing) as great a necessity of their future existence, as if the event were already written down, and was known and read by all mankind, through all preceding ages, and there was the most indis-

soluble and perfect connexion possible between the writing and the thing written. In such a case, it would be as impossible the event should fail of existence, as if it had existed already; and a decree cannot make an event surer or more necessary than this.

And, therefore, if there be any such foreknowledge, as it has been proved there is, then necessity of connexion and consequence is not at all inconsistent with any liberty which man or any other creature enjoys. And from hence it may be inferred, that absolute decrees of God, which do not at all increase the necessity, are not at all inconsistent with the liberty which man enjoys, on any such account, as that they make the event decreed necessary, and render it utterly impossible but that it should come to pass. Therefore, if absolute decrees are inconsistent with man's liberty as a moral agent, or his liberty in a state of probation, or any liberty whatsoever that he enjoys, it is not on account of any necessity which absolute decrees infer.

✓ Dr. Whitby supposes there is a great difference between God's foreknowledge, and his decrees, with regard to necessity of future events. In his "Discourse on the Five Points," p. 474, &c. he says, "God's prescience has no influence at all on our actions.—Should God (says he), by immediate revelation, give me the knowledge of the event of any man's state or actions, would my knowledge of them have any influence upon his actions? Surely none at all—our knowledge doth not affect the things we know, to make them more certain, or more future, than they would be without it. Now, foreknowledge in God is knowledge. As, there-



fore, knowledge has no influence on things that are, so neither has foreknowledge on things that shall be. And, consequently, the foreknowledge of any action that would be otherwise free, cannot alter or diminish that freedom. Whereas, God's decree of election is powerful and active, and comprehends the preparation and exhibition of such means as shall unfrustrably produce the end. Hence God's prescience renders no actions necessary." And to this purpose, p. 473, he cites Origen, where he says, "God's prescience is not the cause of things future, but their being future is the cause of God's prescience that they will be:" and Le Blanc, where he says, "This is the truest resolution of this difficulty, that prescience is not the cause that things are future; but their being future is the cause they are foreseen." In like manner, Dr. Clarke, in his "Demonstration of the Being and Attributes of God," pp. 95—99. And the author of the "Freedom of Will in God and the Creature," speaking to the like purpose with Dr. Whitby, represents "Foreknowledge as having no more influence on things known, to make them necessary, than after-knowledge," or to that purpose.

To all which I would say, that what is said about knowledge, its not having influence on the thing known to make it necessary, is nothing to the purpose, nor does it in the least affect the foregoing reasoning. Whether prescience be the thing that *makes* the event necessary or no, it alters not the case. Infallible foreknowledge may *prove* the necessity of the event foreknown, and yet not be the thing which *causes* the necessity. If the foreknowledge be absolute, this *proves* the event known to be necessary, or



proves that it is impossible but that the event should be, by some means or other, either by a decree, or some other way, if there be any other way : because, as was said before, it is absurd to say, that a proposition is known to be certainly and infallibly true, which yet may possibly prove not true.

The whole of the seeming force of this evasion lies in this : that, inasmuch as certain foreknowledge does not *cause* an event to be necessary, as a decree does ; therefore, it does not *prove* it to be necessary, as a decree does. But there is no force in this arguing : for it is built wholly on this supposition, that nothing can *prove*, or *be an evidence* of a thing being necessary, but that which has a *causal influence to make it so*. But this can never be maintained. If certain foreknowledge of the future existing of an event, be not the thing which first *makes* it impossible that it should fail of existence ; yet it may, and certainly does, *demonstrate* that it is impossible it should fail of it, however that impossibility comes. If foreknowledge be not the cause, but the effect, of this impossibility, it may prove that there is such an impossibility, as much as if it were the cause. It is as strong arguing from the effect to the cause, as from the cause to the effect. It is enough, that an existence, which is infallibly foreknown, cannot fail, whether that impossibility arises from the foreknowledge, or is prior to it. It is as evident, as it is possible any thing should be, that it is impossible a thing which is infallibly known to be true, should prove not to be true : therefore there is a *necessity* that it should be otherwise ; whether the knowledge be the cause

of this necessity, or the necessity the cause of the knowledge.

All certain knowledge, whether it be fore-knowledge or after-knowledge, or concomitant knowledge, proves the thing known now to be necessary, by some means or other; or proves that it is impossible it should now be otherwise than true. I freely allow, that foreknowledge does not prove a thing to be necessary, any more than after-knowledge; but then after-knowledge, which is certain and infallible, proves that it is now become impossible but that the proposition known should be true. Certain after-knowledge proves that it is now, in the time of the knowledge, by some means or other, become impossible but that the proposition which predicates *past* existence on the event, should be true. And so does certain fore-knowledge prove, that now, in the time of the knowledge, it is, by some means or other, become impossible but that the proposition which predicates *future* existence on the event, should be true. The necessity of the truth of the propositions, consisting in the present impossibility of the non-existence of the event affirmed, in both cases is the immediate ground of the certainty of the knowledge; there can be no certainty of knowledge without it.

There must be a certainty in things themselves, before they are certainly known, or (which is the same thing) known to be certain. For certainty of knowledge is nothing else but knowing or discerning the certainty there is in the things themselves, which are known. Therefore, there must be a certainty in things to be a ground of certainty of knowledge, and to

render things capable of being known to be certain. And this is nothing but the necessity of the truth known, or its being impossible but that it should be true; or, in other words, the firm and infallible connexion between the subject and predicate of the proposition that contains that truth. All certainty of knowledge consists in the view of the firmness of that connexion. So God's certain foreknowledge of the future existence of any event, is his view of the firm and indissoluble connexion of the subject and predicate of the proposition that affirms its future existence. The subject is that possible event; the predicate is its future existing: but if future existence be firmly and indissolubly connected with that event, then the future existence of that event is necessary. If God certainly knows the future existence of an event which is wholly contingent, and may possibly never be, then he sees a firm connexion between a subject and predicate that are not firmly connected; which is a contradiction.

I allow what Dr. Whitby says to be true, "That mere knowledge does not affect the thing known, to make it more certain or more future." But yet, I say, it *supposes* and *proves* the thing to be *already* both *future* and *certain*; i. e. necessarily future. Knowledge of futurity, supposes futurity; and a certain knowledge of futurity, supposes certain futurity antecedent to that certain knowledge. But there is no other certain futurity of a thing, antecedent to certainty of knowledge, than a prior impossibility but that the thing should prove true; or (which is the same thing) the necessity of the event.

I would observe one thing further concerning

this matter ; it is this : that if it be as those fore-mentioned writers suppose, that God's foreknowledge is not the cause, but the effect, of the existence of the event foreknown ; this is so far from shewing that this foreknowledge doth not infer the necessity of the existence of that event, that it rather shews the contrary the more plainly. Because it shews the existence of the event to be so settled and firm, that it is as if it had already been ; inasmuch as *in effect* it actually exists already ; its future existence has already had actual *influence* and *efficiency*, and has *produced an effect*, viz. prescience ; the effect exists already ; and as the effect supposes, the cause is connected with the cause, and depends entirely upon it, therefore, it is as if the future event, which is the cause, had existed already. The effect is firm as possible, it having already the possession of existence, and has made sure of it. But the effect cannot be more firm and stable than its cause, ground, and reason. The building cannot be firmer than the foundation.

To illustrate this matter, let us suppose the appearances and images of things in a glass ; for instance, a reflecting telescope, to be the real effects of heavenly bodies (at a distance, and out of sight) which they resemble : if it be so, then, as these images in the telescope have had a past actual existence, and it is become utterly impossible now that it should be otherwise than that they have existed ; so they, being the true effects of the heavenly bodies they resemble, this proves the existing of those heavenly bodies to be as real, infallible, firm, and necessary, as the existing of these effects ; the one being connected with, and wholly depending on, the other.—Now



let us suppose future existences some way or other to have influence back, to produce effects beforehand, and cause exact and perfect images of themselves in a glass, a thousand years before they exist, yea, in all preceding ages; but yet that these images are real effects of these future existences, perfectly dependent on, and connected with, their cause; these effects and images having already had actual existence, rendering that matter of their existing perfectly firm and stable, and utterly impossible to be otherwise: this proves in like manner, as in the other instance, that the existence of the things, which are their causes, is also equally sure, firm, and necessary; and that it is alike impossible but that they should be, as if they had been already, as their effects have. And if, instead of images in a glass, we suppose the antecedent effects to be perfect ideas of them in the Divine Mind, which have existed there from all eternity, which are as properly effects, as truly and properly connected with their cause, the case is not altered.

Another thing which has been said by some Arminians, to take off the force of what is urged from God's prescience, against the contingency of the volitions of moral agents, is to this purpose:—"That when we talk of foreknowledge in God, there is no strict propriety in our so speaking; and that although it be true, that there is in God the most perfect knowledge of all events, from eternity to eternity, yet there is no such thing as *before* and *after* in God, but he sees all things by one perfect, unchangeable view, without any succession." To this I answer:

1. It has been already shewn, that all certain



knowledge proves the necessity of the truth known; whether it be *before, after, or at the same time*. Though it be true, that there is no succession in God's knowledge, and the manner of his knowledge is to us inconceivable, yet thus much we know concerning it, that there is no event, past, present, or to come, that God is ever uncertain of; he never is, never was, and never will be, without infallible knowledge of it; he always sees the existence of it to be certain and infallible. And as he always sees things just as they are in truth, hence there never is in reality any thing contingent in such a sense, as that possibly it may happen never to exist. If, strictly speaking, there is no fore-knowledge in God, it is because those things which are future to us, are as present to God as if they already had existence; and that is as much as to say, that future events are always in God's view as evident, clear, sure, and necessary, as if they already were. If there never is a time wherein the existence of the event is not present with God, then there never is a time wherein it is not as much impossible for it to fail of existence, as if its existence were present, and were already come to pass.

God's viewing things so perfectly and unchangeably as that there is no succession in his ideas or judgment, does not hinder but that there is properly now, in the mind of God, a certain and perfect knowledge of moral actions of men, which to us are an hundred years hence: yea, the objection supposes this; and, therefore, it certainly does not hinder but that, by the foregoing arguments, it is now impossible these moral actions should not come to pass.

We know that God knows the future voluntary actions of men in such a sense beforehand, as that he is able particularly to declare, and foretell them, and write them, or cause them to be written down in a book, as he often has done; and that, therefore, the necessary connexion which there is between God's knowledge and the event known, does as much prove the event to be necessary beforehand, as if the Divine knowledge were in the same sense before the event, as the prediction or writing is. If the knowledge be infallible, then the expression of it in the written prediction is infallible; that is, there is an infallible connexion between that written prediction and the event. And if so, then it is impossible it should ever be otherwise, than that that prediction and the event should agree; and this is the same thing as to say, it is impossible but that the event should come to pass; and this is the same as to say, that its coming to pass is necessary. So that it is manifest, that there being no proper succession in God's mind, makes no alteration as to the necessity of the existence of the events which God knows. Yea,

2. This is so far from weakening the proof which has been given of the impossibility of the not coming to pass of future events known, as that it establishes that wherein the strength of the foregoing arguments consists, and shews the clearness of the evidence. For,

(1.) The very reason why God's knowledge is without succession, is, because it is absolutely perfect, to the highest possible degree of clearness and certainty: all things, whether past, present, or to come, being viewed with

equal evidence and fulness ; future things being seen with as much clearness as if they were present ; the view is always in absolute perfection ; and absolute constant perfection admits of no alteration, and so no succession ; the actual existence of the thing known, does not at all increase or add to the clearness or certainty of the thing known : God calls the things that are not as though they were ; they are all one to him as if they had already existed. But herein consists the strength of the demonstration before given, of the impossibility of the not existing of those things, whose existence God knows ; that it is as impossible they should fail of existence, as if they existed already. This objection, instead of weakening this argument, sets it in the clearest and strongest light ; for it supposes it to be so indeed, that the existence of future events is in God's view so much as if it already had been, that when they come actually to exist, it makes not the least alteration or variation in his view or knowledge of them.

(2.) The objection is founded on the *immutability* of God's knowledge : for it is the immutability of knowledge makes his knowledge to be without succession. But this most directly and plainly demonstrates the thing I insist on, viz. that it is utterly impossible the known events should fail of existence. For, if that were possible, then it would be possible for there to be a change in God's knowledge and view of things. For, if the known event should fail of existence, and not come into being, as God expected, then God would see it, and so would change his mind, and see his former

mistake; and thus there would be change and succession in his knowledge. But as God is immutable, and so it is utterly infinitely impossible that his view should be changed; so it is, for the same reason, just so impossible that the foreknown event should not exist: and that is to be impossible in the highest degree: and, therefore, the contrary is necessary. Nothing is more impossible than that the immutable God should be changed by the succession of time: who comprehends all things, from eternity to eternity, in one most perfect and unalterable view; so that his whole eternal duration is *vitæ interminabilis, tota; simul, et perfecta possessio*.

On the whole, I need not fear to say, that there is no geometrical theorem or proposition whatsoever more capable of strict demonstration, than that God's certain prescience of the volitions of moral agents is inconsistent with such a contingency of these events, as is without all necessity; and so is inconsistent with the Arminian notion of liberty.

Corol. 2. Hence the doctrine of the Calvinists, concerning the absolute decrees of God, does not at all infer any more *fatality* in things, than will demonstrably follow from the doctrine of most Arminian divines, who acknowledge God's omniscience and universal prescience. Therefore all objections they make against the doctrine of the Calvinists, as implying Hobbes's doctrine of necessity, or the *stoical* doctrine of *fate*, lie no more against the doctrine of Calvinists than their own doctrine: and, therefore, it doth not become those divines to raise such an outcry against the Calvinists on this account.



Corol. 3. Hence all arguing, from necessity, against the doctrine of the inability of unregenerate men to perform the conditions of salvation, and the commands of God requiring spiritual duties, and against the Calvinistic doctrine of efficacious grace; I say, all arguings of Arminians (such of them as own God's omniscience) against these things, on this ground, that these doctrines, though they do not suppose men to be under any constraint or coercion, yet suppose them under necessity with respect to their moral actions, and those things which are required of them in order to their acceptance with God; and their arguing against the necessity of men's volitions, taken from the reasonableness of God's commands, promises, and threatenings, and the sincerity of his counsels and invitations; and all objections against any doctrines of the Calvinists, as being inconsistent with human liberty, because they infer necessity; I say, all these arguments and objections must fall to the ground, and be justly esteemed vain and frivolous, as coming from them; being maintained in an inconsistency with themselves, and in like manner levelled against their own doctrine, as against the doctrine of the Calvinists.

### SECTION XIII.

WHETHER WE SUPPOSE THE VOLITIONS OF MORAL AGENTS TO BE CONNECTED WITH ANY THING ANTECEDENT, OR NOT, YET THEY MUST BE NECESSARY IN SUCH A SENSE AS TO OVERTHROW ARMINIAN LIBERTY.

EVERY act of the will has a cause, or it has not. If it has a cause, then, according to what has already been demonstrated, it is not contin-



gent, but necessary ; the effect being necessarily dependent and consequent on its cause ; and that, let the cause be what it will. If the cause is the will itself, by antecedent acts choosing and determining, still the *determined* and *caused* act must be a necessary effect. The act, that is the determined effect of the foregoing act which is its cause, cannot prevent the efficiency of its cause, but must be wholly subject to its determination and command, as much as the motions of the hands and feet. The consequent commanded acts of the will are as passive and as necessary, with respect to the antecedent determining acts, as the parts of the body are to the volitions which determine and command them. And, therefore, if all the free acts of the will are thus, if they are all determined effects, determined by the will itself, that is, determined by antecedent choice, then they are all necessary ; they are all subject to, and decisively fixed by, the foregoing act, which is their cause : yea, even the determining act itself ; for that must be determined and fixed by another act, preceding that, if it be a free and voluntary act ; and so must be necessary. So that, by this all the free acts of the will are necessary, and cannot be free unless they are necessary : because they cannot be free, according to the Arminian notion of freedom, unless they are determined by the will, which is to be determined by antecedent choice ; which being their cause, proves them necessary. And yet they say, necessity is utterly inconsistent with liberty. So that, by their scheme, the acts of the will cannot be free, unless they are necessary, and yet cannot be free if they be not necessary !

But if the other part of the dilemma be taken, and it be affirmed that the free acts of the will have no cause, and are connected with nothing whatsoever that goes before them and determines them, in order to maintain their proper and absolute contingency, and this should be allowed to be possible; still it will not serve their turn. For if the volition come to pass by perfect contingency, and without any cause at all, then it is certain, no act of the will, no prior act of the soul, was the cause; no determination or choice of the soul had any hand in it. The will, or the soul, was indeed the subject of what happened to it accidentally, but was not the cause. The will is not active in causing or determining, but purely the passive subject; at least, according to their notion of action and passion. In this case, contingency does as much prevent the determination of the will, as a proper cause; and as to the will, it was necessary, and could be no otherwise. For to suppose that it could have been otherwise, if the will or soul had pleased, is to suppose that the act is dependent on some prior act of choice or pleasure; contrary to what now is supposed: it is to suppose that it might have been otherwise, if its cause had made it or ordered it otherwise. But this does not agree to its having no cause or orderer at all. That must be necessary as to the soul, which is dependent on no free act of the soul: but that which is without a cause, is dependent on no free act of the soul; because, by the supposition, it is dependent on nothing, and is connected with nothing. In such a case, the soul is necessarily subjected to what accident brings

to pass, from time to time, as much as the earth, that is inactive, is necessarily subjected to what falls upon it. But this does not consist with the Arminian notion of liberty, which is the will's power of determining itself in its own acts, and being wholly active in it, without passiveness, and without being subject to necessity. Thus, contingency belongs to the Arminian notion of liberty, and yet is inconsistent with it.

I would here observe, that the author of the "Essay on the Freedom of Will in God and the Creature," pages 76, 77, says as follows: "The word *chance* always means something done without design. Chance and design stand in direct opposition to each other; and chance can never be properly applied to acts of the will, which is the spring of all design, and which designs to choose whatsoever it doth choose, whether there be any superior fitness in the thing which it chooses, or no; and it designs to determine itself to one thing, where two things, perfectly equal, are proposed, merely because it will." But herein appears a very great inadvertence in this author. For if *the will be the spring of all design*, as he says, then certainly it is not always the *effect* of design; and the acts of the will themselves must sometimes come to pass, when they do not *spring from* design; and, consequently, come to pass by chance, according to his own definition of chance. And if *the will designs to choose whatsoever it does choose, and designs to determine itself*, as he says, then it designs to determine all its designs; which carries us back from one design to a foregoing design determining that,

and to another determining that ; and so on *in infinitum*. The very first design must be the effect of foregoing design, or else it must be by chance, in his notion of it.

Here another alternative may be proposed, relating to the connexion of the acts of the will with something foregoing, that is their cause, not much unlike to the other ; which is this : either human liberty is such, that it may well stand with volitions being necessarily connected with the views of the understanding, and so is consistent with necessity ; or it is inconsistent with, and contrary to, such a connexion and necessity. The former is directly subversive of the Arminian notion of liberty, consisting in freedom from all necessity. And if the latter be chosen, and it be said that liberty is inconsistent with any such necessary connexion of volition with foregoing views of the understanding, it consisting in freedom from any such necessity of the will as that would imply ; then the liberty of the soul consists (in part at least) in the freedom from restraint, limitation, and government, in its actings by the understanding, and in liberty and liableness to act contrary to the understanding's views and dictates ; and consequently, the more the soul has of this disengagedness in its acting, the more liberty. Now, let it be considered what this brings the noble principle of human liberty to, particularly when it is possessed and enjoyed in its perfection, viz. a full and perfect freedom and liableness to act altogether at random, without the least connexion with, or restraint or government by, any dictate of reason, or any thing whatsoever apprehended, considered, or viewed by the

understanding; as being inconsistent with the full and perfect sovereignty of the will over its own determinations. The notion mankind have conceived of liberty, is some dignity or privilege, something worth claiming. But what dignity or privilege is there, in being given up to such a wild contingency as this, to be perfectly and constantly liable to act unintelligently and unreasonably, and as much without the guidance of understanding, as if we had none, or were as destitute of perception as the smoke that is driven by the wind !



## PART III.

WHEREIN IS INQUIRED, WHETHER ANY SUCH LIBERTY OF WILL AS ARMINIANS HOLD, BE NECESSARY TO MORAL AGENCY, VIRTUE AND VICE, PRAISE AND DISPRAISE, &c.

### SECTION I.

GOD'S MORAL EXCELLENCY NECESSARY, YET VIRTUOUS AND PRAISEWORTHY.

HAVING considered the *first* thing that was proposed to be inquired into, relating to that freedom of will which Arminians maintain; namely, whether any such thing does, ever did, or ever can exist, or be conceived of; I come now to the *second* thing proposed to be the subject of inquiry, *viz.* Whether any such kind of liberty be requisite to moral agency, virtue and vice, praise and blame, reward and punishment, &c.

I shall begin with some considerations of the virtue and agency of the supreme moral Agent, and Fountain of all agency and virtue.

Dr. Whitby, in his discourse on the "Five Points," p. 14, says, "If all human actions are necessary, virtue and vice must be empty names; we being capable of nothing that is blame-worthy, or deserveth praise; for who can blame a person for doing only what he could not help, or judge that he deserveth praise only for what he could not avoid?" To the like purpose he speaks in places innumerable; especially in his discourse on the "Freedom of the Will;" constantly maintaining, that a

*freedom not only from coaction, but necessity*, is absolutely requisite, in order to actions being either worthy of blame, or deserving of praise. And to this agrees, as is well known, the current doctrine of Arminian writers, who, in general, hold, that there is no virtue or vice, reward or punishment, nothing to be commended or blamed, without this freedom. And yet Dr. Whitby, p. 300, allows, that God is without this freedom; and Arminians, so far as I have had opportunity to observe, generally acknowledge that God is necessarily holy, and his will necessarily determined to that which is good.

So that, putting these things together, the infinitely holy God, who always used to be esteemed by God's people not only virtuous, but a Being in whom is all possible virtue, and every virtue in the most absolute purity and perfection, and in infinitely greater brightness and amiableness than in any creature; the most perfect pattern of virtue, and the fountain from whom all others' virtue is but as beams from the sun; and who has been supposed to be, on the account of his virtue and holiness, infinitely more worthy to be esteemed, loved, honoured, admired, commended, extolled, and praised, than any creature: and he who is thus every where represented in Scripture: I say, this Being, according to this notion of Dr. Whitby, and other Arminians, has no virtue at all: virtue, when ascribed to him, is but *an empty name*; and he is deserving of no commendation or praise; because he is under necessity, he cannot avoid being holy and good as he is; therefore, no thanks to him for it. It seems,

the holiness, justice, faithfulness, &c. of the Most High, must not be accounted to be of the nature of that which is virtuous and praiseworthy. They will not deny, that these things in God are good; but then we must understand them, that they are no more virtuous, or of the nature of any thing commendable, than the good that is in any other being that is not a moral agent; as the brightness of the sun, and the fertility of the earth, are good, but not virtuous, because these properties are necessary to these bodies, and not the fruit of self-determining power.

There needs no other confutation of this notion of God not being virtuous or praiseworthy, to Christians acquainted with the Bible, but only stating and particularly representing of it. To bring texts of Scripture, wherein God is represented as in every respect in the highest manner virtuous and supremely praiseworthy, would be endless, and is altogether needless to such as have been brought up in the light of the Gospel.

It were to be wished that Dr. Whitby, and other divines of the same sort, had explained themselves, when they have asserted, that *that* which is necessary, is *not deserving of praise*; at the same time that they have owned God's perfection to be necessary, and so in effect representing God as not deserving praise. Certainly, if their words have any meaning at all, by *praise* they must mean the exercise or testimony of some sorts of esteem, respect, or honourable regard. And will they then say, that men are worthy of that esteem, respect, and honour, for their virtue, small and imperfect

as it is, which yet God is not worthy of, for his infinite righteousness, holiness, and goodness? If so, it must be because of some sort of peculiar excellency in the virtuous man, which is his prerogative, wherein he really has the preference; some dignity that is entirely distinguished from any excellency, amiableness, or honourableness in God; not in imperfection and dependence, but in pre-eminence; which, therefore, he does not receive from God, nor is God the fountain or pattern of it; nor can God, in that respect, stand in competition with him, as the object of honour and regard; but man may claim a peculiar esteem, commendation, and glory, that God can have no pretension to. Yea, God has no right, by virtue of his necessary holiness, to intermeddle with that grateful respect and praise due to the virtuous man, who chooses virtue in the exercise of a freedom *ad utrumque*, any more than a precious stone, which cannot avoid being hard and beautiful.

And if it be so, let it be explained what that peculiar respect is that is due to the virtuous man, which differs in nature and kind, in some way of pre-eminence, from all that is due to God. What is the name or description of that peculiar affection? Is it esteem, love, admiration, honour, praise, or gratitude? The Scripture every where represents God as the highest object of all these: there we read of the *soul magnifying the Lord*, of *loving him with all the heart, with all the soul, with all the mind, and with all the strength*; *admiring him*, and *his righteous acts*, or greatly regarding them as *marvellous and wonderful*; *honouring, glorifying,*

*exalting, extolling, blessing, thanking, and praising him; giving unto him all the glory of the good which is done or received, rather than unto men; that no flesh should glory in his presence;* but that he should be regarded as the Being to whom all glory is due. What, then, is that respect? What passion, affection, or exercise, is it, that Arminians call *praise*, diverse from all these things which men are worthy of for their virtue, and which God is not worthy of in any degree?

If that necessity which attends God's moral perfections and actions be as inconsistent with a being worthy of praise, as a necessity of co-action, as is plainly implied in, or inferred from, Dr. Whitby's discourse; then, why should we thank God for his goodness, any more than if he were forced to be good, or any more than we should thank one of our fellow-creatures who did us good, not freely, and of good will, or from any kindness of heart, but from mere compulsion or extrinsical necessity? Arminians suppose that God is necessarily a good and gracious being: for this they make the ground of some of their main arguments against many doctrines maintained by Calvinists; they say these are *certainly* false, and it is *impossible* they should be true, because they are not consistent with the goodness of God. This supposes, that it is *impossible* but that God should be good: for if it be possible that he should be otherwise, then that impossibility of the truth of these doctrines ceases, according to their own argument.

That virtue in God is not, in the most proper sense, *rewardable*, is not for want of merit in



his moral perfections and actions, sufficient to deserve rewards from his creatures; but because he is infinitely above all capacity of receiving any reward or benefit from the creature: he is already infinitely and unchangeably happy, and we cannot be profitable unto him. But still he is worthy of our supreme benevolence for his virtue; and would be worthy of our beneficence, which is the fruit and expression of benevolence, if our goodness could extend to him. If God deserves to be thanked and praised for his goodness, he would, for the same reason, deserve that we should also *requite* his kindness, if that were possible. *What shall I render to the Lord for all his benefits?* is the natural language of thankfulness: and so far as in us lies, it is our duty to recompense God's goodness, and *render again according to benefits received*. And that we might have opportunity for so natural an expression of our gratitude to God as beneficence, notwithstanding his being infinitely above our reach; he has appointed others to be his receivers, and to stand in his stead as the objects of our beneficence; such are especially our indigent brethren.

## SECTION II.

THE ACTS OF THE WILL OF THE HUMAN SOUL OF JESUS  
CHRIST NECESSARILY HOLY, YET TRULY VIRTUOUS,  
PRAISEWORTHY, REWARDABLE, &c.

I HAVE already considered how Dr. Whitby insists upon it, that a freedom, not only from coercion, but necessity, is *requisite either to virtue or vice, praise or dispraise, reward or punishment*. He also insists on the same freedom as abso-

lutely requisite to a person being the subject of a *law*, of *precepts*, or *prohibitions*; in the book before mentioned, (pp. 301, 314, 328, 339, 340, 341, 342, 347, 361, 373, 410.) And of *promises* and *threatenings*, (pp. 298, 301, 305, 311, 339, 340, 363.) And as requisite to a *state of trial*, (p. 297, &c.)

Now, therefore, with an eye to these things, I would inquire into the moral conduct and practices of our Lord Jesus Christ, which he exhibited in his human nature here in his state of humiliation. And *first*, I would shew, that his holy behaviour was *necessary*; or that it was *impossible* it should be otherwise than that he should behave himself holily, and that he should be perfectly holy in each individual act of his life. And *secondly*, that his holy behaviour was properly the nature of *virtue*, and was *worthy of praise*; and that he was the subject of *law*, *precepts*, or *commands*, *promises*, and *rewards*; and that he was *in a state of trial*.

I. It was *impossible* that the acts of the will of the human soul of Christ should, in any instance, degree, or circumstance, be otherwise than holy, and agreeable to God's nature and will. The following things make this evident.

1. God had promised so effectually to preserve and uphold him by his Spirit, under all his temptations, that he could not fail of reaching the end for which he came into the world; which he would have failed of, had he fallen into sin. We have such a promise, Isai. xlii. 1, 2, 3, 4. "Behold my servant, whom I uphold; mine elect, in whom my soul delighteth: I have put my Spirit upon him; he shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not cry,

nor lift up, nor cause his voice to be heard in the street.—He shall bring forth judgment unto truth. He shall not fail nor be discouraged, till he have set judgment in the earth; and the isles shall wait for his law.” This promise, of Christ having God’s Spirit put upon him, and his not crying and lifting up his voice, &c. relates to the time of Christ’s appearance on earth; as is manifest from the nature of the promise, and also the application of it in the New Testament, Matt. xii. 18. And the words imply a promise of his being so upheld by God’s Spirit, that he should be preserved from sin; particularly from pride and vain glory, and from being overcome by any of the temptations he should be under to affect the glory of this world, the pomp of an earthly prince, or the applause and praise of men: and that he should be so upheld, that he should by no means fail of obtaining the end of his coming into the world, of bringing forth judgment unto victory, and establishing his kingdom of grace in the earth.—And in the following verses this promise is confirmed, with the greatest imaginable solemnity: “Thus saith the LORD, HE that created the heavens, and stretched them out; he that spread forth the earth, and that which cometh out of it; he that giveth breath unto the people upon it, and spirit to them that walk therein: I the Lord have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles; to open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison-house. I am JEHOVAH, that is my name,” &c.

Very parallel with these promises is that, Isai. xlix. 7, 8, 9, which also has an apparent respect to the time of Christ's humiliation on earth : " Thus saith the Lord, the Redeemer of Israel, and his Holy One, to him whom man despiseth, to him whom the nation abhorreth, to a servant of rulers, Kings shall see and arise, princes also shall worship, because of the Lord that is faithful, and the Holy One of Israel, and he shall choose thee. Thus saith the Lord, In an acceptable time have I heard thee, and in a day of salvation have I helped thee ; and I will preserve thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, to establish the earth," &c.

And in Isai. l. 5, 6, we have the Messiah expressing his assurance, that God would heal him, by so opening his ear, or inclining his heart to God's commandments, that he should not be rebellious, but should persevere, and not apostatise, or turn his back ; that through God's help, he should be immovable, in a way of obedience, under the great trials of reproach and suffering he should meet with ; setting his face like a flint : so that he knew, he should not be ashamed, or frustrated in his design ; and, finally, should be approved and justified, as having done his work faithfully : " The Lord hath opened mine ear ; so that I was not rebellious, neither turned away my back. I gave my back to the smiters, and my cheeks to them that plucked off the hair : I hid not my face from shame and spitting. For the Lord God will help me ; therefore shall I not be confounded : therefore have I set my face as a flint, and I know that I shall not be ashamed.

He is near that justifieth me ; who will contend with me ? let us stand together. Who is mine adversary ? let him come near to me. Behold, the Lord God will help me ; who is he that shall condemn me ? lo, they all shall wax old as a garment ; the moth shall eat them up."

2. The same thing is evident from all the promises which God made to the Messiah, of his future glory, kingdom, and success, in his office and character of a Mediator ; which glory could not have been obtained if his holiness had failed, and he had been guilty of sin. God's absolute promise of any things makes the things promised *necessary*, and their failing to take place absolutely *impossible* : and, in like manner, it makes those things necessary on which the thing promised depends, and without which it cannot take effect. Therefore, it appears, that it was utterly impossible that Christ's holiness should fail, from such absolute promises as those, Psal. cx. 4. " The Lord hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever, after the order of Melchizedek." And from every other promise in that psalm, contained in each verse of it. And Psal. ii. 7, 8. " I will declare the decree : the Lord hath said unto me, Thou art my Son ; this day have I begotten thee. Ask of me, and I will give thee the heathen for thine inheritance," &c. Psal. xlv. 3, 4, &c. " Gird thy sword on thy thigh, O most Mighty, with thy glory and thy majesty ; and in thy majesty ride prosperously." And so every thing that is said from thence to the end of the psalm. And those promises, Isai. iii. 13, 14, 15 ; and liii. 10, 11, 12. And all those promises which God makes to the Messiah, of suc-



cess, dominion, and glory, in the character of a Redeemer, in Isai. chap. xlix.

3. It was often promised to the church of God of old, for their comfort, that God would give them a righteous, sinless Saviour. Jer. xxiii. 5, 6 : “ Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will raise up unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth. In his days shall Judah be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely : and this is the name whereby he shall be called, The Lord our Righteousness.” So, Jer. xxxiii. 15 : “ I will cause the Branch of righteousness to grow up unto David ; and he shall execute judgment and righteousness in the land.” Isai. ix. 6, 7 : “ For unto us a child is born ;—upon the throne of David and of his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and justice, from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the Lord of Hosts will do this.” Chap. xi. at the beginning : “ There shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots : and the Spirit of the Lord shall rest upon him, the spirit of knowledge, and of the fear of the Lord. With righteousness shall he judge the poor, and reprove with equity. Righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins, and faithfulness the girdle of his reins.” Chap. lii. 13 : “ My servant shall deal prudently.” Chap. liii. 9 : “ Because he had done no violence, neither was guile found in his mouth.” If it be impossible that these promises should fail, and it be easier for heaven and earth to pass away, than for one jot or tittle of these promises of God to pass

away, then it was impossible that God should commit any sin. Christ himself signified, that it was impossible but that the things which were spoken concerning him should be fulfilled. Luke, xxiv. 44 : " That all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the Psalms, concerning me." Matt. xxvi. 53, 54 : " But how then shall the Scripture be fulfilled, that thus it must be ?" Mark, xiv. 49 : " But the Scriptures must be fulfilled." And so the Apostle, Acts, i. 16, 17 : " This Scripture must needs have been fulfilled."

4. All the promises, which were made to the church of old, of the Messiah as a future Saviour, from that made to our first parents in Paradise, to that which was delivered by the prophet Malachi, shew it to be impossible that Christ should not have persevered in perfect holiness. The ancient predictions given to God's church, of the Messiah as a Saviour, were of the nature of promises, as is evident by the predictions themselves, and the manner of delivering them. But they are expressly, and very often, called *promises* in the New Testament ; as in Luke, i. 54, 55, 72, 73 ; Acts, xiii. 32, 33 ; Rom. i. 1, 2, 3 ; and chap. xv. 8 ; Heb. vi. 13, &c. These promises were often made with great solemnity, and confirmed with an oath ; as in Gen. xxii. 16, 17 : " By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, that in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea-shore : and in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed." Compare Luke, i. 72, 73 ; and Gal.

iii. 8, 15, 16. The Apostle, in Heb. vi. 17, 18, speaking of this promise to Abraham, says: "Wherein God, willing more abundantly to shew to the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed it by an oath; that by two IMMUTABLE things, in which it was IMPOSSIBLE for God to lie, he might have strong consolation." In which words, the *necessity* of the accomplishment, or (which is the same thing) the *impossibility* of the contrary, is fully declared. So God confirmed the promise of the great salvation of the Messiah, made to David, by an oath; Psal. lxxxix. 3, 4: "I have made a covenant with my chosen, I have sworn unto David my servant; Thy seed will I establish for ever, and build up thy throne to all generations." There is nothing that is so abundantly set forth in Scripture as sure and irrefragable, as this promise and oath to David. See Psal. lxxxix. 34, 35, 36; 2 Sam. xxiii. 5; Isai. lv. 4; Acts, ii. 29, 30; and xiii. 34. The Scripture expressly speaks of it as utterly *impossible* that this promise and oath to David, concerning the everlasting dominion of the Messiah of his seed, should fail. Jer. xxxiii. 15, &c.: "In those days, and at that time, I will cause the Branch of righteousness to grow up unto David. For thus saith the Lord, David shall never want a man to sit upon the throne of the house of Israel." Ver. 20, 21: "If you can break my covenant of the day, and my covenant of the night, and that there should not be day and night in their season; then may also my covenant be broken with David my servant, that he should not have a son to reign upon his throne." So in ver. 25, 26. Thus abundant

is the Scripture in representing how *impossible* it was, that the promises made of old concerning the great salvation and kingdom of the Messiah should fail ; which implies, that it was impossible that this Messiah, the second Adam, the promised seed of Abraham and of David, should fall from his integrity, as the first Adam did.

5. All the promises that were made to the church of God under the Old Testament, of the great enlargement of the church, and advancement of her glory, in the days of the Gospel, after the coming of the Messiah ; the increase of her light, liberty, holiness, joy, triumph over her enemies, &c., of which so great a part of the Old Testament consists ; which are repeated so often, are so variously exhibited, so frequently introduced with great pomp and solemnity, and are so abundantly sealed with typical and symbolical representations ; I say, all these promises imply, that the Messiah should perfect the work of redemption ; and this implies that he should persevere in the work which the Father had appointed him, being in all things conformed to his will. These promises were often confirmed by an oath. (See Isai. liv. 9, with the context ; chap. lxii. 18.) And it is represented as utterly impossible that these promises should fail. (Isai. xlix. 15, with the context ; chap. liv. 10, with the context ; chap. li. 4—8 ; chap. xl. 8, with the context.) And, therefore, it was *impossible* that the Messiah should fail, or commit sin.

6. It was *impossible* that the Messiah should fail of persevering in integrity and holiness, as the first Adam did, because this would have

been inconsistent with the promises which God made to the blessed virgin his mother, and to her husband, implying that *he should save his people from their sins* ; that *God would give him the throne of his father David* ; that *he should reign over the house of Jacob for ever* ; and that *of his kingdom there shall be no end*. These promises were sure, and it was *impossible* they should fail. And, therefore, the Virgin Mary, in trusting fully to them, acted reasonably, having an immovable foundation of her faith ; as Elizabeth observes, ver. 45 : “ And blessed is she that believeth ; for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord.”

7. That it should have been possible that Christ should sin, and so fail in the work of our redemption, does not consist with the eternal purpose and decree of God revealed in the Scriptures, that he would provide salvation for fallen man in and by Jesus Christ, and that salvation should be offered to sinners through the preaching of the Gospel. Such an absolute decree as this Arminians do not deny. Thus much, at least (out of all controversy), is implied in such Scriptures as 1 Cor. ii. 7 ; Eph. i. 4, 5 ; and chap. iii. 9, 10, 11 ; 1 Pet. i. 19, 20. Such an absolute decree as this, Arminians allow to be signified in these texts. And the Arminians’ election of nations and societies, and general election of the Christian church, and conditional election of particular persons, imply this. God could not decree before the foundation of the world, to save all that should believe in, and obey Christ, unless he had absolutely decreed that salvation should be provided,



and effectually wrought out by Christ. And since (as the Arminians themselves strenuously maintain) a decree of God infers *necessity*; hence it became *necessary*, that Christ should persevere, and actually work out salvation for us, and that he should not fail by the commission of sin.

8. That it should have been possible for Christ's holiness to fail, is not consistent with what God promised to his Son, before all ages. For, that salvation should be offered to men, through Christ, and bestowed on all his faithful followers, is what is at least implied in that certain and infallible promise spoken of by the apostle, Tit. i. 2: "In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began." This does not seem to be controverted by Arminians.\*

9. That it should be possible for Christ to fail of doing his Father's will, is inconsistent with the promise made to the Father by the Son, by the Logos that was with the Father from the beginning, before he took the human nature: as may be seen in Psal. xl. 6, 7, 8, (compared with the apostle's interpretation, Heb. x. 5—9:) "Sacrifice and offering thou didst not desire: mine ears hast thou opened (or bored): burnt-offering and sin-offering thou hast not required. Then said I, Lo! I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me, I delight to do thy will, O my God, and thy law is within my heart." Where is a manifest allusion to the covenant, which the willing servant, who loved his master's service, made with his master, to be his servant

\* See Dr. Whitby on the Five Points, pp. 48, 49, 50.

for ever, on the day wherein he had his ear bored : which covenant was probably inserted in the public records, called the *volume of the book*, by the judges, who were called to take cognisance of the transaction, Exod. xxi. If the Logos, who was with the Father before the world, and who made the world, thus engaged in covenant to do the will of the Father in the human nature, and the promise was as it were recorded, that it might be made sure, doubtless it was *impossible* that it should fail ; and so it was *impossible* that Christ should fail of doing the will of the Father in the human nature.

10. If it was possible for Christ to have failed of doing the will of his Father, and so to have failed of effectually working out redemption for sinners, then the salvation of all the saints, who were saved from the beginning of the world to the death of Christ, was not built on a firm foundation. The Messiah, and the redemption which he was to work out by his obedience unto death, was the foundation of the salvation of all the posterity of fallen man that ever were saved. Therefore, if when the Old Testament saints had the pardon of their sins and the favour of God promised them, and salvation bestowed upon them ; still it was possible that the Messiah, when he came, might commit sin, then all this was on a foundation that was not firm and stable, but liable to fail ; something which it was possible might never be. God did, as it were, trust to what his Son had engaged and promised to do in future time ; and depended so much upon it, that he proceeded actually to save men on the account of it, as though it had been already done.

But this trust and dependence of God, on the supposition of Christ being liable to fail of doing his will, was leaning on a staff that was weak, and might possibly break. The saints of old trusted on the promises of a future redemption to be wrought out and completed by the Messiah, and built their comfort upon it: Abraham saw Christ's day, and rejoiced; and he and the other patriarchs died in the faith of the promise of it. (Heb. xi. 13.) But on this supposition, their faith, and their comfort, and their salvation, was built on a movable, fallible foundation; Christ was not to them a tried stone, a sure foundation, as in Isai. xxviii. 16. David entirely rested on the covenant of God with him, concerning the future glorious dominion and salvation of the Messiah, of his seed; says it was "all his salvation, and all his desire;" and comforts himself that this covenant, was an "everlasting covenant, ordered in all things and sure," 2 Sam. xxiii. 5. But if Christ's virtue might fail, he was mistaken: his great comfort was not built so sure as he thought it was, being founded entirely on the determinations of the free-will of Christ's human soul; which was subject to no necessity, and might be determined either one way or the other. Also, the dependence of those who looked for redemption in Jerusalem, and waited for the consolation of Israel (Luke, ii. 25 and 38.) and the confidence of the disciples of Jesus, who forsook all and followed him, that they might enjoy the benefits of his future kingdom, was built on a sandy foundation.

11. The man Christ Jesus, before he had finished his course of obedience, and while in

the midst of temptations and trials, was abundant in positively predicting his own future glory in his kingdom, and the enlargement of his church, the salvation of the Gentiles through him, &c., and in promises of blessings he would bestow on his true disciples in his future kingdom; on which promises he required the full dependence of his disciples. (John, xiv.) But the disciples would have no ground for such dependence, if Christ had been liable to fail in his work: and Christ himself would have been guilty of presumption, in so abounding in peremptory promises of great things, which depended on a mere contingency, viz. the determinations of his free will, consisting in a freedom *ad utrumque*, to either sin or holiness, standing in indifference and incident, in thousands of future instances, to go either one way or the other.

Thus, it is evident, that it was *impossible* that the acts of the will of the human soul of Christ should be otherwise than holy, and conformed to the will of the Father; or, in other words, they were necessarily so conformed.

I have been the longer in the proof of this matter, it being a thing denied by some of the greatest Arminians—by Episcopius in particular; and because I look upon it as a point clearly and absolutely determining the controversy between Calvinists and Arminians, concerning the necessity of such a freedom of will as is insisted on by the latter, in order to moral agency, virtue, command or prohibition, promise or threatening, reward or punishment, praise or dispraise, merit or demerit. I now, therefore, proceed,

II. To consider whether CHRIST, in his holy behaviour on earth, was not thus a *moral agent*, subject to *commands, promises, &c.*

Dr. Whitby very often speaks of what he calls a freedom *ad utrumlibet*, without necessity, as requisite to *law and commands*; and speaks of necessity as entirely inconsistent with *injunctions and prohibitions*. But yet we read of Christ being the subject of the commands of his Father, John, x. 18. and xv. 10. And Christ tells us, that every thing that he *said* or *did* was in compliance with “commandments he had received of the Father,” John, xii. 49, 50. and xiv. 31. And we often read of Christ’s *obedience* to his Father’s commands, Rom. v. 19; Phil. ii. 8; Heb. v. 8.

The forementioned writer represents *promises offered as motives* to persons to do their duty, or *a being moved and induced by promises*, as utterly inconsistent with a state wherein persons have not a liberty *ad utrumlibet*, but are necessarily determined to one. (See particularly, pp. 298 and 311.) But the thing which this writer asserts is demonstrably false, if the Christian religion be true. If there be any truth in Christianity or the Holy Scriptures, the man Christ Jesus had his will infallibly, unalterably, and unfrustrably determined to good, and that alone; but yet he had promises of glorious rewards made to him, on condition of his persevering in, and perfecting, the work which God had appointed him; Isai. liii. 10, 11, 12; Psal. ii. and cx.; Isai. xlix. 7, 8, 9. In Luke, xxii. 28, 29, Christ says to his disciples, “Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations; and I appoint unto you a kingdom,



as my Father hath appointed unto me.” The word most properly signifies to appoint by covenant or promise. The plain meaning of Christ’s words is this: “As you have partook of my temptations and trials, and have been steadfast, and have overcome, I promise to make you partakers of my reward, and to give you a kingdom; as the Father has promised me a kingdom for continuing steadfast, and overcoming in those trials.” And the words are well explained by those in Rev. iii. 21: “To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne; even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.” And Christ had not only promises of glorious success, and rewards made to his obedience and sufferings, but the Scriptures plainly represent him as using these promises for motives and inducements to obey and suffer; and particularly that promise of a kingdom which the Father had appointed him, or sitting with the Father on his throne; as in Heb. xii. 1, 2; “Let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith, who, for the joy that was set before him, endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down on the right hand of the throne of God.”

And how strange would it be to hear any Christian assert, that the holy and excellent temper and behaviour of Jesus Christ, and that obedience which he performed under such great trials, was not *virtuous* or *praiseworthy*, because his will was not free *ad utrumque*, to either holiness or sin, but was unalterably determined

to one ; that, upon this account, there is no virtue at all in all Christ's humility, meekness, patience, charity, forgiveness of enemies, contempt of the world, heavenly-mindedness, submission to the will of God, perfect obedience to his commands, (though he was obedient unto death, even the death of the cross,) his great compassion to the afflicted, his unparalleled love to mankind, his faithfulness to God and man under such great trials, his praying for his enemies, even when nailing him to the cross ; that *virtue*, when applied to these things, *is but an empty name* ; that there was no merit in any of these things ; that is, that Christ was *worthy* of nothing at all on the account of them, worthy of no reward, no praise, no honour or respect from God or man, because his will was not indifferent, and free either to these things or the contrary ; but under such a strong inclination or bias to the things that were excellent, as made it *impossible* that he should choose the contrary ; that, upon this account (to use Dr. Whitby's language), *it would be sensibly unreasonable* that the human nature should be rewarded for any of these things.

According to this doctrine, that creature who is evidently set forth in Scripture as the *first-born of every creature*, as having *in all things the pre-eminence*, and as the highest of all creatures in virtue, honour, and worthiness of esteem, praise, and glory ; on the account of his virtue, is less worthy of reward or praise than the very least of saints ; yea, no more worthy than a clock or mere machine, that is purely passive, and moved by natural necessity.

If we judge by scriptural representations of

things, we have reason to suppose that Christ took on him our nature, and dwelt with us in this world, in a suffering state, not only to satisfy for our sins, but that he, being in our nature and circumstances, and under our trials, might be our most fit and proper example, leader, and captain, in the exercise of glorious and victorious virtue, and might be a visible instance of the glorious end and reward of it; that we might see in him the beauty, amiableness, and true honour and glory, and exceeding benefit, of that virtue which it is proper for us human beings to practise; and might thereby learn, and be animated, to seek the like glory and honour, and to obtain the like glorious reward. See Heb. ii. 9—14; with v. 8, 9; and xii. 1, 2, 3. John, xv. 10. Rom. viii. 17. 2 Tim. ii. 11, 12. 1 Pet. ii. 19, 20; and iv. 13. But if there was nothing of any virtue or merit, or worthiness of any reward, glory, praise, or commendation at all, in all that he did, because it was all necessary, and he could not help it; then how is here any thing so proper to animate and incite us, free creatures, by patient continuance in well-doing, to seek for honour, glory, and virtue?

God speaks of himself as peculiarly well pleased with the righteousness of this servant of his. Isai. xlii. 21: "The Lord is well pleased for his righteousness' sake." The sacrifices of old are spoken of as a sweet savour to God, but the obedience of Christ as far more acceptable than they. Psal. xl. 6, 7: "Sacrifice and offering thou didst not desire; mine ear hast thou opened [as thy servant performing willing obedience]: burnt-offering and sin-offering hast

thou not required. Then said I, Lo, I come [as a servant that cheerfully answers the calls of his master]: I delight to do thy will, O my God, and thy law is within my heart." Matt. xvii. 5: "This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased." And Christ tells us expressly, that the Father loves him for that wonderful instance of his obedience, his voluntary yielding himself to death, in compliance with the Father's command; John, x. 17, 18: "Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life. No man taketh it from me; but I lay it down of myself. This commandment received I of my Father."

And if there was no merit in Christ's obedience unto death, if it was not worthy of praise and of the most glorious rewards, the heavenly hosts were exceedingly mistaken, by the account that is given of them in Rev. v. 8—12: "The four beasts and the four-and-twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours. And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art WORTHY to take the book, and to open the seals thereof; for thou wast slain. And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne and the beasts and the elders: and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands; saying with a loud voice, WORTHY is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing."

Christ speaks of the eternal life which he was to receive as the reward of his obedience to the Father's commandments; John, xii. 49, 50:



“ I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak, therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.” God promises to divide him a portion with the great, &c. for his being his righteous servant for his glorious virtue under such great trials and afflictions; Isai. liii. 11, 12: “ He shall see of the travail of his soul, and be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities. Therefore, will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death.” The Scriptures represent God as rewarding him far above all his other servants; Phil. ii. 7, 8, 9: “ He took on him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: and, being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name above every name.” Psal. xlv. 7: “ Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness; therefore, God, thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.”

There is no room to pretend that the glorious benefits bestowed in consequence of Christ's obedience are not properly of the nature of a reward. What is a reward, in the most proper sense, but a benefit bestowed in consequence of something morally excellent in quality or behaviour, in testimony of well-pleasedness in that moral excellency, and respect and favour



on that account? If we consider the nature of a reward most strictly, and make the utmost of it, and add to the things contained in this description proper merit or worthiness, and the bestowment of the benefit in consequence of a promise; still it will be found there is nothing belonging to it, but that the Scripture is most express as to its belonging to the glory bestowed on Christ after his sufferings, as appears from what has been already observed: there was a glorious benefit bestowed in consequence of something morally excellent, being called *Righteousness* and *Obedience*; there was great favour, love, and well-pleasedness, for this righteousness and obedience, in the bestower; there was proper merit, or worthiness of the benefit, in the obedience: it was bestowed in fulfilment of promises made to that obedience; and was bestowed, *therefore*, or *because* he had performed that obedience.

I may add to all these things, that Jesus Christ, while here in the flesh, was manifestly in a state of trial. The last Adam, as Christ is called, 1 Cor. xv. 45. Rom. v. 14. taking on him the human nature, and so the form of a servant, and being under the law, to stand and act for us, was put into a state of trial, as the first Adam was. Dr. Whitby mentions these three things as evidences of persons being in a state of trial (on the Five Points, pp. 298, 299): namely, their afflictions being spoken of as their trials or temptations, their being the subjects of promises, and their being exposed to Satan's temptations. But Christ was apparently the subject of each of these. Concerning promises made to him, I have spoken already. The

difficulties and *afflictions* he met with in the course of his obedience, are called his *temptations* or *trials*; Luke, xxii. 28: "Ye are they which have continued with me in my *temptations*, [or *trials*.]" Heb. ii. 18: "For in that himself hath suffered, being *tempted* [or tried], he is able to succour them that are tempted." And chap. iv. 15: "We have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities, but was in all points *tempted* like as we are, yet without sin." And as to his being tempted by Satan, it is what none will dispute.

### SECTION III.

THE CASE OF SUCH AS ARE GIVEN UP OF GOD TO SIN, AND OF FALLEN MAN IN GENERAL, PROVES MORAL NECESSITY AND INABILITY TO BE CONSISTENT WITH BLAME-WORTHINESS.

DR. WHITBY asserts freedom, not only from co-action, but necessity; to be essential to any thing deserving the name of sin, and to an action being *culpable*, in these words (Discourse on the Five Points, edit. 3, p. 348): "If they be thus necessitated, then neither their sins of omission or commission could deserve that name; it being essential to the nature of sin, according to St. Austin's definition, that it be an action *à quo liberum est abstinere*. Three things seem plainly necessary to make an action or omission culpable: I. That it be in our power to perform or forbear it; for, as Origen and all the fathers say, no man is blameworthy for not doing what he could not do." And elsewhere the doctor insists, that "when any do evil of necessity, what they do is no vice, that they are guilty of

no fault,\* are worthy of no blame, dispraise,† or dishonour,‡ but are unblamable.” ||

If these things are true, in Dr. Whitby's sense of necessity, they will prove all such to be blameless who are given up of God to sin, in what they commit after they are thus given up. That there is such a thing as men being judicially given up to sin, is certain, if the Scripture rightly informs us, such a thing being often there spoken of; as in Psal. lxxxi. 12: “So I gave them up to their own hearts' lust, and they walked in their own counsels.” Acts, vii. 42: “Then God turned, and gave them up to worship the host of heaven.” Rom. i. 24: “Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves.” Ver. 26: “For this cause God gave them up to vile affections.” Ver. 28: “And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things that are not convenient.”

It is needless to stand particularly to inquire what God *giving men up to their own hearts' lusts* signifies: it is sufficient to observe, that hereby is certainly meant God so ordering or disposing things, in some respect or other, either by doing or forbearing to do, as that the consequence should be men continuing in their sins. So much as men are given up *to*, so much is the consequence of their being given up, whether that be less or more. If God does not order things so, by action or permission, that sin will

\* Discourse on the Five Points, pp. 347, 360, 361, 377.

† 303, 326, 329, and many other places. † 371. || 304, 361.

be the consequence, then the event proves that they are not given up to that consequence. If good be the consequence, instead of evil, then God's mercy is to be acknowledged in that good; which mercy must be contrary to God's judgment in giving up to evil. If the event must prove that they are given up to evil as the consequence, then the persons who are the subjects of this judgment must be the subjects of such an event, and so the event is necessary.

If not only *co-action*, but *all necessity*, will prove men blameless, then Judas was blameless, after Christ had given him over, and had already declared his certain damnation, and that he should *verily* betray him. He was guilty of no sin in betraying his Master, on this supposition; though his so doing is spoken of by Christ as the most aggravated sin, more heinous than the sin of Pilate in crucifying him. And the Jews in Egypt, in Jeremiah's time, were guilty of no sin, in their not worshipping the true God, after God had "sworn by his great name, that his name should be no more named in the mouth of any man of Judah, in all the land of Egypt." Jer. xlv. 26.

Dr. Whitby (Disc. on the Five Points, pp. 302, 303) denies that men, in this world, are ever so given up by God to sin, that their wills should be necessarily determined to evil; though he owns, that hereby it may become *exceeding difficult* for men to do good, having a strong bent and powerful inclination to what is evil.—But if we should allow the case to be just as he represents, the judgment of giving up to sin will no better agree with his notions of that liberty which is essential to praise or blame,

than if we should suppose it to render the avoiding of sin *impossible*. For if an *impossibility* of avoiding sin wholly excuses a man, then, for the same reason, its being difficult to avoid it excuses him in part, and this just in proportion to the degree of difficulty. If the influence of *moral impossibility* or inability be the same, to excuse persons in not doing, or not avoiding any thing, as that of *natural inability* (which is supposed), then undoubtedly, in like manner, *moral difficulty* has the same influence to excuse with *natural difficulty*. But all allow that natural impossibility wholly excuses, and also that *natural difficulty* excuses in part, and makes the act or omission less blamable in proportion to the difficulty. All *natural difficulty*, according to the plainest dictates of the light of nature, excuses in some degree, so that the neglect is not so blamable, as if there had been no difficulty in the case : and so the greater the difficulty is, still the more excusable, in proportion to the increase of the difficulty. And as *natural impossibility* wholly excuses and excludes all blame, so the nearer the difficulty approaches to impossibility, still the nearer a person is to blamelessness in proportion to that approach. And if the case of moral impossibility or necessity be just the same with natural necessity or co-action, as to influence to excuse a neglect, then also, for the same reason, the case of natural difficulty does not differ in influence, to excuse a neglect, from moral difficulty, arising from a strong bias or bent to evil, such as Dr. Whitby owns in the case of those that are given up to their own hearts' lusts. So that the fault of such persons must be lessened, in



proportion to the difficulty, and approach to impossibility. If ten degrees of moral difficulty make the action quite impossible, and so wholly excuse, then, if there be nine degrees of difficulty, the person is in great part excused, and is nine degrees in ten less blameworthy than if there had been no difficulty at all; and he has but one degree of blameworthiness. The reason is plain, on Arminian principles, viz. because as difficulty, by antecedent bent and bias on the will, is increased, liberty of indifference, and self-determination in the will, is diminished: so much hinderance and impediment is there in the way of the will acting freely, by mere self-determinaton. And if ten degrees of such hinderance take away all such liberty, then nine degrees take away nine parts in ten, and leave but one degree of liberty. And, therefore, there is but one degree of blamableness, *cæteris paribus*, in the neglect; the man being no further blamable in what he does or neglects than he has liberty in that affair: for blame or praise (say they) arises wholly from a good use or abuse of liberty.

From all which it follows, that a strong bent and bias one way, and difficulty of going the contrary, never causes a person to be at all more exposed to sin, or any thing blamable: because, as the difficulty is increased, so much the less is required and expected. Though, in one respect, exposedness to sin or fault is increased, viz. by an increase of exposedness to the evil action or omission, yet it is diminished in another respect to balance it, namely, as the sinfulness or blamableness of the action or omission is diminished in the same proportion.

So that, on the whole, the affair, as to exposedness to guilt or blame, is left just as it was.

To illustrate this, let us suppose a scale of a balance to be intelligent, and a free agent, and indued with a self-moving power, by virtue of which it could act and produce effects to a certain degree, *ex. gr.* to move itself up or down with a force equal to a weight of ten pounds; and that it might therefore be required of it, in ordinary circumstances, to move itself down with that force; for which it has power and full liberty, and, therefore, would be blameworthy if it failed of it. But, then, let us suppose a weight of ten pounds to be put in the opposite scale, which in force entirely counterbalances its self-moving power, and so renders it impossible for it to move down at all; and, therefore, wholly excuses it from any such motion. But, if we suppose there to be only nine pounds in the opposite scale, this renders its motion not impossible, but yet more difficult; so that, it can now only move down with the force of one pound: but, however, this is all that is required of it under these circumstances; it is wholly excused from nine parts of its motion: and if the scale, under these circumstances, neglects to move, and remains at rest, all that it will be blamed for, will be its neglect of that one-tenth part of its motion; which it had as much liberty and advantage for, as in usual circumstances it has for the greater motion which in such a case would be required. So that, this new difficulty does not at all increase its exposedness to any thing blameworthy.

And thus, the very supposition of difficulty in the way of a man's *duty*, or proclivity to sin,

through a being given up to hardness of heart, or indeed by any other means whatsoever, is an inconsistency, according to Dr. Whitby's notions of liberty, virtue and vice, blame and praise. The avoiding sin and blame, and the doing what is virtuous and praiseworthy, must be always equally easy.

Dr. Whitby's notions of liberty, obligation, virtue, sin, &c. lead him into another great inconsistency. He abundantly insists, that necessity is inconsistent with the nature of sin or fault. He says, in the fore-mentioned treatise, p. 14, *Who can blame a person for doing what he could not help?* And page 15, *It being sensibly unjust to punish any man for doing that which was never in his power to avoid.* And in p. 341, to confirm his opinion, he quotes one of the fathers, saying, *Why doth God command, if man hath not free will and power to obey?* And again, in the same and the next page, *Who will not cry out, that it is folly to command him that hath not liberty to do what is commanded; and that it is unjust to condemn him that has it not in his power to do what is required?* And in p. 373, he cites another, saying, *A law is given to him that can turn to both parts; i. e. obey or transgress it; but no law can be against him who is bound by nature.*

And yet the same Dr. Whitby asserts, that fallen man is not able to perform perfect obedience. In p. 165, he has these words: "The nature of Adam had power to continue innocent and without sin; whereas it is certain our nature never had so." But if we have not power to continue innocent and without sin, then sin is inconsistent with necessity, and we

may be sinful in that which we have not power to avoid; and those things cannot be true, which he asserts elsewhere, namely, "That if we be necessitated, neither sins of omission nor commission would deserve that name," (p. 348.) If we have it not in our power to be innocent, then we have it not in our power to be blameless; and if so, we are under a necessity of being blameworthy. And how does this consist with what he so often asserts, that necessity is inconsistent with blame or praise? If we have it not in our power to perform perfect obedience to all the commands of God, then we are under a necessity of breaking some commands, in some degree; having no power to perform so much as is commanded. And if so, why does he cry out of the unreasonableness and folly of commanding beyond what men have power to do?

And Arminians in general are very inconsistent with themselves in what they say of the inability of fallen man in this respect. They strenuously maintain, that it would be unjust in God to require any thing of us beyond our present power and ability to perform; and also hold, that we are now unable to perform perfect obedience, and that Christ died to satisfy for the *imperfections of our obedience*, and has made way, that our imperfect obedience might be accepted instead of perfect: wherein they seem insensibly to run themselves into the grossest inconsistency. For (as I have observed elsewhere), "they hold, that God, in mercy to mankind, has abolished that rigorous constitution or law that they were under originally; and instead of it, has introduced a

more mild constitution, and put us under a new law, which requires no more than imperfect sincere obedience, in compliance with our poor, infirm, impotent circumstances since the fall."

Now, how can these things be made consistent? I would ask, what law these imperfections of our obedience are a breach of? If they are a breach of no law that we were ever under, then they are not sins. And if they be not sins, what need of Christ dying to satisfy for them? But if they are sins, and the breach of some law, what law is it? They cannot be a breach of their new law; for that requires no other than imperfect obedience, or obedience with imperfections: and, therefore, to have obedience attended with imperfections, is no breach of it; for it is as much as it requires. And they cannot be a breach of their old law; for that, they say, is entirely abolished; and we never were under it.—They say it would not be just in God to require of us perfect obedience, because it would not be just to require more than we can perform, or to punish us for failing of it. And, therefore, by their own scheme, the imperfections of our obedience do not deserve to be punished. What need, therefore, of Christ dying to satisfy for them? What need of his *suffering*, to satisfy for that which is no fault, and in its own nature deserves no *suffering*? What need of Christ dying to purchase, that our *imperfect* obedience should be accepted, when, according to their scheme, it would be unjust in itself, that any other obedience than *imperfect* should be required? What need of Christ dying to make



way for God accepting such an obedience as it would be unjust in him not to accept? Is there any need of Christ dying to prevail with God not to do unrighteously?—If it be said, that Christ died to satisfy that old law for us, that so we might not be under it, but that there might be room for our being under a more mild law; still I would inquire, what need of Christ dying, that we might not be under a law, which (by their principles) it would be in itself unjust that we should be under, whether Christ had died or no, because, in our present state, we are not able to keep it?

So the Arminians are inconsistent with themselves, not only in what they say of the need of Christ's satisfaction to atone for those imperfections which we cannot avoid, but also in what they say of the grace of God, granted to enable men to perform the sincere obedience of the new law. "I grant (says Dr. Stebbing),\* indeed, that by reason of original sin, we are utterly disabled for the performance of the condition, without new grace from God. But I say, then, that he gives such a grace to all of us, by which the performance of the condition is truly possible: and upon this ground he may and doth most righteously require it." If Dr. Stebbing intends to speak properly, by *grace* he must mean, that assistance which is of grace, or of free favour and kindness. But yet in the same place he speaks of it as very *unreasonable, unjust, and cruel* for God to require that, as the condition of pardon, that is become

\* Treatise of the Operations of the Spirit. 2 edit. pp. 112, 113.

impossible by original sin. If it be so, what *grace* is there in giving assistance and ability to perform the condition of pardon? Or why is that called by the name of grace, that is an absolute debt, which God is bound to bestow, and which it would be unjust and cruel in him to withhold, seeing he requires that, *as the condition of pardon*, which he cannot perform without it?

#### SECTION IV.

COMMAND AND OBLIGATION TO OBEDIENCE CONSISTENT  
WITH MORAL INABILITY TO OBEY.

IT being so much insisted on by Arminian writers, that necessity is inconsistent with law or command, and particularly, that it is absurd to suppose God by his command should require that of men which they are unable to do; not allowing in this case for any difference that there is between natural and moral inability; I would, therefore, now particularly consider this matter.

And, for the greater clearness, I would distinctly lay down the following things.

I. The will itself, and not only those actions which are the effects of the will, is the proper object of precept or command. This is, such or such a state or acts of men's wills is in many cases properly required of them by commands; and not only those alterations in the state of their bodies or minds that are the consequences of volition. This is most manifest; for it is the soul only that is properly and directly the subject of precepts or commands; that only being capable of receiving or perceiving commands. The motions or state of

the body are matter of command, only as they are subject to the soul, and connected with its acts. But now the soul has no other faculty whereby it can, in the most direct and proper sense, consent, yield to, or comply with, any command, but the faculty of the will; and it is by this faculty only, that the soul can directly disobey, or refuse compliance; for the very notions of *consenting, yielding, accepting, complying, refusing, rejecting, &c.* are, according to the meaning of the terms, nothing but certain acts of the will. Obedience, in the primary nature of it, is the submitting and yielding of the will of one to the will of another. Disobedience is the not consenting, not complying of the will of the commanded to the manifested will of the commander. Other acts that are not the acts of the will, as certain motions of the body and alterations in the soul, are obedience or disobedience only indirectly, as they are connected with the state or actions of the will, according to an established law of nature. So that, it is manifest, the will itself may be required: and the being of a good will is the most proper, direct, and immediate subject of command; and if this cannot be prescribed or required by command or precept, nothing can; for other things can be required no otherwise than as they depend upon, and are the fruits of, a good will.

Corol. 1. If there be several acts of the will, or a series of acts, one following another, and one the effect of another, the *first and determining act* is properly the subject of command, and not only the consequent acts, which are dependent upon it. Yea, it is this more es-

pecially which is that which command or precept has a proper respect to ; because it is this act that determines the whole affair : in this act the obedience or disobedience lies, in a peculiar manner ; the consequent acts being all subject to it, and governed and determined by it. This determining governing act must be the proper object of precept, or none.

Corol. 2. It also follows, from what has been observed, that if there be any sort of act or exertion of the soul, prior to all free acts of the will or acts of choice in the case, directing and determining what the acts of the will shall be ; that act or exertion of the soul cannot properly be subject to any command or precept, in any respect whatsoever, either directly or indirectly, immediately or remotely. Such acts cannot be subject to commands *directly*, because they are no acts of the will ; being by the supposition prior to all acts of the will, determining and giving rise to all its acts : they not being acts of the will, there can be in them no consent to, or compliance with, any command. Neither can they be subject to command or precept *indirectly* or *remotely* ; for they are not so much as the *effects* or *consequences* of the will, being prior to all its acts. So that, if there be any obedience in that original act of the soul, determining all volitions, it is an act of obedience wherein the will has no concern at all ; it preceding every act of will. And, therefore, if the soul either obeys or disobeys in this act, it is wholly involuntarily ; there is no willing obedience or rebellion, no compliance or opposition of the will in the affair : and what sort of obedience or rebellion is this ?

And thus, the Arminian notion of the freedom of the will consisting in the soul determining its own acts of will, instead of being essential to moral agency, and to men being the subjects of moral government, is utterly inconsistent with it. For if the soul determines *all* its acts of will, it is therein subject to no command or moral government, as has been now observed; because its original determining act is no act of will or choice, it being prior, by the supposition, to *every act* of will. And the soul cannot be the subject of command in the act of the will itself, which depends on the foregoing determining act, and is determined by it; inasmuch as this is necessary, being the necessary consequence and effect of that prior determining act, which is not voluntary. Nor can the man be the subject of command or government in his external actions: because these are all necessary, being the necessary effects of the acts of the will themselves. So that, mankind, according to this scheme, are subjects of command or moral government in nothing at all; and all their moral agency is entirely excluded, and no room for virtue or vice in the world.

So that, it is the Arminian scheme, and not the scheme of the Calvinists, that is utterly inconsistent with moral government, and with all use of laws, precepts, prohibitions, promises, or threatenings. Neither is there any way whatsoever to make their principles consist with these things. For, if it be said, that there is no prior determining act of the soul, preceding the acts of the will, but that volitions are events that come to pass by pure accident, without any determining cause, this is most palpably inconsis-



ent with all use of laws and precepts ; for nothing is more plain than that laws can be no use to direct and regulate perfect accident ; which, by the supposition of its being pure accident, is in no case regulated by any thing preceding ; but happens, this way or that, perfectly by chance, without any cause or rule. The perfect uselessness of laws and precepts also follows from the Arminian notion of indifference, as essential to that liberty which is requisite to virtue or vice. For the end of laws is to *bind to one side* ; and the end of commands is to turn the will one way : and, therefore, they are of no use unless they turn or bias the will that way. But, if liberty consists in indifference, then their biassing the will one way only, destroys liberty ; as it puts the will out of equilibrium. So that, the will, having a bias, through the influence of binding law, laid upon it, is not wholly left to itself, to determine itself which way it will, without influence from without.

II. Having shewn that the will itself, especially in those acts which are original, leading and determining in any case, is the proper subject of precept and command, and not only those alterations in the body, &c. which are the effects of the will ; I now proceed, in the *second* place, to observe, that the very opposition or defect of the will itself, in that act which is its *original and determining act* in the case : I say, the will's opposition *in this act* to a thing proposed or commanded, or its failing of compliance, implies a moral inability to that thing : or, in other words, whenever a command requires a certain state or act of the will, and the person commanded, notwithstanding the com-

mand and the circumstances under which it is exhibited, still finds his will opposite or wanting, in *that*, belonging to its state or acts, *which is original and determining in the affair*, that man is morally unable to obey that command.

This is manifest from what was observed in the first part, concerning the nature of *moral* inability, as distinguished from *natural*: where it was observed, that a man may then be said to be morally unable to do a thing, when he is under the influence or prevalence of a contrary inclination; or has a want of inclination, under such circumstances and views. It is also evident, from what has been before proved, that the will is always, and in every individual act, necessarily determined by the strongest motive; and so is always unable to go against the motive, which, all things considered, has now the greatest strength and advantage to move the will. But not further to insist on these things, the truth of the position now laid down, viz. that when the will is opposite *to*, or failing of a compliance with a thing *in its original determining inclination or act*, it is not able to comply, appears by the consideration of these two things.

1. The will in the time of that diverse or opposite leading act or inclination, and when actually under the influence of it, is not able to exert itself to the contrary, to make an alteration, in order to a compliance. The inclination is unable to change itself; and that for this plain reason, that it is unable to incline to change itself. Present choice cannot at present choose to be otherwise: for that would be *at present* to choose something diverse from what is *at present* chosen. If the will, all things now

considered, inclines or chooses to go that way ; then it cannot choose, all things now considered, to go the other way, and so cannot choose to be made to go the other way. To suppose that the mind is now sincerely inclined to change itself to a different inclination, is to suppose the mind is now truly inclined otherwise than it is now inclined. The will may oppose some future remote act that it is exposed to, but not its own present act.

2. As it is impossible that the will should comply with the thing commanded, with respect to its *leading act*, by any act of its own, in the time of that diverse or opposite *leading and original act*, or after it has actually come under the influence of that *determining choice or inclination* ; so it is impossible it should be determined to a compliance by any foregoing act ; for, by the very supposition, there is no foregoing act ; the opposite or non-complying act being that act which is *original and determining* in the case. Therefore, it must be so, that if this *first determining act* be found non-complying, on the proposal of the command, the mind is morally unable to obey. For to suppose it to be able to obey, is to suppose it to be able to determine and cause its *first determining act* to be otherwise, and that it has power better to govern and regulate its *first governing and regulating act*, which is absurd ; for it is to suppose a prior act of the will, determining its first determining act ; that is, an act prior to the first, and leading and governing the original and governing act of all ; which is a contradiction.

Here if it should be said, that although the mind has not any ability to will contrary to what

it does will, in the original and leading act of the will, because there is supposed to be no prior act to determine and order it otherwise, and the will cannot immediately change itself, because it cannot at present incline to a change; yet the mind has an ability for the present to *forbear* to proceed to action, and taking time for deliberation; which may be an occasion of the change of the inclination.

I answer. (1.) In this objection that seems to be forgotten which was observed before, viz. that the determining to take the matter into consideration, is itself an act of the will; and if this be all the act wherein the mind exercises ability and freedom, then this, by the supposition, must be all that can be commanded or required by precept. And if this act be the commanding act, then all that has been observed concerning the commanding act of the will remains true, that the very want of it is a moral inability to exert it, &c. (2.) We are speaking concerning the first and leading act of the will in the case, or about the affair; and if a determining to deliberate, or, on the contrary, to proceed immediately without deliberating, be the first and leading act; or whether it be or no, if there be another act before it, which determines that; or whatever be the original and leading act; still, the foregoing proof stands good, that the non-compliance of the leading act implies moral inability to comply.

If it should be objected, that these things make all moral inability equal, and suppose men morally unable to will otherwise than they actually do will, in all cases, and equally so in every instance.



In answer to this objection, I desire two things may be observed. *First*, That if by being *equally* unable be meant as *really* unable; then, so far as the inability is merely moral, it is true, the will, in every instance, acts by moral necessity, and is morally unable to act otherwise, as truly and properly in one case, as another; as, I humbly conceive, has been perfectly and abundantly demonstrated by what has been said in the preceding part of this essay. But yet, in some respect, the inability may be said to be greater in some instances than others: though the man may be truly unable (if moral inability can truly be called inability), yet he may be further from being able to do some things than others; as it is in things which men are naturally unable to do. A person whose strength is no more than sufficient to lift the weight of one hundred pounds, is as truly and really unable to lift one hundred and one pounds, as ten thousand pounds; but yet he is further from being able to lift the latter weight than the former; and so, according to common use of speech, has a greater inability for it. So it is in moral inability. A man is truly morally unable to choose contrary to a present inclination, which in the least degree prevails; or, contrary to that motive which, all things considered, has strength and advantage now to move the will, in the least degree, superior to all other motives in view: but yet he is further from ability to resist a very strong habit, and a violent and deeply rooted inclination, or a motive vastly exceeding all others in strength. And again, the inability may, in some respects, be called



greater in some instances than others, as it may be *more general and extensive to all acts of that kind*. So, men may be said to be unable in a different sense, and to be further from moral ability, who have that moral inability which is *general and habitual*, than they who have only that inability which is *occasional and particular*.\* Thus, in cases of natural inability; he that is born blind may be said to be unable to see, in a different manner, and is, in some respects, further from being able to see, than he whose sight is hindered by a transient cloud or mist.

And besides, that which was observed in the first part of this discourse, concerning the inability which attends a *strong and settled habit*, should be here remembered; viz. that fixed habit is attended with this peculiar moral inability, by which it is distinguished from *occasional volition*, namely, that endeavours to avoid future volitions of that kind, which are agreeable to such a habit, much more frequently and commonly prove vain and insufficient. For, though it is impossible there should be any true sincere desires and endeavours against a present volition or choice, yet there may be against volitions of that kind, when viewed at a distance. A person may desire and use means to prevent future exercises of a certain inclination; and, in order to it, may wish the habit might be removed; but his desires and endeavours may be ineffectual. The man may be said in some sense to be unable; yea, even as the word *unable* is a *relative term*, and has

\* See this distinction of moral inability explained in Part I. sect. 4.

relation to ineffectual endeavours ; yet not with regard to present, but remote endeavours.

*Secondly*, It must be borne in mind, according to what was observed before, that indeed no inability whatsoever, which is merely moral, is properly called by the name of *inability* ; and that, in the strictest propriety of speech, a man may be said to have a thing in his power, if he has it at his election ; and he cannot be said to be unable to do a thing, when he can, if he now pleases, or whenever he has a proper, direct, and immediate desire for it. As to those desires and endeavours that may be against the exercises of a strong habit, with regard to which men may be said to be unable to avoid those exercises, they are remote desires and endeavours in two respects. *First*, as to *time* : they are never against present volitions, but only against volitions of such a kind, when viewed at a distance. *Secondly*, as to their *nature* : these opposite desires are not directly and properly against the habit and inclination itself, or the volitions in which it is exercised ; for these, in themselves considered, are agreeable ; but against something else that attends them, or is their consequence : the opposition of the mind is levelled entirely against this ; the inclination or volitions themselves are not at all opposed directly, and for their own sake ; but only indirectly and remotely, on the account of something alien and foreign.

III. Though the opposition of the will itself, or the very want of will, to a thing commanded, implies a moral inability to that thing ; yet, if it be, as has been already shewn, that the being of a good state or act of will, is a thing most

properly required by command; then, in some cases, such a state or act of will may properly be required, which at present is not, and which may also be wanting after it is commanded. And therefore those things may properly be commanded, which men have a moral inability for.

Such a state, or act, of the will may be required by command as does not already exist. For if that volition only may be commanded to be which already is, there could be no use of precept; commands in all cases would be perfectly vain and impertinent. And not only may such a will be required, as is wanting before the command is given, but also such as may possibly be wanting afterwards; such as the exhibition of the command may not be effectual to produce or excite. Otherwise, no such thing as disobedience to a proper and rightful command is possible in any case: and there is no case supposable or possible wherein there can be an inexcusable or faulty disobedience. Which Arminians cannot affirm, consistently with their principles: for this makes obedience to just and proper commands always *necessary*, and disobedience impossible. And so the Arminian would overthrow himself, yielding the very point we are upon, which he so strenuously denies, viz. that law and command are consistent with necessity.

If merely that inability will excuse disobedience, which is implied in the opposition or defect of inclination remaining after the command is exhibited, then wickedness always carries that in it which excuses it. It is evermore so, that by how much the more wickedness there is in a man's heart, by so much is his inclination to evil the stronger, and by so much the more,

therefore, has he of moral inability to the good required. His moral inability, consisting in the strength of his evil inclination, is the very thing wherein his wickedness consists : and yet, according to Arminian principles, it must be a thing inconsistent with wickedness ; and by how much the more he has of it, by so much is he the further from wickedness.

Therefore, on the whole, it is manifest, that moral inability alone (which consists in disinclination) never renders any thing improperly the subject matter of precept or command, and never can excuse any person in disobedience or want of conformity to a command.

Natural inability, arising from the want of natural capacity, or external hindrance (which alone is properly called inability), without doubt wholly excuses, or makes a thing improperly the matter of command. If men are excused from doing or acting any good thing, supposed to be commanded, it must be through some defect or obstacle that is not in the will itself, but intrinsic to it ; either in the capacity of understanding, or body, or outward circumstances.

Here two or three things may be observed :

1. As to spiritual duties or acts, or any good thing in the state or imminent acts of the will itself, or of the affections (which are only certain modes of the exercise of the will), if persons are justly excused, it must be through want of capacity in the natural faculty of understanding. Thus, the same spiritual duties, or holy affections and exercises of heart, cannot be required of men as may be of angels ; the capacity of understanding being so much inferior. So, men cannot be required to love those amiable per-



sons whom they have had no opportunity to see, or hear of, or come to the knowledge of, in any way agreeable to the natural state and capacity of the human understanding. But the insufficiency of motives will not excuse ; unless their being insufficient arises not from the moral state of the will or inclination itself, but from the state of the natural understanding. The great kindness and generosity of another may be a motive insufficient to excite gratitude in the person that receives the kindness, through his vile and ungrateful temper : in this case, the insufficiency of the motive arises from the state of the will or inclination of heart, and does not at all excuse. But if this generosity is not sufficient to excite gratitude, being unknown, there being no means of information adequate to the state and measure of the person's faculties, this insufficiency is attended with a natural inability, which entirely excuses.

2. As to such motions of body, or exercises and alterations of mind, which do not consist in the imminent acts or state of the will itself, but are supposed to be required as effects of the will ; I say, in such supposed effects of the will, in cases wherein there is no want of a capacity of understanding, that inability, and that only, excuses, which consists in want of connexion between them and the will. If the will fully complies, and the proposed effect does not prove, according to the laws of nature, to be connected with his volition, the man is perfectly excused : he has a natural inability to the thing required. For the will itself, as has been observed, is all that can be directly and immediately required by command ; and other things only indirectly,



as connected with the will. If, therefore, there be a full compliance of will, the person has done his duty; and if other things do not prove to be connected with his volition, that is not owing to him.

3. Both these kinds of natural inability that have been mentioned, and so all inability that excuses, may be resolved into one thing; namely, want of natural capacity or strength; either capacity of understanding, or external strength. For when there are external defects and obstacles, they would be no obstacles, were it not for the imperfection and limitations of understanding and strength.

Corol. If things for which men have a moral inability may properly be the matter of precept or command, then they may also of invitation and counsel. Commands and invitations come very much to the same thing; the difference is only circumstantial: commands are as much a manifestation of the will of him that speaks, as invitations, and as much testimonies of expectation of compliance. The difference between them lies in nothing that touches the affair in hand. The main difference between command and invitation consists in the enforcement of the will of him who commands or invites. In the latter it is his *kindness*, the goodness which his will arises from: in the former it is his *authority*. But whatever be the ground of the will of him that speaks, or the enforcement of what he says, yet seeing neither his will nor expectation is any more testified in the one case than the other, therefore a person's being directed *by invitation*, is no more an evidence of insincerity in him that directs, in manifesting either a will

or expectation which he has not, than his being known to be morally unable to do what he is directed to *by command*. So that all this grand objection of Arminians against the inability of fallen men to exert faith in Christ, or to perform other spiritual gospel duties, from the sincerity of God's counsels and invitations, must be without force.

#### SECTION V.

THAT SINCERITY OF DESIRES AND ENDEAVOURS, WHICH IS SUPPOSED TO EXCUSE IN THE NON-PERFORMANCE OF THINGS IN THEMSELVES GOOD, PARTICULARLY CONSIDERED.

IT is what is much insisted on by many, that some men, though they are not able to perform spiritual duties, such as repentance of sin, love to God, a cordial acceptance of Christ as exhibited and offered in the gospel, &c., yet they may sincerely desire and endeavour these things, and therefore must be excused; it being unreasonable to blame them for the omission of those things which they sincerely desire and endeavour to do, but cannot do.

Concerning this matter, the following things may be observed:

1. What is here supposed, is a great mistake, and gross absurdity; even that men may sincerely choose and desire those spiritual duties of love, acceptance, choice, rejection, &c., consisting in the exercise of the will itself, or in the disposition and inclination of the heart; and yet not be able to perform or exert them. This is absurd, because it is absurd to suppose that a man should directly, properly, and sincerely incline to have an inclination, which at the same

time is contrary to his inclination ; for that is to suppose him not to be inclined to that which he is inclined to. If a man, in the state and acts of his will and inclination does properly and directly fall in with those duties, he therein performs them : for the duties themselves consist in that very thing ; they consist in the state and acts of the will being so formed and directed. If the soul properly and sincerely falls in with a certain proposed act of will or choice, the soul therein makes that choice its own. Even as when a moving body falls in with a proposed direction of its motion, that is the same thing as to move in that direction.

2. That which is called a *desire* and *willingness* for those inward duties, in such as do not perform, has respect to these duties only indirectly and remotely, and is improperly represented as a willingness for them ; not only because (as was observed before) it respects those good volitions only in a distant view, and with respect to future time ; but also because evermore, not these things themselves, but something else, that is alien and foreign, is the object that terminates these volitions and desires.

A drunkard, who continues in his drunkenness, being under the power of a love and violent appetite to strong drink, and without any love to virtue, but being also extremely covetous and close, and very much exercised and grieved at the diminution of his estate, and prospect of poverty, may in a sort *desire* the virtue of temperance ; and though his present will is to gratify his extravagant appetite, yet he may wish he had a heart to forbear future acts of intemperance, and forsake his excesses, through

an unwillingness to part with his money : but still he goes on with his drunkenness ; his wishes and endeavours are insufficient and ineffectual : such a man has no proper, direct, sincere willingness to forsake this vice, and the vicious deeds which belong to it ; for he acts voluntarily in continuing to drink to excess : his desire is very improperly called a willingness to be temperate ; it is no true desire of that virtue, for it is not that virtue that terminates his wishes, nor have they any direct respect at all to it. It is only *the saving his money*, and avoiding poverty, that terminates and exhausts the whole strength of his desire. The virtue of temperance is regarded only very indirectly and improperly, even as a necessary means of gratifying the vice of covetousness.

So, a man of an exceeding corrupt and wicked heart, who has no love to God and Jesus Christ, but, on the contrary, being very profanely and carnally inclined, has the greatest distaste of the things of religion, and enmity against them ; yet being of a family that, from one generation to another, have most of them died in youth, of an hereditary consumption ; and so having little hope of living long, and having been instructed in the necessity of a supreme love to Christ, and gratitude for his death and sufferings, in order to his salvation from eternal misery ; if, under these circumstances, he should, through fear of eternal torments, wish he had such a disposition, but his profane and carnal heart remaining, he continues still in his habitual distaste *of*, and enmity *to*, God and religion, and wholly without any exercise of that love and gratitude, (as doubt-



less the very devils themselves, notwithstanding all the devilishness of their temper, would wish for a holy heart, if by that means they could get out of hell): in this case, there is no sincere willingness to love Christ, and choose him as his chief good: these holy dispositions and exercises are not at all the direct object of the will; they truly share no part of the inclination or desire of the soul; but all is terminated on deliverance from torment: and these graces and pious volitions, notwithstanding this forced consent, are looked upon undesirable; as when a sick man desires a dose he greatly abhors, to save his life. From these things it appears:

3. That this indirect willingness, which has been spoken of, is not that exercise of the will which the command requires, but is entirely a different one; being a volition of a different nature, and terminated altogether on different objects; wholly falling short of that virtue of will which the command has respect to.

4. This other volition, which has only some indirect concern with the duty required, cannot excuse for the want of that good will itself which is commanded; being not the thing which answers and fulfils the command, and being wholly destitute of the virtue which the command seeks.

Further to illustrate this matter. If a child has a most excellent father, that has ever treated him with fatherly kindness and tenderness, and has every way, in the highest degree, merited his love and dutiful regard, being withal very wealthy; but the son is of so vile a disposition, that he inveterately hates his father, and yet, apprehending that his hatred of him is like to



prove his ruin, by bringing him finally to poverty and abject circumstances, through his father's disinheriting him, or otherwise—which is exceeding cross to his avarice and ambition—he therefore wishes it were otherwise ; but yet remaining under the invincible power of his vile and malignant disposition, he continues still in his settled hatred of his father. Now, if such a son's indirect willingness to have love and honour towards his father, at all acquits or excuses before God, for his failing of actually exercising these dispositions towards him, which God requires, it must be on one of these accounts. (1.) Either that it answers and fulfils the command. But this it does not, by the supposition ; because the thing commanded is love and honour to his worthy parent. If the command be proper and just, as is supposed, then it obliges to the thing commanded ; and so nothing else but that can answer the obligation. Or, (2.) It must be at least, because there is that virtue or goodness in his indirect willingness, that is equivalent to the virtue required ; and so balances or countervails it, and makes up for the want of it. But that also is contrary to the supposition. The willingness the son has merely from a regard to money and honour, has no goodness in it to countervail the want of the pious filial respect required.

Sincerity and reality, in that indirect willingness which has been spoken of, does not make it the better. That which is real and hearty is often called sincere ; whether it be in virtue or vice. Some persons are sincerely *bad* ; others are sincerely *good* ; and others may be sincere and hearty in things which are in their

own nature *indifferent*; as a man may be sincerely desirous of eating when he is hungry. But a being sincere, hearty, and in good earnest, is no virtue, unless it be in a thing that is virtuous. A man may be sincere and hearty in joining a crew of pirates or a gang of robbers. When the devils cried out, and besought Christ not to torment them, it was no mere pretence; they were very hearty in their desires not to be tormented: but this did not make their will or desires virtuous. And if men have sincere desires, which are in their kind and nature no better, it can be no excuse for the want of any required virtue.

And as a man's being sincere in such an indirect desire or *willingness* to do his duty as has been mentioned, cannot excuse for the want of performance, so it is with *endeavours* arising from such a willingness. The endeavours can have no more goodness in them than the will which they are the effect and expression of. And, therefore, however sincere and real, and however great a person's endeavours are, yea, though they should be to the utmost of his ability, unless the will which they proceed from be truly good and virtuous, they can be of no avail, influence, or weight, to any purpose whatsoever, in a moral sense or respect. That which is not truly virtuous in God's sight, is looked upon by him as good for nothing; and so can be of no value, weight, or influence in his account, to recommend, satisfy, excuse, or make up for any moral defect. For nothing can counterbalance evil but good. If evil be in one scale, and we put a great deal into the other, sincere and earnest desires, and many and great

endeavours ; yet, if there be no real goodness in all, there is no weight in it ; and so it does nothing towards balancing the real weight which is in the opposite scale. It is only like the subtracting a thousand noughts from before a real number, which leaves the sum just as it was.

Indeed, such endeavours may have a *negatively* good influence. Those things which have no positive virtue have no positive moral influence ; yet they may be an occasion of persons avoiding some positive evils. As, if a man were in the water with a neighbour that he had ill-will to, who could not swim, holding him by his hand ; which neighbour was much in debt to him ; and should be tempted to let him sink and drown, but should refuse to comply with the temptation, not from love to his neighbour, but from the love of money, and because by his drowning he should lose his debt, that which he does in preserving his neighbour from drowning is nothing good in the sight of God : yet hereby he avoids the greater guilt that would have been contracted if he had designedly let his neighbour sink and perish. But when Arminians, in their disputes with Calvinists, insist so much on sincere desires and endeavours, as what must excuse men, must be accepted of God, &c., it is manifest they have respect to some positive moral weight or influence of those desires and endeavours. Accepting, justifying, or excusing, on the account of sincere honest endeavours (as they are called), and men's doing what they can, &c., has relation to some moral value, something that is accepted as good, and, as such, countervailing some defect.

But there is a great and unknown deceit arising from the ambiguity of the phrase, *sincere endeavours*. Indeed, there is a vast indistinctness and unfixedness in most, or at least very many, of the terms used to express things pertaining to moral and spiritual matters. Whence arise innumerable mistakes, strong prejudices, inextricable confusion, and endless controversy.

The word *sincere* is most commonly used to signify something that is good : men are habituated to understand by it the same as *honest* and *upright* ; which terms excite an idea of something good in the strictest and highest sense ; good in the sight of Him who sees not only the outward appearance, but the heart. And, therefore, men think that if a person be *sincere*, he will certainly be accepted. If it be said that any one is sincere in his endeavours, this suggests to men's minds as much as that his heart and will is good, that there is no defect of duty as to virtuous inclination ; he *honestly* and *uprightly* desires and endeavours to do as he is required ; and this leads them to suppose, that it would be very hard and unreasonable to punish him only because he is unsuccessful in his endeavours, the thing endeavoured being beyond his power. Whereas it ought to be observed, that the word *sincere* has these different significations :

1. *Sincerity*, as the word is sometimes used, signifies no more than *reality of will and endeavour*, with respect to any thing that is professed or pretended, without any consideration of the nature of the principle or aim whence this real will and true endeavour arises. If a man has some real desire to obtain a thing, either direct



or indirect, or does really endeavour after a thing, he is said sincerely to desire or endeavour it; without any consideration of the goodness or virtuousness of the principle he acts from, or any excellency or worthiness of the end he acts for. Thus, a man who is kind to his neighbour's wife who is sick and languishing, and very helpful in her case, makes a shew of desiring and endeavouring her restoration to health and vigour; and not only makes such a shew, but there is a reality in his pretence—he does heartily and earnestly desire to have her health restored, and uses his true and utmost endeavours for it; he is said sincerely to desire and endeavour it, because he does so truly or really; though perhaps the principle he acts from is no other than a vile and scandalous passion; having lived in adultery with her, he earnestly desires to have her health and vigour restored, that he may return to his criminal pleasures with her. Or,

2. By *sincerity* is meant, not merely a *reality* of will and endeavour of some sort or other, and from some consideration or other, but a *virtuous sincerity*. That is, that in the performance of those particular acts that are the matter of virtue or duty, there be not only the matter, but the form and essence of virtue, consisting in the aim that governs the act, and the principle exercised in it. There is not only the reality of the act, that is as it were the *body* of the duty; but also the *soul*, which should properly belong to such a body. In this sense, a man is said to be sincere, when he acts with a *pure intention*; not from sinister views, or by-ends: he not only in reality desires and seeks the thing to be done,



or qualification to be obtained, for some end or other; but he wills the thing directly and properly, as neither forced nor bribed; the virtue of the thing is properly the object of the will.

In the former sense, a man is said to be sincere, in opposition to a mere pretence and *shew of the particular thing to be done or exhibited*, without any real desire or endeavour at all. In the latter sense, a man is said to be sincere, in opposition to that *shew of virtue there is in merely doing the matter of duty*, without the reality of the virtue itself in the soul, and the essence of it, which there is a shew of. A man may be sincere in the former sense, and yet in the latter be in the sight of God, who searches the heart, a vile hypocrite.

In the latter kind of sincerity, only, is there any thing truly valuable or acceptable in the sight of God. And this is the thing which in Scripture is called *sincerity, uprightness, integrity, truth in the inward parts, and a being of a perfect heart*. And if there be such a sincerity, and such a degree of it as there ought to be, and there be any thing further that the man is not able to perform, or which does not prove to be connected with his sincere desires and endeavours, the man is wholly excused and acquitted in the sight of God; his will shall surely be accepted for his deed: and such a sincere will and endeavour is all that in strictness is required of him by any command of God. But as to the other kind of sincerity of desires and endeavours, it, having no virtue in it (as was observed before), can be of no avail before God, in any case, to recommend, satisfy, or excuse, and has no positive moral weight or influence whatsoever.

Corol. 1. Hence it may be inferred, that nothing in the reason and nature of things appears from the consideration of any moral weight of that former kind of sincerity, which has been spoken of, at all obliging us to believe, or leading us to suppose, that God has made any positive promises of salvation, or grace, or any saving assistance, or any spiritual benefit whatsoever, to any desires, prayers, endeavours, striving, or obedience of those who hitherto have no true virtue or holiness in their hearts; though we should suppose all the sincerity, and the utmost degree of endeavour, that is possible to be in a person without holiness.

Some object against God's requiring, as the condition of salvation, those holy exercises which are the result of a supernatural renovation: such as, a supreme respect to Christ, love to God, loving holiness for its own sake, &c. ; that these inward dispositions and exercises are above men's power, as they are by nature; and therefore that we may conclude, that when men are brought to be sincere in their endeavours, and do as well as they can, they are accepted; and that this must be all that God requires in order to men's being received as the objects of his favour, and must be what God has appointed as the condition of salvation: concerning which I would observe, that in such a manner of speaking of *men's being accepted because they are sincere, and do as well as they can*, there is evidently a supposition of some virtue, some degree of that which is truly good, though it does not go so far as were to be wished. For if men *do what they can*, unless their so doing be from some good principle, disposition, or exercise of heart, some virtuous

inclination or act of the will, their so doing what they can, is in some respects not a whit better than if they did nothing at all. In such a case, there is no more positive moral goodness in a man's doing what he can, than in the wind-mill's doing what it can; because the action does no more proceed from virtue; and there is nothing in such sincerity of endeavour, or doing what we can, that should render it any more a proper or fit recommendation to positive favour and acceptance, or the condition of any reward or actual benefit, than doing nothing; for both the one and the other are alike nothing, as to any true moral weight or value.

Corol. 2. Hence also it follows, there is nothing that appears in the reason and nature of things which can justly lead us to determine, that God will certainly give the necessary means of salvation, or some way or other bestow true holiness and eternal life on those heathen who are sincere (in the sense above explained) in their endeavours to find out the will of the Deity, and to please him, according to their light, that they may escape his future displeasure and wrath, and obtain happiness in the future state, through his favour.

#### SECTION VI.

LIBERTY OF INDIFFERENCE NOT ONLY NOT NECESSARY TO VIRTUE, BUT UTTERLY INCONSISTENT WITH IT; AND ALL EITHER VIRTUOUS OR VICIOUS HABITS OR INCLINATIONS INCONSISTENT WITH ARMINIAN NOTIONS OF LIBERTY AND MORAL AGENCY.

To suppose such a freedom of will as Arminians talk of, to be requisite to virtue and vice, is many ways contrary to common sense.

If indifference belongs to liberty of will, as Arminians suppose, and it be essential to a virtuous action that it be performed in a state of liberty, as they also suppose, it will follow, that it is essential to a virtuous action that it be performed in a state of indifference: and if it be performed in a *state* of indifference, then doubtless it must be performed in the *time* of indifference. And so it will follow, that in order to the virtuousness of an act, the heart must be indifferent in the time of the performance of that act, and the more indifferent and cold the heart is with relation to the act which is performed, so much the better; because the act is performed with so much the greater liberty. But is this agreeable to the light of nature? Is it agreeable to the notions which mankind, in all ages, have of virtue; that it lies in that which is contrary to indifference, even in the *tendency* and *inclination* of the heart to virtuous action; and that the stronger the inclination, and so the further from indifference, the more virtuous the *heart*, and so much the more praiseworthy the *act* which proceeds from it?

If we should suppose (contrary to what has been before demonstrated) that there may be an act of will in a state of indifference; for instance, this act, viz. the will's determining to put itself out of a state of indifference, and give itself a preponderation one way; then it would follow, on Arminian principles, that this act or determination of the will is that alone wherein virtue consists, because this only is performed, while the mind remains in a state of indifference, and so in a state of liberty; for when once the mind is put out of its equilibrium, it is no

longer in such a state ; and therefore all the acts which follow afterwards, proceeding from bias, can have the nature neither of virtue nor vice. Or if the thing which the will can do, while yet in a state of indifference, and so of liberty, be only to suspend acting, and determine to take the matter into consideration, then this determination is that alone wherein virtue consists, and not proceeding to action after the scale is turned by consideration. So that it will follow, from these principles, all that is done after the mind, by any means, is once out of its equilibrium, and already possessed by an inclination, and arising from that inclination, has nothing of the nature of virtue or vice, and is worthy of neither blame nor praise. But how plainly contrary is this to the universal sense of mankind, and to the notion they have of sincerely virtuous actions ? which is, that they are actions which proceed from a heart *well disposed* and *inclined* ; and the *stronger* and the more *fixed* and *determined* the good disposition of the heart, the greater the sincerity of virtue, and so the more of the truth and reality of it. But if there be any acts which are done in a state of equilibrium, or spring immediately from perfect indifference and coldness of heart, they cannot arise from any good principle or disposition in the heart ; and consequently, according to common sense, have no sincere goodness in them, having no virtue of heart in them. To have a virtuous heart, is to have a heart that favours virtue, and is friendly to it, and not one perfectly cold and indifferent about it.

And besides, the actions that are done in a state of indifference, or that arise immediately



out of such a state, cannot be virtuous, because, by the supposition, they are not determined by any preceding choice. For if there be preceding choice, then choice intervenes between the act and the state of indifference; which is contrary to the supposition of the act's arising immediately out of indifference. But those acts which are not determined by preceding choice, cannot be virtuous or vicious, by Arminian principles, because they are not determined by the will. So that neither one way nor the other can any actions be virtuous or vicious, according to Arminian principles. If the action *be determined* by a preceding act of choice, it cannot be virtuous; because the action is not done in a state of indifference, nor does immediately arise from such a state; and so is not done in a state of liberty. If the action *be not determined* by a preceding act of choice, then it cannot be virtuous; because then the will is not self-determined in it. So that it is made certain, that neither virtue nor vice can ever find any place in the universe.

Moreover, that it is necessary to a virtuous action that it be performed in a state of indifference, under a notion of that being a state of liberty, is contrary to common sense; as it is a dictate of common sense, that indifference itself, in many cases, is vicious, and so to a high degree. As, if when I see my neighbour or near friend, and one who has in the highest degree merited of me, in extreme distress and ready to perish, I find an indifference in my heart with respect to any thing proposed to be done, which I can easily do, for his relief. So, if it should be proposed to me to blaspheme God, or kill my

father, or do numberless other things which might be mentioned, the being indifferent, for a moment, would be highly vicious and vile.

And it may be further observed, that to suppose this liberty of indifference is essential to virtue and vice, destroys the great difference of degrees of the guilt of different crimes, and takes away the heinousness of the most flagitious, horrid iniquities ; such as adultery, bestiality, murder, perjury, blasphemy, &c. For, according to these principles, there is no harm at all in having the mind in a state of perfect indifference with respect to these crimes ; nay, it is absolutely necessary in order to any virtue in avoiding them, or vice in doing them. But for the mind to be in a state of indifference with respect to them, is to be next door to doing them : it is then infinitely near to choosing, and so committing the fact : for equilibrium is the next step to a degree of preponderation ; and one, even the least degree of preponderation (all things considered) is choice. And not only so, but for the will to be in a state of perfect equilibrium with respect to such crimes, is for the mind to be in such a state as to be full as likely to choose them as to refuse them, to do them as to omit them. And if our minds must be in such a state, wherein it is as near to choosing as refusing, and wherein it must of necessity, according to the nature of things, be as likely to commit them as to refrain from them, where is the exceeding heinousness of choosing and committing them ? If there be no harm in often being in such a state wherein the probability of doing and forbearing are exactly equal, there

being an equilibrium, and no more tendency to one than the other, then, according to the nature and laws of such a contingency, it may be expected, as an *inevitable* consequence of such a disposition of things, that we should choose them as often as reject them: that it should generally so fall out, is necessary, as equality in the effect is the natural consequence of the equal tendency of the cause, or of the antecedent state of things from which the effect arises. Why then should we be so exceedingly to blame if it does so fall out?

It is many ways apparent, that the Arminian scheme of liberty is utterly inconsistent with the being of any such things as either virtuous or vicious habits or dispositions. If liberty of *indifference* be essential to moral agency, then there can be no virtue in any habitual inclinations of the heart; which are contrary to indifference, and imply in their nature the very destruction and exclusion of it. They suppose nothing can be virtuous in which no liberty is exercised; but how absurd is it to talk of exercising indifference under bias and preponderation!

And if *self-determining power* in the will be necessary to moral agency, praise, blame, &c., then nothing done by the will can be any further praise or blameworthy, than so far as the will is moved, swayed, and determined by itself, and the scales turned by the sovereign power the will has over itself. And therefore the will must not be put out of its balance already, the preponderation must not be determined and effected before-hand; and so the self-determining act anticipated. Thus it ap-

pears another way, that habitual bias is inconsistent with that liberty which Arminians suppose to be necessary to virtue or vice; and so it follows, that habitual bias itself cannot be either virtuous or vicious.

The same thing follows from their doctrine concerning the inconsistency of *necessity* with liberty, praise, dispraise, &c. None will deny, that bias and inclination may be so strong as to be invincible, and leave no possibility of the will's determining contrary to it; and so be attended with necessity. This Dr. Whitby allows concerning the will of God, angels, and glorified saints, with respect to good; and the will of devils, with respect to evil. Therefore, if necessity be inconsistent with liberty; then, when fixed inclination is to such a degree of strength, it utterly excludes all virtue, vice, praise, or blame. And if so, then the nearer habits are to this strength, the more do they impede liberty, and so diminish praise and blame. If very strong habits destroy liberty, the lesser ones proportionably hinder it, according to their degree of strength. And therefore it will follow, that then is the act most virtuous or vicious when performed without any inclination or habitual bias at all, because it is then performed with most liberty.

Every prepossessing fixed bias on the mind brings a degree of moral inability for the contrary; because, so far as the mind is biassed and prepossessed, so much *hinderance* is there of the contrary. And therefore if moral inability be inconsistent with moral agency, or the nature of virtue and vice, then, so far as there is any such thing as evil disposition of

heart, or habitual depravity of inclination, whether covetousness, pride, malice, cruelty, or whatever else, so much the more excusable persons are, so much the less have their evil acts of this kind the nature of vice. And, on the contrary, whatever excellent dispositions and inclinations they have, so much are they the less virtuous.

It is evident, that no habitual disposition of heart, whether it be to a greater or less degree, can be in *any degree* virtuous or vicious; or the actions which proceed from them *at all* praise or blameworthy. Because, though we should suppose the habit not to be of such strength as wholly to take away all moral ability and self-determining power; or hinder but that, although the act be partly from bias, yet it may be in part from self-determination: yet in this case, all that is from antecedent bias must be set aside, as of no consideration; and in estimating the degree of virtue or vice, no more must be considered than what arises from self-determining power, without any influence of that bias, because liberty is exercised in no more: so that all that is the exercise of habitual inclination, is thrown away, as not belonging to the morality of the action. By which it appears, that no exercise of these habits, let them be stronger or weaker, can ever have any thing of the nature of either virtue or vice.

Here if any one should say, that notwithstanding all these things, there may be the nature of virtue and vice in the habits of the mind, because these habits may be the effects of those acts wherein the mind exercised liberty; that however the fore-mentioned reasons



will prove that no habits which are natural, or that are born or created with us, can be either virtuous or vicious: yet they will not prove this of habits which have been acquired and established by repeated free acts.

To such an objector I would say, that this evasion will not at all help the matter. For if freedom of will be essential to the very *nature* of virtue and vice, then there is no virtue or vice but only in that very thing wherein this liberty is exercised. If a man in one or more things that he does, exercises liberty, and then by those acts is brought into such circumstances, that his liberty ceases, and there follows a long series of acts or events that come to pass necessarily; those consequent acts are not virtuous or vicious, rewardable or punishable; but only the free acts that established this necessity; for in them alone was the man free. The following effects, that are necessary, have no more of the nature of virtue or vice, than health or sickness of body have properly the nature of virtue or vice, being the effects of a course of free acts of temperance or intemperance; or than the good qualities of a clock are of the nature of virtue, which are the effects of free acts of the artificer; or the goodness and sweetness of the fruits of a garden are moral virtues, being the effects of the free and faithful acts of the gardener. If liberty be absolutely requisite to the morality of actions, and necessity wholly inconsistent with it, as Arminians greatly insist; then no *necessary effects* whatsoever, let the cause be never so good or bad, can be virtuous or vicious; but the virtue or vice must be only in the *free*

*cause.* Agreeably to this, Dr. Whitby supposes the necessity that attends the good and evil habits of the saints in heaven, and damned in hell, which are the consequence of their free acts in their state of probation, are not rewardable or punishable.

On the whole, it appears, that if the notions of Arminians concerning liberty and moral agency be true, it will follow, that there is no virtue in any such habits or qualities as humility, meekness, patience, mercy, gratitude, generosity, heavenly-mindedness; nothing at all praiseworthy in loving Christ above father and mother, wife and children, or our own lives; or in delight in holiness, hungering and thirsting after righteousness, love to enemies, universal benevolence to mankind: and, on the other hand, there is nothing at all vicious, or worthy of dispraise, in the most sordid, beastly, malignant, devilish dispositions; in being ungrateful, profane, habitually hating God and things sacred and holy; or in being most treacherous, envious, and cruel towards men. For all these things are *dispositions* and *inclinations* of the heart. And, in short, there is no such thing as any virtuous or vicious *quality of mind*; no such thing as inherent virtue and holiness, or vice and sin: and the stronger those habits or dispositions are, which used to be called virtuous and vicious, the further they are from being so indeed; the more violent men's lusts are, the more fixed their pride, envy, ingratitude, and maliciousness, still the further are they from being blameworthy. If there be a man that by his own repeated acts, or by any other means, is come to be of the

most hellish disposition, desperately inclined to treat his neighbours with injuriousness, contempt, and malignity; the further they should be from any disposition to be angry with him, or in the least to blame him. So, on the other hand, if there be a person, who is of a most excellent spirit, strongly inclining him to the most amiable actions, admirably meek, benevolent, &c. so much is he further from any thing rewardable or commendable. On which principles, the man Jesus Christ was very far from being praiseworthy for those acts of holiness and kindness which he performed, these propensities being strong in his heart. And, above all, the infinitely holy and gracious God is infinitely remote from any thing commendable, his good inclinations being infinitely strong, and he, therefore, at the utmost possible distance from being at liberty. And in all cases, the stronger the inclinations of any are to virtue, and the more they love it, the less virtuous they are; and the more they love wickedness, the less vicious.—Whether these things are agreeable to scripture, let every Christian, and every man who has read the Bible, judge: and whether they are agreeable to common sense, let every one judge that has human understanding in exercise.

And, if we pursue these principles, we shall find that virtue and vice are wholly excluded out of the world; and that there never was, nor ever can be, any such thing as one or the other, either in God, angels, or men. No propensity, disposition, or habit, can be virtuous or vicious, as has been shewn; because, they, so far as they take place, destroy the freedom of

the will, the foundation of all moral agency, and exclude all capacity of either virtue or vice.—And if habits and dispositions themselves be not virtuous nor vicious, neither can the exercise of these dispositions be so; for the exercise of *bias* is not the exercise of *free self-determining will*, and so there is no exercise of liberty in it. Consequently, no man is virtuous or vicious, either in being well or ill-disposed, nor in acting from a good or bad disposition. And whether this bias or disposition be habitual or not, if it exists but a moment before the act of will, which is the effect of it, it alters not the case, as to the necessity of the effect. Or if there be no previous disposition at all, either habitual or occasional, that determines the act, then it is not choice that determines it: it is therefore a contingency, that happens to the man, arising from nothing in him; and is necessary, as to any inclination or choice of his; and, therefore, cannot make him either the better or worse, any more than a tree is better than other trees, because it oftener happens to be lit upon by a swan or nightingale: or a rock more vicious than other rocks, because rattlesnakes have happened oftener to crawl over it. So that there is no virtue nor vice in good or bad dispositions, either fixed or transient; nor any virtue or vice in acting from any good or bad previous inclination; nor yet any virtue or vice, in acting wholly without any previous inclination. Where, then, shall we find room for virtue or vice?

## SECTION VII.

ARMINIAN NOTIONS OF MORAL AGENCY INCONSISTENT  
WITH ALL INFLUENCE OF MOTIVE AND INDUCEMENT, IN  
EITHER VIRTUOUS OR VICIOUS ACTIONS.

As Arminian notions of that liberty, which is essential to virtue or vice, are inconsistent with common sense, in their being inconsistent with all virtuous or vicious habits and dispositions; so they are no less so in their inconsistency with all influence of motives in moral actions.

It is equally against those notions of liberty of will, whether there be, previous to the act of choice, a preponderancy of the inclination, or a preponderancy of those circumstances which have a tendency to move the inclination. And, indeed, it comes to just the same thing: to say, the circumstances of the mind are such as tend to sway and turn its inclination one way, is the same thing as to say, the inclination of the mind, as, under such circumstances, tends that way.

Or if any think it most proper to say, that motives do alter the inclination, and give a new bias to the mind, it will not alter the case, as to the present argument. For if motives operate by giving the mind an inclination, then they operate by destroying the mind's indifference, and laying it under a bias. But to do this, is to destroy the Arminian freedom: it is not to leave the will to its own self-determination, but to bring it into subjection to the power of something extrinsic, which operates upon it, sways and determines it, previous to its own determination. So that what is done



from motive, cannot be either virtuous or vicious.—And besides, if the acts of the will are excited by motives, those motives are the *causes* of those acts of the will; which makes the acts of the will necessary; as effects necessarily follow the efficiency of the cause. And if the influence and power of the motive causes the volition, then the influence of the motive determines volition, and volition does not determine itself; and so is not free, in the sense of Arminians (as has been largely shewn already) and consequently can be neither virtuous nor vicious.

The supposition, which has already been taken notice of, as an insufficient evasion in other cases, would be, in like manner, impertinently alleged in this case; namely, the supposition that liberty consists in a power of suspending action for the present, in order to deliberation. If it should be said, though it be true that the will is under a necessity of finally following the strongest motive, yet it may, for the present, forbear to act upon the motive presented, till there has been opportunity thoroughly to consider it, and compare its real weight with the merit of other motives: I answer as follows:

Here, again, it must be remembered, that if determining thus to suspend and consider, be that act of the will, wherein alone liberty is exercised, then in this all virtue and vice must consist; and the acts that follow this consideration, and are the effects of it, being necessary, are no more virtuous or vicious than some good or bad events, which happen when they are fast asleep, and are the consequences

of what they did when they were awake. Therefore, I would here observe two things :

1. To suppose that all virtue and vice, in every case, consists in determining, whether to take time for consideration or not, is not agreeable to common sense. For, according to such a supposition, the most horrid crimes, adultery, murder, sodomy, blasphemy, &c. do not at all consist in the horrid nature of the things themselves, but only in the neglect of thorough consideration before they were perpetrated, which brings their viciousness to a small matter, and makes all crimes equal. If it be said, that neglect of consideration, when such heinous evils are proposed to choice, is worse than in other cases : I answer, this is inconsistent, as it supposes the very thing to be, which, at the same time, is supposed not to be ; it supposes all moral evil, all viciousness and heinousness, does not consist merely in the want of consideration. It supposes some crimes *in themselves*, in their *own nature*, to be more heinous than others, antecedent to consideration or inconsideration, which lays the person under a previous obligation to consider in some cases more than others.

2. If it were so, that all virtue and vice, in every case, consisted only in the act of the will, whereby it determines whether to consider or no, it would not alter the case in the least, as to the present argument. For still in this act of the will on this determination, it is induced by some motive, and necessarily follows the strongest motive ; and so is necessarily, even in that act wherein alone it is either virtuous or vicious.

One thing more I would observe, concerning the inconsistence of Arminian notions of moral agency with the influence of motives.—I suppose none will deny, that it is possible for motives to be set before the mind so powerful, and exhibited in so strong a light, and under so advantageous circumstances, as to be invincible; and such as the mind cannot but yield to. In this case, Arminians will doubtless say, liberty is destroyed. And if so, then if motives are exhibited with half so much power, they hinder liberty in proportion to their strength, and go half-way towards destroying it. If a thousand degrees of motive abolish all liberty, then five hundred take it half away. If one degree of the influence of motive does not at all infringe or diminish liberty, then no more do two degrees; for nothing doubled, is still nothing. And if two degrees do not diminish the will's liberty, no more do four, eight, sixteen, or six thousand. For nothing multiplied never so much comes to but nothing. If there be nothing in the nature of motive or moral suasion that is at all opposite to liberty, then the greatest degree of it cannot hurt liberty. But if there be any thing in the nature of the thing that is against liberty, then the least degree of it hurts it in some degree, and consequently hurts and diminishes virtue. If invincible motives to that action which is good, take away all the freedom of the act, and so all the virtue of it; then the more forcible the motives are, so much the worse, so much the less virtue; and the weaker the motives are, the better for the cause of virtue; and none is best of all.

Now let it be considered, whether these

things are agreeable to common sense. If it should be allowed, that there are some instances wherein the soul chooses without any motive, what virtue can there be in such a choice? I am sure there is no prudence or wisdom in it. Such a choice is made for no good end; for it is for no end at all. If it were for any end, the view of the end would be the motive exciting to the act; and if the act be for no good end, and so from no good aim, then there is no good intention in it: and, therefore, according to all our natural notions of virtue, no more virtue in it than in the motion of the smoke, which is driven to and fro by the wind, without any aim or end in the thing moved, and which knows not whither, nor why and wherefore, it is moved.

Corol. 1. By these things it appears, that the argument against the Calvinists, taken from the use of counsels, exhortations, invitations, expostulations, &c. so much insisted on by Arminians, is truly against themselves. For these things can operate no other way to any good effect, than as in them is exhibited motive and inducement, tending to excite and determine the acts of the will. But it follows, on their principles, that the acts of will excited by such causes, cannot be virtuous; because, so far as they are from these, they are not from the will's self-determining power. Hence it will follow, that it is not worth the while to offer any arguments to persuade men to any virtuous volition or voluntary action; it is in vain to set before them the wisdom and amiableness of ways of virtue, or the odiousness and folly of ways of vice. This notion of liberty and moral

agency frustrates all endeavours to draw men to virtue by instruction or persuasion, precept or example: for though these things may induce men to what is *materially* virtuous, yet at the same time they take away the *form* of virtue, because they destroy liberty; as they, by their own power, put the will out of its equilibrium, determine and turn the scale, and take the work of self-determining power out of its hands. And the clearer the instructions that are given, the more powerful the arguments that are used, and the more moving the persuasions or examples, the more likely they are to frustrate their own design; because they have so much the greater tendency to put the will out of its balance, to hinder its freedom of self-determination; and so to exclude the very form of virtue, and the essence of whatsoever is praiseworthy.

So, it clearly follows, from these principles, that God has no hand in any man's virtue, nor does at all promote it, either by a physical or moral influence; that none of the moral methods he uses with men to promote virtue in the world, have tendency to the attainment of that end; that all the instructions which he has given to men, from the beginning of the world to this day, by prophets or apostles, or by his Son Jesus Christ; that all his counsels, invitations, promises, threatenings, warnings, and exhortations; that all means he has used with men, in ordinances or providences; yea, all influences of his Spirit, ordinary and extraordinary, have had no tendency at all to excite any one virtuous act of the mind, or to promote any thing morally good and commendable, in



any respect.—For there is no way that these, or any other means, can promote virtue, but one of these three. Either (1.) by a physical operation on the heart. But all effects that are wrought in men in this way, have no virtue in them, by the concurring voice of all Arminians. Or, (2.) morally, by exhibiting motives to the understanding, to excite good acts in the will. But it has been demonstrated, that volitions, which are excited by motives, are necessary, and not excited by a self-moving power; and therefore, by their principles, there is no virtue in them. Or, (3.) by merely giving the will an opportunity to determine itself concerning the objects proposed, either to choose or reject, by its own uncaused, unmoved, uninfluenced self-determination. And if this be all, then all those means do no more to promote virtue than vice: for they do nothing but give the will opportunity to determine itself *either way*, either to good or bad, without laying it under any bias to either: and so there is really as much of an opportunity given to determine in favour of evil as of good.

Thus, that horrid blasphemous consequence will certainly follow from the Arminian doctrine which they charge on others; namely, that God acts an inconsistent part in using so many counsels, warnings, invitations, entreaties, &c. with sinners, to induce them to forsake sin, and turn to the ways of virtue; and that all are insincere and fallacious. It will follow, from their doctrine, that God does these things when he knows, at the same time, that they have no manner of tendency to promote the effect he seems to aim at; yea, knows that if they have

any influence, this very influence will be inconsistent with such an effect, and will prevent it. But what an imputation of insincerity would this fix on Him who is infinitely holy and true!—So that their's is the doctrine which, if pursued in its consequences, does horribly reflect on the Most High, and fix on him the charge of hypocrisy; and not the doctrine of the Calvinist; according to their frequent and vehement exclamations and invectives.

Corol. 2. From what has been observed in this section, it again appears, that Arminian principles and notions, when fairly examined and pursued in their demonstrable consequences, do evidently shut all virtue out of the world, and make it impossible that there should ever be any such thing in any case, or that any such thing should ever be conceived of. For, by these principles, the very notion of virtue or vice implies absurdity and contradiction. For it is absurd in itself, and contrary to common sense, to suppose a virtuous act of mind without any good intention or aim; and, by their principles, it is absurd to suppose a virtuous act with a good intention or aim; for to act for an end, is to act from a motive. So that if we rely on these principles, there can be no virtuous act with a good design and end; and it is self-evident, there can be none without: consequently there can be no virtuous act at all.

Corol. 3. It is manifest, that Arminian notions of moral agency, and *the being* of a faculty of will, cannot consist together: and that if there be any such thing as either a virtuous or vicious act, it cannot be an act of the will; no will can be at all concerned in it. For that act which

is performed without inclination, without motive, without end, must be performed without any concern of the will. To suppose an act of the will without these, implies a contradiction. If the soul in its act has no motive or end; then, in that act (as was observed before), it seeks nothing, goes after nothing, exerts no inclination to any thing; and this implies, that in that act it desires nothing, and chooses nothing; so that there is no act of choice in the case: and that is as much as to say, there is no act of will in the case. Which very effectually shuts all vicious and virtuous acts out of the universe; inasmuch as, according to this, there can be no virtuous or vicious act wherein the will is concerned; and according to the plainest dictates of reason, and the light of nature, and also the principles of Arminians themselves, there can be no virtuous or vicious act wherein the will is not concerned. And therefore there is no room for any virtuous or vicious acts at all.

Corol. 4. If none of the moral actions of intelligent beings are influenced by either previous inclination or motive, another strange thing will follow; and this is, that God not only cannot foreknow any of the future moral actions of his creatures, but he can make no conjecture, can give no probable guess, concerning them. For, all conjecture in things of this nature, must depend on some discerning or apprehension of these two things, *previous disposition* and *motive*, which, as has been observed, Arminian notions of moral agency, in their real consequence, altogether exclude.

## PART IV.

WHEREIN THE CHIEF GROUNDS OF THE REASONINGS OF ARMINIANS, IN SUPPORT AND DEFENCE OF THE FOREMENTIONED NOTIONS OF LIBERTY, MORAL AGENCY, &c. AND AGAINST THE OPPOSITE DOCTRINE, ARE CONSIDERED.

## SECTION I.

THE ESSENCE OF THE VIRTUE AND VICE OF DISPOSITIONS OF THE HEART, AND ACTS OF THE WILL, LIES NOT IN THEIR CAUSE, BUT THEIR NATURE.

ONE main foundation of the reasons which are brought to establish the fore-mentioned notions of liberty, virtue, vice, &c. is a supposition, that the virtuousness of the dispositions, or acts of the will, consists not in the nature of these dispositions or acts, but wholly in the origin or cause of them: so that if the disposition of the mind, or acts of the will, be never so good, yet if the cause of the disposition or act be not our virtue, there is nothing virtuous or praiseworthy in it; and, on the contrary, if the will, in its inclination or acts, be never so bad, yet, unless it arises from something that is our vice or fault, there is nothing vicious or blameworthy in it. Hence their grand objection and pretended demonstration, or self-evidence, against any virtue and commendableness, or vice and blameworthiness, of those habits or acts of the will, which are not from some virtuous or vicious determination of the will itself.

Now, if this matter be well considered, it will appear to be altogether a mistake, yea, a

gross absurdity; and that it is most certain, that if there be any such things as a virtuous or vicious disposition, or volition of mind, the virtuousness or viciousness of them consists not in the origin or cause of these things, but in the nature of them.

If the essence of virtuousness or commendableness, and of viciousness or fault, does not lie in the nature of the dispositions or acts of mind, which are said to be our virtue or our fault, but in their cause, then it is certain it lies no where at all. Thus, for instance, if the vice of a *vicious* act of will lies not in the nature of the act, but the cause; so that its being of a bad nature will not make it at all our fault, unless it arises from some faulty determination of ours, as its cause, or something in us that is our fault; then, for the same reason, neither can the viciousness of that cause lie in the nature of the thing itself, but in *its* cause: that evil determination of ours is not our fault, merely because it is of a bad nature, unless it arises from some cause in us that is our fault. And when we are come to this higher cause, still the reason of the thing holds good; though this cause be of a bad nature, yet we are not at all to blame on that account, unless it arises from something faulty in us. Nor yet can blameworthiness lie in the nature of *this* cause, but in the cause of *that*. And thus we must drive faultiness back from step to step, from a lower cause to a higher, *in infinitum*; and that is thoroughly to banish it from the world, and to allow it no possibility of existence any where in the universality of things. On these principles, vice, or moral evil, cannot consist in any



thing that is an *effect*; because *fault* does not consist in the nature of things, but in their cause; as well as because effects are necessary, being unavoidably connected with their cause: therefore the cause only is to blame. And so it follows, that faultiness can lie *only in that cause*, which is a *cause only*, and no effect of any thing. Nor yet can it lie in this; for then it must lie in the nature of the thing itself; not in its being from any determination of ours, nor any thing faulty in us, which is the cause, nor indeed from any cause at all; for, by the supposition, it is no effect, and *has no cause*. And thus, he that will maintain it is not the nature of habits or acts of will that makes them virtuous or faulty, but the cause, must immediately run himself out of his own assertion: and, in maintaining it, will insensibly contradict and deny it.

This is certain, that if effects are vicious and faulty, not from their nature, or from any thing inherent in them, but because they are from a bad cause, it must be on account of the *badness* of the cause: a bad effect in the will must be bad, because the cause is *bad*, or *of an evil nature*, or *has badness* as a quality inherent in it: and a *good* effect in the will must be *good*, by reason of the *goodness* of the cause, or its being *of a good kind and nature*. And if this be what is meant, the very supposition of fault and praise lying not in the nature of the thing, but the cause, contradicts itself, and does at least resolve the essence of virtue and vice into the nature of things, and supposes it originally to consist in that.—And if a caviller has a mind to run from the absurdity, by saying, “No, the fault of the thing, which is the cause,

lies not in this, that the cause itself is *of an evil nature*, but that the cause is evil in that sense, that it is from another bad cause." Still the absurdity will follow him; for, if so, then the cause before charged is at once acquitted, and all the blame must be laid to the higher cause, and must consist in that's being *evil*, or *of an evil nature*. So now we are come again to lay the blame of the thing blameworthy, to the nature of the thing, and not to the cause. And if any is so foolish as to go higher still, and ascend from step to step, till he is come to that which is the first cause concerned in the whole affair, and will say, all the blame lies in that; then, at last, he must be forced to own, that the faultiness of the thing, which he supposes alone blameworthy, lies wholly *in the nature* of the thing, and not in the original or cause of it; for the supposition is, that it has no original, it is determined by no act of ours, is caused by nothing faulty in us, being absolutely *without any cause*. And so the race is at an end, but the evader is taken in his flight!

It is agreeable to the natural notions of mankind, that moral evil, with its desert of dislike and abhorrence, and all its other ill-deservings, consists in a certain *deformity* in the *nature* of certain dispositions of the heart and acts of the will; and not in the deformity of *something else*, diverse from the very thing itself, which deserves abhorrence, supposed to be the cause of it. Which would be absurd, because that would be to suppose a thing, that is innocent and not evil, is truly evil and faulty, because another thing is evil. It implies a contradiction; for it would be to suppose, the very thing which is

morally evil and blameworthy, is innocent and not blameworthy; but that something else, which is its cause, is only to blame. To say, that vice does not consist in the thing which is vicious, but in its cause, is the same as to say, that vice does not consist in vice, but in that which produces it.

It is true a cause may be to blame for being the cause of vice: it may be wickedness in the cause that it produces wickedness. But it would imply a contradiction, to suppose that these two are the same individual wickedness. The wicked act of the cause in producing wickedness, is one wickedness; and the wickedness produced, if there be any produced, is another. And therefore the wickedness of the latter does not lie in the former, but is distinct from it; and the wickedness of both lies in the *evil nature* of the things which are wicked.

The thing which makes sin hateful, is that by which it deserves punishment; which is but the expression of hatred. And that which renders virtue lovely, is the same with that, on the account of which, it is fit to receive praise and reward; which are but the expressions of esteem and love. But that which makes vice hateful, is its hateful nature; and that which renders virtue lovely, is its amiable nature. It is a certain beauty or deformity that are *inherent* in that good or evil will, which is the *soul* of virtue and vice (and not in the *occasion* of it), which is their worthiness of esteem or disesteem, praise or dispraise, according to the common sense of mankind. If the cause or occasion of the rise of a hateful disposition or act of will, be also hateful, suppose another antecedent evil will;

that is entirely another sin, and deserves punishment by itself, under a distinct consideration. There is worthiness of dispraise in the nature of an evil volition, and not wholly in some foregoing act, which is its cause ; otherwise the evil volition, which is the effect, is no moral evil, any more than sickness, or some other natural calamity, which arises from a cause morally evil.

Thus, for instance, ingratitude is hateful and worthy of dispraise, according to common sense ; not because something as bad, or worse than ingratitude, was the cause that produced it ; but because it is hateful in itself, by its own inherent deformity. So, the love of virtue is amiable and worthy of praise, not merely because something else went before this love of virtue in our minds, which caused it to take place there ; for instance, our own choice ; we chose to love virtue, and, by some method or other, wrought ourselves into the love of it ; but because of the amiableness and condescency of such a disposition and inclination of heart. If that *was* the case, that we *did* choose to love virtue, and so produced that love in ourselves, this choice itself could be no otherwise amiable or praiseworthy, than as love to virtue, or some other amiable inclination, was exercised and implied in it. If that choice was amiable at all, it must be so on account of some amiable quality in the nature of the choice. If we chose to love virtue, not in love to virtue, or any thing that was good, and exercised no sort of good disposition in the choice, the choice itself was not virtuous nor worthy of any praise,

according to common sense, because the choice was not of a *good nature*.

It may not be improper here to take notice of something said by an author, that has lately made a mighty noise in America. "A necessary holiness (says he \*) is no holiness. Adam could not be originally created in righteousness and true holiness, because he must *choose* to be righteous, *before* he could be righteous. And therefore he must exist, he must be created; yea, he must exercise thought and reflection, before he was righteous." There is much more to the same effect in that place, and also in pp. 437, 438, 439, 440. If these things are so, it will certainly follow, that the first choosing to be righteous is no righteous choice; there is no righteousness or holiness in it, because no choosing to be righteous goes before it. For he plainly speaks of *choosing to be righteous*, as what *must go before righteousness*; and that which follows the choice, being the effect of the choice, cannot be righteousness or holiness: for an effect is a thing necessary, and cannot prevent the influence or efficacy of its cause; and therefore is unavoidably dependent upon the cause: and he says, *a necessary holiness is no holiness*. So that neither can a choice of righteousness be righteousness or holiness, nor can any thing that is consequent on that choice, and the effect of it, be righteousness or holiness; nor can any thing that is without choice, be righteousness or holiness. So that by his scheme, all righteousness and holiness is at once shut out of the

\* Scrip. Doc. of Original Sin, p. 180, third edit.



world, and no door left open by which it can ever possibly enter into the world.

I suppose the way that men came to entertain this absurd inconsistent notion, ~~with~~ with respect to *internal inclinations and volitions* themselves (or notions that imply it), viz. that the essence of their moral good or evil lies not in their nature, but their cause; was, that it is indeed a very plain dictate of common sense, that it is so with respect to all *outward actions*, and sensible motions of the body; that the moral good or evil of them does not lie at all in the motions themselves, which, taken by themselves, are nothing of a moral nature; and the essence of all the moral good or evil that concerns them, lies in those internal dispositions and volitions which are the cause of them. Now, being always used to determine this, without hesitation or dispute, concerning *external actions*, which are the things that, in the common use of language, are signified by such phrases as men's *actions*, or their *doings*; hence, when they came to speak of volitions, and *internal exercises* of their inclinations, under the same denomination of their *actions*, or *what they do*, they unwarily determined the case must also be the same with these as with *external actions*; not considering the vast difference in the nature of the case.

If any shall still object and say, why is it not necessary that the cause should be considered, in order to determine whether any thing be worthy of blame or praise? is it agreeable to reason and common sense, that a man is to be praised or blamed for that which he is not the cause or author of, and has no hand in?

I answer: Such phrases as *being the cause*,

*being the author, having a hand*, and the like, are ambiguous. They are most vulgarly understood for being the designing voluntary cause, or cause by antecedent choice; and it is most certain, that men are not, in this sense, the causes or authors of the first act of their wills, in any case, as certain as any thing is or ever can be; for nothing can be more certain than that a thing is not before it is, nor a thing of the same kind before the first thing of that kind; and so no choice before the first choice.—As the phrase, *being the author*, may be understood, not of being the producer by an antecedent act of will, but as a person may be said to be the author of the act of will itself, by his being the immediate agent, or the being that *is acting*, or *in exercise* in that act; if the phrase of *being the author* is used to signify this, then doubtless common sense requires men's being the authors of their own acts of will, in order to their being esteemed worthy of praise or dispraise, on account of them. And common sense teaches, that they must be the authors of *external actions*, in the former sense, namely, their being the causes of them by an act of will or choice, in order to their being justly blamed or praised: but it teaches no such thing with respect to the acts of the will themselves. But this may appear more manifest by the things which will be observed in the following section.

## SECTION II.

THE FALSENESS AND INCONSISTENCE OF THAT METAPHYSICAL NOTION OF ACTION AND AGENCY WHICH SEEMS TO BE GENERALLY ENTERTAINED BY THE DEFENDERS OF THE ARMINIAN DOCTRINE CONCERNING LIBERTY, MORAL AGENCY, &c.

ONE thing, that is made very much a ground of argument and supposed demonstration by Arminians, in defence of the fore-mentioned principles concerning moral agency, virtue, vice, &c., is their metaphysical notion of *agency* and *action*. They say, unless the soul has a self-determining power, it has no power of *action*; if its volitions be not caused by itself, but are excited and determined by some extrinsic cause, they cannot be the soul's own *acts*; and that the soul cannot be *active*, but must be wholly *passive*, in those effects which it is the subject of necessarily, and not from its own free determination.

Mr. Chubb lays the foundation of his scheme of liberty, and of his arguments to support it, very much in this position, that *man is an agent, and capable of action*. Which doubtless is true: but *self-determination* belongs to his notion of *action*, and is the very essence of it. Whence he infers, that it is impossible for a man to act and be acted upon, in the same thing, at the same time; and that nothing that is an action, can be the effect of the action of another: and he insists, that a *necessary agent*, or an agent that is necessarily determined to act, is a *plain contradiction*.

But those are a precarious sort of demonstrations, which men build on the meaning that

they arbitrarily affix to a word ; especially when that meaning is abstruse, inconsistent, and entirely diverse from the original sense of the word in common speech.

That the meaning of the word *action*, as Mr. Chubb and many others use it, is utterly unintelligible and inconsistent, is manifest, because it belongs to their notion of an action, that it is something wherein is no passion or passiveness ; that is (according to their sense of passiveness) it is under the power, influence, or action of no cause. And this implies, that action has no cause, and is no effect ; for to be an effect implies *passiveness*, or the being subject to the power and action of its cause. And yet they hold, that the mind's *action* is the effect of its own determination ; yea, the mind's free and voluntary determination, which is the same with free choice. So that action is the effect of something preceding, even a preceding act of choice : and consequently, in this effect, the mind is passive, subject to the power and action of the preceding cause, which is the foregoing choice, and therefore cannot be active. So that here we have this contradiction, that action is always the effect of foregoing choice, and therefore cannot be action ; because it is *passive* to the power of that preceding causal choice ; and the mind cannot be active and passive in the same thing, at the same time. Again, they say, necessity is utterly inconsistent with action, and a necessary action is a contradiction ; and so their notion of action implies contingency, and excludes all necessity. And, therefore, their notion of action implies, that it has no necessary dependence or connexion with any

thing foregoing ; for such a dependence or connexion excludes contingency, and implies necessity. And yet their notion of action implies necessity, and supposes that it is necessary, and cannot be contingent. For they suppose, that whatever is properly called action, must be determined by the will and free choice ; and this is as much as to say, that it must be necessary, being dependent upon, and determined by something foregoing, namely, a foregoing act of choice. Again, it belongs to their notion of action, of that which is a proper and mere act, that it is the beginning of motion, or of exertion of power ; but yet it is implied in their notion of action, that it is not the beginning of motion or exertion of power, but is consequent and dependent on a preceding exertion of power, viz. the power of will and choice ; for they say there is no proper action but what is freely *chosen*, or, which is the same thing, determined by a foregoing act of free choice. But if any of them shall see cause to deny this, and say they hold no such thing, as that every action is chosen or determined by a foregoing choice, but that the very first exertion of will only, undetermined by any preceding act, is properly called action ; then I say, such a man's notion of action implies necessity ; for what the mind is the subject of, without the determination of its own previous choice, it is the subject of necessarily, as to any hand that free choice has in the affair, and without any ability the mind has to prevent it by any will or election of its own ; because, by the supposition, it precludes all previous acts of the will or choice in the case, which might prevent it. So that it is



again, in this other way, implied in their notion of act, that it is both necessary and not necessary. Again, it belongs to their notion of an *act*, that it is no effect of a predetermining bias or preponderation, but springs immediately out of indifference; and this implies, that it cannot be from foregoing choice, which is foregoing preponderation: if it be not habitual, but occasional, yet if it causes the act, it is truly previous, efficacious, and determining. And yet, at the same time, it is essential to their notion of the act, that it is what the agent is the author of freely and voluntarily, and that is by previous choice and design.

So that, according to their notion of the act, considered with regard to its consequences, these following things are all essential to it, viz. That it should be necessary, and not necessary; that it should be from a cause, and no cause; that it should be the fruit of choice and design, and not the fruit of choice and design; that it should be the beginning of motion or exertion, and yet consequent on previous exertion; that it should be before it is; that it should spring immediately out of indifference and equilibrium, and yet be the effect of preponderation; that it should be self-originated, and also have its original from something else; that it is what the mind causes itself, of its own will, and can produce or prevent, according to its choice or pleasure, and yet what the mind has no power to prevent, precluding all previous choice in the affair.

So that an act, according to their metaphysical notion of it, is something of which there is no idea; it is nothing but a confusion of the

mind, excited by words, without any distinct meaning, and is an absolute nonentity; and that in two respects. (1.) There is nothing in the world that ever was, is, or can be, to answer the things which must belong to its description, according to what they suppose to be essential to it. And (2.) there neither is, nor ever was, nor can be, any notion or idea to answer the word, as they use and explain it. For, if we should suppose any such notion, it would many ways destroy itself. But it is impossible any idea or notion should subsist in the mind, whose very nature and essence which constitutes it, destroys it. If some learned philosopher, who had been abroad, in giving an account of the curious observations he had made in his travels, should say, "he had been in Terra del Fuego, and there had seen an animal, which he calls by a certain name, that begat and brought forth itself, and yet had a sire and dam distinct from itself; that it had an appetite, and was hungry before it had a being; that his master, who led him, and governed him at his pleasure, was always governed by him, and driven by him where he pleased; that when he moved, he always took a step before the first step; that he went with his head first, and yet always went tail foremost; and this, though he had neither head nor tail:" it would be no impudence at all to tell such a traveller, though a learned man, that he himself had no notion or idea of such an animal as he gave an account of, and never had, nor ever would have.

As the fore-mentioned notion of action is very inconsistent, so it is wholly diverse from the original meaning of the word. The more usual

signification of it, in vulgar speech, seems to be some *motion* or *exertion of power*, that is voluntary, or that is *the effect of the will*, and is used in the same sense as *doing*; and most commonly it is used to signify *outward actions*. So *thinking* is often distinguished from *acting*, and *desiring* and *willing* from *doing*.

Besides this more usual and proper signification of the word *action*, there are other ways in which the word is used that are less proper, which yet have place in common speech. Oftentimes it is used to signify some motion or alteration in inanimate things, with relation to some object and effect. So, the spring of a watch is said to *act* upon the chain and wheels; the sunbeams, to act upon plants and trees; and the fire, to act upon wood. Sometimes the word is used to signify motions, alterations, and exertions of power, which are seen in corporeal things, *considered absolutely*; especially when these motions seem to arise from some internal cause which is *hidden*; so that they have a greater resemblance of those motions of our bodies, which are the effects of natural volition, or invisible exertions of will. So, the fermentation of liquor, the operations of the loadstone, and of electrical bodies, are called the *action* of these things. And sometimes, the word *action* is used to signify the exercise of thought, or of will and inclination: so meditating, loving, hating, inclining, disinclining, choosing, and refusing, may be sometimes called acting; though more rarely (unless it be by philosophers and metaphysicians) than in any of the other senses.

But the word is never used in vulgar speech

in that sense which Arminian divines use it in, namely, for the self-determinate exercise of the will, or an exertion of the soul, that arises without any necessary connexion with any thing foregoing. If a man does something voluntarily, or as the effect of his choice, then, in the most proper sense, and as the word is most originally and commonly used, he is said to *act*; but whether that choice or volition be self-determined, or no; whether it be connected with foregoing habitual bias; whether it be the certain effect of the strongest motive, or some intrinsic cause, never comes into consideration in the meaning of the word.

And if the word *action* is arbitrarily used by some men otherwise, to suit some scheme of metaphysic or morality, no argument can reasonably be founded on such a use of this term, to prove any thing but their own pleasure. For divines and philosophers strenuously to urge such arguments, as though they were sufficient to support and demonstrate a whole scheme of moral philosophy and divinity, is certainly to erect a mighty edifice on the sand, or rather on a shadow. And though it may now perhaps, through custom, have become natural for them to use the word in this sense (if that may be called a sense or meaning, which is inconsistent with itself), yet this does not prove that it is agreeable to the natural notions men have of things, or that there can be any thing in the creation that should answer such a meaning. And though they appeal to experience, yet the truth is, that men are so far from experiencing any such thing, that it is impossible for them to have any conception of it.

If it should be objected, that *action* and *passion* are doubtless words of a contrary signification; but to suppose that the agent, in its action, is under the power and influence of something intrinsic, is to confound action and passion, and make them the same thing:

I answer, that action and passion are doubtless, as they are sometimes used, words of opposite signification; but not as signifying opposite *existences*, but only opposite *relations*. The words *cause* and *effect* are terms of opposite signification; but, nevertheless, if I assert that the same thing may, at the same time, in different respects and relations, be both *cause* and *effect*, this will not prove that I confound the terms. The soul may be both *active* and *passive* in the same thing in different respects; *active* with relation to one thing, and *passive* with relation to another. The word *passion*, when set in opposition to *action*, or rather *activeness*, is merely a relative: it signifies no effect or cause, nor any proper existence; but is the same with *passiveness*, or a being passive, or a being acted upon by some thing. Which is a mere relation of a thing to some power or force exerted by some cause, producing some effect in it or upon it. And *action*, when set properly in opposition to *passion*, or *passiveness*, is no real existence; it is not the same with *AN action*, but is a mere relation: it is the *activeness* of something on another thing, being the opposite relation to the other, viz. a relation of power, or force, exerted by some cause towards another thing, which is the subject of the effect of that power. Indeed, the word *action* is frequently used to signify something not merely



*relative*, but more *absolute*, and a real existence; as when we say *an action*; when the word is not used transitively, but absolutely, for some motion or exercise of body or mind, without any relation to any object or effect: and as used thus, it is not properly the opposite of *passion*, which ordinarily signifies nothing absolute, but merely the *relation of being acted upon*. And therefore, if the word *action* be used in the like relative sense, then action and passion are only two contrary relations. And it is no absurdity to suppose, that contrary relations may belong to the same thing, at the same time, with respect to different things. So, to suppose that there are acts of the soul by which a man voluntarily moves, and acts upon objects, and produces effects, which yet themselves are effects of something else, and wherein the soul itself is the object of something acting upon, and influencing that, does not at all confound action and passion. The words may nevertheless be properly of opposite signification: there may be as true and real a difference between *acting* and being *caused to act*, though we should suppose the soul to be both in the same volition, as there is between *living* and *being quickened*, or *made to live*. It is no more a contradiction, to suppose that action may be the effect of some other cause besides the agent, or being that acts, than to suppose, that life may be the effect of some other cause, besides the liver, or the being that lives, in whom life is caused to be.

The thing which has led men into this inconsistent notion of action, when applied to volition, as though it were essential to this

internal action, that the agent should be self-determined in it, and that the will should be the cause of it, was probably this,—that, according to the sense of mankind, and the common use of language, it is so, with respect to men's external actions, which are what originally, and according to the vulgar use and most proper sense of the word, are called *actions*. Men in these are self-directed, self-determined, and their wills are the cause of the motions of their bodies, and the external things that are done; so that unless men do them voluntarily, and of choice, and the action be determined by their antecedent volition, it is no action or doing of theirs. Hence some metaphysicians have been led unwarily, but exceeding absurdly, to suppose the same concerning volition itself, that *that* also must be determined by the will; which is to be determined by antecedent volition, as the motion of the body is; not considering the contradiction it implies.

But it is very evident, that in the metaphysical distinction between action and passion (though long since become common and the general vogue), due care has not been taken to conform language to the nature of things, or to any distinct, clear ideas;—as it is in innumerable other philosophical, metaphysical terms, used in these disputes; which has occasioned inexpressible difficulty, contention, error, and confusion.

And thus probably it came to be thought that necessity was inconsistent with action, as these terms are applied to volition. First, these terms, *action* and *necessity*, are changed from their original meaning, as signifying external

voluntary action and constraint, (in which meaning they are evidently inconsistent,) to signify quite other things, viz. volition itself, and certainty of existence. And when the change of signification is made, care is not taken to make proper allowances and abatements for the difference of sense ; but still the same things are unwarily attributed to *action* and *necessity*, in the new meaning of the words, which plainly belonged to them in their first sense ; and on this ground, maxims are established without any real foundation, as though they were the most certain truths, and the most evident dictates of reason.

But, however strenuously it is maintained, that what is necessary cannot be properly called action, and that a necessary action is a contradiction, yet it is probable there are few Arminian divines, who, if thoroughly tried, would stand to these principles. They will allow, that God is, in the highest sense, an active being, and the highest fountain of life and action ; and they would not probably deny, that those that are called God's acts of righteousness, holiness, and faithfulness, are truly and properly God's *acts*, and God is really a holy *agent* in them ; and yet, I trust, they will not deny, that God necessarily acts justly and faithfully, and that it is impossible for him to act unrighteously and unholily.

## SECTION III.

THE REASONS WHY SOME THINK IT CONTRARY TO COMMON SENSE, TO SUPPOSE THOSE THINGS WHICH ARE NECESSARY, TO BE WORTHY OF EITHER PRAISE OR BLAME.

It is abundantly affirmed and urged by Arminian writers, that it is contrary to *common sense*, and the natural notions and apprehensions of mankind, to suppose otherwise than that necessity (making no distinction between natural and moral necessity) is inconsistent with virtue and vice, praise and blame, reward and punishment. And their arguments from hence have been greatly triumphed in; and have been not a little perplexing to many, who have been friendly to the truth, as clearly revealed in the holy Scriptures: it has seemed to them indeed difficult, to reconcile Calvinistic doctrines with the notions men commonly have of justice and equity. And the true reasons of it seem to be these that follow.

I. It is indeed a very plain dictate of common sense, that natural necessity is wholly inconsistent with just praise or blame. If men do things which in themselves are very good, fit to be brought to pass, and very happy effects, properly against their wills, and cannot help it; or do them from a necessity that is without their wills, or with which their wills have no concern or connexion; then it is a plain dictate of common sense, that it is none of their virtue, nor any moral good in them; and that they are not worthy to be rewarded or praised, or at all esteemed, honoured, or loved,

on that account. And, on the other hand, that if, from like necessity, they do those things which in themselves are very unhappy and pernicious, and do them because they cannot help it; the necessity is such, that it is all one whether they will them or no; and the reason why they are done, is from necessity only, and not from their wills: it is a very plain dictate of common sense, that they are not at all to blame; there is no vice, fault, or moral evil, at all in the effect done; nor are they who are thus necessitated, in any wise worthy to be punished, hated, or in the least disrespected, on that account.

In like manner, if things, in themselves good and desirable, are absolutely impossible, with a natural impossibility, the universal reason of mankind teaches, that this *wholly and perfectly* excuses persons in their not doing them.

And it is also a plain dictate of common sense, that if the doing things in themselves good, or avoiding things in themselves evil, is not *absolutely impossible*, with such a natural impossibility, but very *difficult*, with a natural difficulty, that is, a difficulty prior *to*, and not at all consisting *in* will and inclination itself, and which would remain the same, let the inclination be what it will; then a person's neglect or omission is excused *in some measure*, though not wholly; his sin is less aggravated than if the thing to be done were easy. And if instead of difficulty and hinderance, there be a contrary natural propensity in the state of things to the thing to be done, or effect to be brought to pass, abstracted from any consideration of the inclination of the heart;



though the propensity be not so great as to amount to a natural necessity, yet being some approach to it, so that the doing the good thing be very much from this natural tendency in the state of things, and but little from a good inclination; then it is a dictate of common sense, that there is so much the less virtue in what is done; and so it is less praiseworthy and rewardable. The reason is easy, viz. because such a natural propensity or tendency is an approach to natural necessity; and the greater the propensity, still so much the nearer is the approach to necessity. And, therefore, as natural necessity takes away or shuts out *all* virtue, so this propensity approaches to an abolition of virtue; that is, it *diminishes* it. And, on the other hand, natural difficulty, in the state of things, is an approach to natural impossibility. And as the latter, when it is complete and absolute, *wholly* takes away blame, so such difficulty takes away *some* blame, or diminishes blame; and makes the thing done to be less worthy of punishment.

II. Men, in their first use of such phrases as these, *must, cannot, cannot help it, cannot avoid it, necessary, unable, impossible, unavoidable, irresistible, &c.* use them to signify a necessity of constraint or restraint, a natural necessity or impossibility; or some necessity that the will has nothing to do in; which may be, whether men will or no; and which may be supposed to be just the same, let men's inclinations and desires be what they will. Such kind of terms in their original use, I suppose, among all nations, are relative; carrying in their signification (as was before observed) a reference or respect

to some contrary will, desire, or endeavour, which, it is supposed, is, or may be, in the case. All men find, and begin to find in early childhood, that there are innumerable things that cannot be done, which they desire to do ; and innumerable things, which they are averse to, that must be, they cannot avoid them, they will be, whether they choose them or no. It is to express this necessity, which men so soon and so often find, and which so greatly and early affects them in innumerable cases, that such terms and phrases are first formed ; and it is to signify such a necessity, that they are first used, and that they are most constantly used, in the common affairs of life ; and not to signify any such metaphysical, speculative, and abstract notion, as that connexion in the nature or course of things, which is between the subject and predicate of a proposition, and which is the foundation of the certain truth of that proposition ; to signify which, they who employ themselves in philosophical inquiries into the first origin and metaphysical relations and dependencies of things, have borrowed these terms, for want of others. But we grow up from our cradles in a use of such terms and phrases entirely different from this, and carrying a sense exceeding diverse from that in which they are commonly used in the controversy between Arminians and Calvinists. And it being, as was said before, a dictate of the universal sense of mankind, evident to us as soon as we begin to think, that the necessity signified by these terms, in the sense in which we first learn them, does excuse persons and free them from all fault or blame ; hence our

idea of excusableness or faultlessness is tied to these terms and phrases by a strong habit, which is begun in childhood, as soon as we begin to speak, and grows up with us, and is strengthened by constant use and custom, the connexion growing stronger and stronger.

The habitual connexion which is in men's minds between blamelessness and those fore-mentioned terms, *must*, *cannot*, *unable*, *necessary*, *impossible*, *unavoidable*, &c. becomes very strong ; because as soon as ever men begin to use reason and speech, they have occasion to excuse themselves, from the natural necessity signified by these terms, in numerous instances—*I cannot do it ; I could not help it*. And all mankind have constant and daily occasion to use such phrases in this sense, to excuse themselves and others, in almost all the concerns of life, with respect to disappointments and things that happen, which concern and affect ourselves and others, that are hurtful, or disagreeable to us or them, or things desirable, that we or others fail of.

That a being accustomed to an union of different ideas, from early childhood, makes the habitual connexion exceeding strong, as though such connexion were owing to *nature*, is manifest in innumerable instances. It is altogether by such an habitual connexion of ideas, that men judge of the bigness or distance of the objects of sight, from their appearance. Thus, it is owing to such a connexion early established, and growing up with a person, that he judges a mountain, which he sees at ten miles' distance, to be bigger than his nose, or further off than the end of it. Having been used so

long to join a considerable distance and magnitude with such an appearance, men imagine it is by a dictate of natural sense : whereas, it would be quite otherwise with one that had his eyes newly opened, who had been born blind : he would have the same visible appearance, but natural sense would dictate no such thing, concerning the magnitude or distance of what appeared.

III. When men, after they had been so habituated to connect ideas of innocency or blamelessness with such terms, that the union seems to be the effect of mere nature, come to hear the same terms used, and learn to use them themselves, in the fore-mentioned new and metaphysical sense, to signify quite another sort of necessity, which has no such kind of relation to a contrary supposable will and endeavour ; the notion of plain and manifest blamelessness, by this means, is, by a strong prejudice, insensibly and unwarily transferred to a case to which it by no means belongs : the change of the use of the terms, to a signification which is very diverse, not being taken notice of, or adverted to. And there are several reasons why it is not.

1. The terms, as used by philosophers, are not very distinct and clear in their meaning : few use them in a fixed, determined sense. On the contrary, their meaning is very vague and confused. Which is what commonly happens to the words used to signify things intellectual and moral, and to express what Mr. Locke calls *mixed modes*. If men had a clear and distinct understanding of what is intended by these metaphysical terms, they would be able more



easily to compare them with their original and common sense; and so would not be so easily led into delusion by no sort of terms in the world, as by words of this sort.

2. The change of the signification of the terms is the more insensible, because the things signified, though indeed very different, yet do in some generals agree. In *necessity*, that which is *vulgarly* so called, there is a strong connexion between the thing said to be necessary, and some thing antecedent to it in the order of nature; so there is also in *philosophical necessity*. And though in both kinds of necessity the connexion cannot be called by that name, with relation to an opposite will or endeavour, to which it is *superior*; which is the case in vulgar necessity; yet, in both, the connexion is *prior* to will and endeavour, and so, in some respect, *superior*. In both kinds of necessity, there is a foundation for some certainty of the proposition that affirms the event.—The terms used being the same, and the things signified agreeing in these and some other general circumstances; and the expressions, as used by philosophers, being not well defined, and so of obscure and loose signification; hence persons are not aware of the great difference: and the notions of innocence or faultiness, which were so strongly associated with them, and were strictly united in their minds, ever since they can remember, remain united with them still, as if the union were altogether natural and necessary; and they that go about to make a separation, seem to them to do great violence, even to nature itself.

IV. Another reason why it appears difficult



to reconcile it with reason, that men should be blamed for that which is necessary with a moral necessity (which, as was observed before, is a species of philosophical necessity), is, that for want of due consideration, men inwardly entertain that apprehension, that this necessity may be against men's wills and sincere endeavours. They go away with that notion, that men may truly will, and wish, and strive, that it may be otherwise, but that invincible necessity stands in the way. And many think thus concerning themselves: some, that are wicked men, think they wish that they were good, that they loved God and holiness; but yet do not find that their wishes produce the effect. — The reasons why men think so, are as follow: (1.) They find what may be called an *indirect willingness* to have a better will, in the manner before observed. For it is impossible, and a contradiction, to suppose the will to be directly and properly against itself. And they do not consider, that this indirect willingness is entirely a different thing from properly willing the thing that is the duty and virtue required; and that there is no virtue in that sort of willingness which they have. They do not consider, that the volitions which a wicked man may have that he loved God, are no acts of the will at all against the moral evil of not loving God; but only some disagreeable consequences. But the making the requisite distinction requires more care of reflection and thought than most men are used to. And men, through a prejudice in their own favour, are disposed to think well of their own desires and dispositions, and to account them good and virtuous, though their

respect to virtue be only *indirect* and *remote*, and it is nothing at all that is virtuous that truly excites or terminates their inclinations. (2.) Another thing that insensibly leads and beguiles men into a supposition that this moral necessity or impossibility is, or may be, against men's wills and true endeavours, is the derivation and formation of the terms themselves, that are often used to express it, which is such as seems directly to point to, and holds this forth. Such words, for instance, as *unable*, *unavoidable*, *impossible*, *irresistible*, which carry a plain reference to a supposable power exerted, endeavours used, resistance made, in opposition to the necessity: and the persons that hear them, not considering nor suspecting but that they are used in their proper sense; that sense being therefore understood, there does naturally, and as it were necessarily, arise in their minds a supposition, that it may be so indeed, that true desires and endeavours may take place, but that invincible necessity stands in the way, and renders them vain and to no effect.

V. Another thing, which makes persons more ready to suppose it to be contrary to reason, that men should be exposed to the punishments threatened to sin, for doing those things which are morally necessary, or not doing those things morally impossible, is, that imagination strengthens the argument, and adds greatly to the power and influence of the seeming reasons against it, from the greatness of that punishment. To allow that they may be justly exposed to a small punishment, would not be so difficult. Whereas, if there were any good reason in the case, if it were truly a dictate of

reason, that such necessity was inconsistent with faultiness, or just punishment, the demonstration would be equally certain with respect to a small punishment, or any punishment at all, as a very great one; but it is not equally easy to the imagination. They that argue against the justice of *damning* men for those things that are thus necessary, seem to make their argument the stronger, by setting forth the greatness of the punishment in strong expressions:— *That a man should be cast into eternal burnings, that he should be made to fry in hell to all eternity, for those things which he had no power to avoid, and was under a fatal, unfrustrable, invincible necessity of doing.*

## SECTION IV.

IT IS AGREEABLE TO COMMON SENSE AND THE NATURAL NOTIONS OF MANKIND, TO SUPPOSE MORAL NECESSITY TO BE CONSISTENT WITH PRAISE AND BLAME, REWARD AND PUNISHMENT.

WHETHER the reasons that have been given, why it appears difficult to some persons to reconcile with common sense the praising or blaming, rewarding or punishing those things which are morally necessary, are thought satisfactory, or not; yet it most evidently appears, by the following things, that if this matter be rightly understood, setting aside all delusion arising from the impropriety and ambiguity of terms, this is not at all inconsistent with the natural apprehensions of mankind, and that sense of things which is found every where in the common people, who are furthest from having their thoughts perverted from their natural channel, by metaphysical and philosophical

subtilities; but, on the contrary, altogether agreeable *to*, and the very voice and dictate *of* this natural and vulgar sense.

I. This will appear, if we consider what the vulgar notion of *blameworthiness* is. The idea which the common people, through all ages and nations, have of faultiness, I suppose to be plainly this; *a person's being or doing wrong, with his own will and pleasure*; containing these two things: 1. *His doing wrong when he does as he pleases*: 2. *His pleasures being wrong*. Or, in other words, perhaps more intelligibly expressing their notion, *a person's having his heart wrong, and doing wrong from his heart*. And this is the sum total of the matter.

The common people do not ascend up in their reflections and abstractions to the metaphysical sources, relations, and dependencies of things, in order to form their notion of faultiness or blameworthiness. They do not wait till they have decided by their refinings, what first determines the will; whether it be determined by something extrinsic or intrinsic; whether volition determines volition, or whether the understanding determines the will; whether there be any such thing as metaphysicians mean by contingency (if they have any meaning); whether there be a sort of a strange, unaccountable sovereignty in the will, in the exercise of which, by its own sovereign acts, it brings to pass all its own sovereign acts. They do not take any part of their notion of fault or blame from the resolution of any such questions. If this were the case, there are multitudes, yea the far greater part of mankind, nine hundred and ninety-nine out of a thousand, would live and die without

having any such notion as that of fault ever entering into their heads, or without so much as one having any conception that any body was to be either blamed or commended for any thing. To be sure it would be a long time before men came to have such notions. Whereas it is manifest, they are some of the first notions that appear in children; who discover, as soon as they can think, or speak, or act at all as rational creatures, a sense of desert. And certainly, in forming their notion of it, they make no use of metaphysics. All the ground they go upon consists in these two things, *experience*, and a *natural sensation* of a certain fitness or agreeableness which there is in uniting such moral evil as is above described, viz. *a being or doing wrong with the will*, and resentment in others, and pain inflicted on the person in whom this moral evil is. Which *natural sense* is what we call by the name of *conscience*.

It is true the common people and children, in their notion of any faulty act or deed, of any person, do suppose that it is the person's *own act and deed*. But this is all that belongs to what they understand by a thing's being a person's *own deed or action*: even that it is something done by him of choice. That some exercise or motion should begin of itself, does not belong to their notion of *an action* or *doing*. If so, it would belong to their notion of it, that it is something which is the cause of its own beginning; and that is as much as to say, that it is before it begins to be. Nor is their notion of *an action*, some motion or exercise that begins accidentally, without any cause or reason; for that is contrary to one of the prime dictates of common



sense, namely, that every thing that begins to be, has some cause or reason why it is.

The common people, in their notion of a faulty or praiseworthy deed or work done by any one, do suppose that the man does it in the exercise of *liberty*. But then their notion of liberty is only a person's having opportunity of doing as he pleases. They have no notion of liberty consisting in the will's first acting, and so causing its own acts; and determining, and so causing its own determinations; or choosing, and so causing its own choice. Such a notion of liberty is what none have, but those that have darkened their own minds with confused metaphysical speculation, and abstruse and ambiguous terms. If a man is not restrained from acting as his will determines, or constrained to act otherwise; then he has liberty, according to common notions of liberty, without taking into the idea that grand contradiction of all, the determinations of a man's free will being the effects of the determinations of his free will.—Nor have men commonly any notion of freedom consisting in indifference. For if so, then it would be agreeable to their notion, that the greater indifference men act with, the more freedom they act with; whereas the reverse is true. He that, in acting, proceeds with the fullest inclination, does what he does with the greatest freedom, according to common sense. And so far is it from being agreeable to common sense, that such liberty as consists in indifference is requisite to praise or blame, that, on the contrary, the dictate of every man's natural sense through the world is, that the further he is from being indifferent in

his acting good or evil, and the more he does either with full and strong inclination, the more is he esteemed or abhorred, commended or condemned.

II. If it were inconsistent with the common sense of mankind, that men should be either to be blamed or commended in any volitions they have, or fail of, in case of moral necessity or impossibility; then it would surely also be agreeable to the same sense and reason of mankind, that the nearer the case approaches to such a moral necessity or impossibility, either through a strong antecedent moral propensity, on the one hand,\* or a great antecedent opposition and difficulty, on the other, the nearer does it approach to a being neither blamable nor commendable; so that acts exerted with such preceding propensity, would be worthy of proportionably less praise; and when omitted, the act being attended with such difficulty, the omission would be worthy of the less blame. It is so, as was observed before, with natural necessity and impossibility, propensity and difficulty: as it is a plain dictate of the sense of all mankind, that natural necessity and impossibility take away *all* blame and praise; and, therefore, that the nearer the approach is to these, through previous propensity or difficulty, so praise and blame are proportionably *diminished*. And if it were as much a dictate of common sense, that moral necessity of doing, or impossibility of avoiding,

\* It is here argued, on the supposition that not all propensity implies moral necessity, but only some very high degree; which none will deny.

takes away *all* praise and blame, as that natural necessity or impossibility does this ; then, by a perfect parity of reason, it would be as much the dictate of common sense, that an *approach* to moral necessity of doing, or impossibility of avoiding, *diminishes* praise and blame, as that an approach to natural necessity and impossibility does so. It is equally the voice of common sense, that persons are *excusable in part* in neglecting things difficult against their wills, as that they are *excusable wholly* in neglecting things impossible against their wills. And if it made no difference, whether the impossibility were natural, and against the will, or moral, lying in the will, with regard to excusableness ; so neither would it make any difference, whether the difficulty, or approach to necessity, be natural against the will, or moral, lying in the propensity of the will.

But it is apparent, that the reverse of these things is true. If there be an approach to a moral necessity in a man's exertion of good acts of will, they being the exercise of a strong propensity to good, and a very powerful love to virtue ; it is so far from being the dictate of common sense, that he is less virtuous, and the less to be esteemed, loved, and praised ; that it is agreeable to the natural notions of all mankind, that he is so much the better man, worthy of greater respect, and higher commendation. And the stronger the inclination is, and the nearer it approaches to necessity in that respect ; or to impossibility of neglecting the virtuous act, or of doing a vicious one ; still the more virtuous, and worthy of higher commendation. And, on the other hand, if a man

exerts evil acts of mind ; as, for instance, acts of pride or malice, from a rooted and strong habit or principle of haughtiness and maliciousness, and a violent propensity of heart to such acts ; according to the natural sense of men, he is so far from being the less hateful and blamable on that account, that he is so much the more worthy to be detested and condemned by all that observe him.

Moreover, it is manifest that it is no part of the notion, which mankind commonly have of a blamable or praiseworthy act of the will, that it is an act which is not determined by an antecedent bias or motive, but by the sovereign power of the will itself ; because, if so, the greater hand such causes have in determining any acts of the will, so much the less virtuous or vicious would they be accounted ; and the less hand, the more virtuous or vicious. Whereas the reverse is true : men do not think a good act to be the less praiseworthy, for the agent's being much determined in it by a good inclination or a good motive, but the more. And if good inclination or motive has but little influence in determining the agent, they do not think his act so much the more virtuous, but the less. And so concerning evil acts, which are determined by evil motives or inclinations.

Yea, if it be supposed, that good or evil dispositions are implanted in the hearts of men by nature itself, (which, it is certain, is vulgarly supposed in innumerable cases), yet it is not commonly supposed, that men are worthy of no praise or dispraise for such dispositions ; although what is natural is undoubtedly necessary, nature being prior to all acts of the

will whatsoever. Thus, for instance, if a man appears to be of a very haughty or malicious disposition, and is supposed to be so by his natural temper, it is no vulgar notion, no dictate of the common sense and apprehension of men, that such dispositions are no vices or moral evils, or that such persons are not worthy of disesteem, or odium and dishonour; or that the proud or malicious acts which flow from such natural dispositions, are worthy of no resentment. Yea, such vile natural dispositions, and the strength of them, will commonly be mentioned rather as an aggravation of the wicked acts that come from such a fountain, than an extenuation of them. Its being natural for men to act thus, is often observed by men in the height of their indignation: they will say, "It is his very nature; he is of a vile natural temper; it is as natural to him to act so, as it is to breathe; he cannot help serving the devil," &c. But it is not thus with regard to hurtful, mischievous things, that any are the subjects or occasions of, by *natural necessity*, against their inclinations. In such a case, the necessity, by the common voice of mankind, will be spoken of as a full excuse.—Thus, it is very plain, that common sense makes a vast difference between these two kinds of necessity, as to the judgment it makes of their influence on the moral quality and desert of men's actions.

And these dictates of men's minds are so natural and necessary, that it may be very much doubted whether the Arminians themselves have ever got rid of them: yea, their greatest doctors, that have gone furthest in defence of their metaphysical notions of liberty,



and have brought their arguments to their greatest strength, and, as they suppose, to a demonstration, against the consistence of virtue and vice with any necessity ; it is to be questioned, whether there is so much as one of them, but that, if he suffered very much from the injurious acts of a man under the power of an invincible haughtiness and malignancy of temper, would not, from the fore-mentioned natural sense of mind, resent it far otherwise, than if as great sufferings came upon him from the wind that blows, and fire that burns, by natural necessity ; and otherwise than he would, if he suffered as much from the conduct of a man perfectly delirious ; yea, though he first brought his distraction upon him some way by his own fault.

Some seem to disdain the distinction that we make between *natural* and *moral necessity*, as though it were altogether impertinent in this controversy : “ that which is necessary (say they) is necessary ; it is that which must be, and cannot be prevented. And that which is impossible, is impossible, and cannot be done : and therefore none can be to blame for not doing it.” And such comparisons are made use of, as the commanding of a man to walk who has lost his legs, and condemning and punishing him for not obeying ; inviting and calling upon a man who is shut up in a strong prison, to come forth, &c. But, in these things, Arminians are very unreasonable. Let common sense determine whether there be not a great difference between these two cases ; the one, that of a man who has offended his prince, and is cast into prison ; and after he

has lain there a while, the king comes to him, calls him to come forth to him ; and tells him, that if he will do so, and will fall down before him, and humbly beg his pardon, he shall be forgiven, and set at liberty, and also be greatly enriched, and advanced to honour : the prisoner heartily repents of the folly and wickedness of his offence against his prince, is thoroughly disposed to abase himself, and accept of the king's offer ; but is confined by strong walls, with gates of brass, and bars of iron. The other case is, that of a man who is of a very unreasonable spirit, of a haughty, ungrateful, wilful disposition ; and, moreover, has been brought up in traitorous principles, and has his heart possessed with an extreme and inveterate enmity to his lawful sovereign ; and for his rebellion is cast into prison, and lies long there, loaden with heavy chains, and in miserable circumstances. At length the compassionate prince comes to the prison, orders his chains to be knocked off, and his prison-doors to be set wide open ; calls to him, and tells him, if he will come forth to him, and fall down before him, acknowledge that he has treated him unworthily, and ask his forgiveness ; he shall be forgiven, set at liberty, and set in a place of great dignity and profit in his court. But he is stout and stomachful, and full of haughty malignity, that he cannot be willing to accept the offer : his rooted strong pride and malice have perfect power over him, and as it were bind him, by binding his heart : the opposition of his heart has the mastery over him, having an influence on his mind far superior to the king's grace and condescension, and to all his kind

offers and promises. Now, is it agreeable to common sense to assert, and stand to it, that there is no difference between these two cases, as to any worthiness of blame in the prisoners; because, forsooth, there is a necessity in both, and the required act in each case is impossible? It is true, a man's evil dispositions may be as strong and immovable as the bars of a castle. But who cannot see, that when a man, in the latter case, is said to be *unable* to obey the command, the expression is used improperly, and not in the sense it has originally, and in common speech; and that it may properly be said to be in the rebel's power to come out of prison, seeing he can easily do it if he pleases; though by reason of his vile temper of heart, which is fixed and rooted, it is impossible that it should please him?

Upon the whole, I presume there is no person of good understanding, who impartially considers the things which have been observed, but will allow, that it is not evident, from the dictates of the common sense, or natural notions of mankind, that moral necessity is inconsistent with praise and blame. And, therefore, if the Arminians would prove any such inconsistency, it must be by some philosophical and metaphysical arguments, and not common sense.

There is a grand illusion in the pretended demonstration of Arminians from common sense. The main strength of all these demonstrations lies in that prejudice, that arises through the insensible change of the use and meaning of such terms as *liberty*, *able*, *unable*, *necessary*, *impossible*, *unavoidable*, *invincible*, *action*, &c. from their original and vulgar sense, to a metaphysical sense,

entirely diverse; and the strong connexion of the ideas of blamelessness, &c. with some of these terms, by a habit contracted and established while these terms were used in their first meaning. This prejudice and delusion is the foundation of all those positions, they lay down as maxims, by which most of the Scriptures, which they allege in this controversy, are interpreted, and on which all their pompous demonstrations from Scripture and reason depend. From this secret delusion and prejudice they have almost all their advantages; it is the strength of their bulwarks, and the edge of their weapons. And this is the main ground of all the right they have to treat their neighbours in so assuming a manner, and to insult others, perhaps as wise and good as themselves, as *weak bigots, men that dwell in the dark caves of superstition, perversely set, obstinately shutting their eyes against the noon-day light, enemies to common sense, maintaining the first-born of absurdities, &c. &c.* But perhaps an impartial consideration of the things which have been observed in the preceding parts of this Inquiry, may enable the lovers of truth better to judge, whose doctrine is indeed *absurd, abstruse, self-contradictory*, and inconsistent with common sense, and many ways repugnant to the universal dictates of the reason of mankind.

*Corol.* From things which have been observed, it will follow, that it is agreeable to common sense to suppose that the glorified saints have not their freedom at all diminished in any respect; and that God himself has the highest possible freedom, according to the true and proper meaning of the term; and that he is, in the

highest possible respect, an agent, and active in the exercise of his infinite holiness ; though he acts therein, in the highest degree, necessarily ; and his actions of this kind are in the highest, most absolutely perfect manner virtuous and praiseworthy ; and are so, for that very reason, because they are most perfectly necessary.

## SECTION V.

CONCERNING THOSE OBJECTIONS, THAT THIS SCHEME OF NECESSITY RENDERS ALL MEANS AND ENDEAVOURS FOR THE AVOIDING OF SIN, OR THE OBTAINING VIRTUE AND HOLINESS, VAIN AND TO NO PURPOSE ; AND THAT IT MAKES MEN NO MORE THAN MERE MACHINES IN AFFAIRS OF MORALITY AND RELIGION.

ARMINIANS say, if it be so, that sin and virtue come to pass by a necessity consisting in a sure connexion of causes and effects, antecedents and consequents, it can never be worth the while to use any means or endeavours to obtain the one, and avoid the other ; seeing no endeavours can alter the futurity of the event, which is become necessary by a connexion already established.

But I desire that this matter may be fully considered ; and that it may be examined with a thorough strictness, whether it will follow, that endeavours and means, in order to avoid or obtain any future thing, must be more in vain, on the supposition of such a connexion of antecedents and consequents, than if the contrary be supposed.

For endeavours to be in vain, is for them not to be successful ; that is to say, for them not eventually to be the means of the thing aimed



at, which cannot be but in one of these two ways ; either, *first*, that although the means are used, yet the event aimed at does not follow ; or, *secondly*, if the event does follow, it is not because of the means, or from any connexion or dependence of the event on the means: the event would have come to pass as well without the means as with them. If either of these two things is the case, then the means are not properly successful, and are truly in vain. The successfulness or unsuccessfulness of means, in order to an effect, or their being in vain or not in vain, consists in those means being connected or not connected with the effect, in such a manner as this, viz. that the effect is *with* the means, and not *without* them ; or, that the being of the effect is, on the one hand, connected with means, and the want of the effect, on the other hand, is connected with the want of the means. If there be such a connexion as this between means and end, the means are not in vain ; the more there is of such a connexion, the further they are from being in vain ; and the less of such a connexion, the more they are in vain.

Now, therefore, the question to be answered, (in order to determine, whether it follows from this doctrine of the necessary connexion between foregoing things and consequent ones, that means used in order to any effect, are more in vain than they would be otherwise), is, whether it follows from it that there is less of the fore-mentioned connexion between means and effect ; that is, whether, on the supposition of there being a real and true connexion between antecedent things and consequent ones, there must be less of a connexion between means and effect,

than on the supposition of there being no fixed connexion between antecedent things and consequent ones ; and the very stating of this question is sufficient to answer it. It must appear to every one that will open his eyes, that this question cannot be affirmed without the grossest absurdity and inconsistency. Means are foregoing things, and effects are following things. And if there were no connexion between foregoing things and following ones, there could be no connexion between means and end ; and so all means would be wholly vain and fruitless. For it is by virtue of some connexion only, that they become successful. It is some connexion observed or revealed, or otherwise known, between antecedent things and following ones, that is what directs in the choice of means. And if there were no such thing as an established connexion, there could be no choice as to means ; one thing would have no more tendency to an effect than another ; there would be no such thing as tendency in the case. All those things which are successful means of other things, do therein prove connected antecedents of them ; and therefore, to assert that a fixed connexion between antecedents and consequents makes means vain and useless, or stands in the way to hinder the connexion between means and end, is just as ridiculous, as to say, that a connexion between antecedents and consequents stands in the way to hinder a connexion between antecedents and consequents.

Nor can any supposed connexion of the succession or train of antecedents and consequents, from the very beginning of all things, the connexion being made already sure and necessary,

either by established laws of nature, or by these together with a decree of sovereign immediate interpositions of Divine power, on such and such occasions, or any other way (if any other there be); I say, no such necessary connexion of a series of antecedents and consequents can in the least tend to hinder, but that the means we use may belong to the series; and so may be some of those antecedents which are connected with the consequents we aim at, in the established course of things. Endeavours which we use, are things that exist; and therefore they belong to the general chain of events; all the parts of which chain are supposed to be connected; and so endeavours are supposed to be connected with some effects, or some consequent things or other. And certainly this does not hinder but that the events they are connected with, may be those which we aim at, and which we choose, because we judge them most likely to have a connexion with those events, from the established order and course of things which we observe, or from something in Divine revelation.

Let us suppose a real and sure connexion between a man's having his eyes open in the clear day-light, with good organs of sight, and seeing; so that seeing is connected with his opening his eyes, and not seeing with his not opening his eyes; and also the like connexion between such a man's attempting to open his eyes, and his actually doing it: the supposed established connexion between these antecedents and consequents, let the connexion be never so sure and necessary, certainly does not prove that it is in vain for a man in such circumstances to attempt to open his eyes, in order to seeing: his

aiming at that event, and the use of the means, being the effect of his will, does not break the connexion, or hinder the success.

So that the objection we are upon does not lie against the doctrine of the necessity of events by a certainty of connexion and consequence; on the contrary, it is truly forcible against the Arminian doctrine of contingency and self-determination; which is inconsistent with such a connexion. If there be no connexion between those events wherein virtue and vice consist, and any thing antecedent; then there is no connexion between these events and any means or endeavours used in order to them; and if so, then those means must be in vain. The less there is of connexion between foregoing things and following ones, so much the less there is between means and end, endeavours and success; and in the same proportion are means and endeavours ineffectual and in vain.

It will follow from Arminian principles, that there is no degree of connexion between virtue or vice, and any foregoing event or thing; or, in other words, that the determination of the existence of virtue or vice does not in the least depend on the influence of any thing that comes to pass antecedently, from which the determination of its existence is, as its cause, means, or ground; because, so far as it is so, it is not from self-determination; and, therefore, so far there is nothing of the nature of virtue or vice. And so it follows, that virtue and vice are not at all, in any degree, dependent upon, or connected with, any foregoing event or existence, as its cause, ground, or means. And if so, then all foregoing means must be totally in vain.

Hence it follows, that there cannot, in any consistence with the Arminian scheme, be any reasonable ground of so much as a conjecture concerning the consequence of any means and endeavours, in order to escaping vice, or obtaining virtue, or any choice or preference of means, as having a greater probability of success by some than others ; either from any natural connexion or dependence of the end on the means, or through any divine constitution, or revealed way of God's bestowing or bringing to pass these things, in consequence of any means, endeavours, prayers, or deeds. Conjectures, in this latter case, depend on a supposition, that God himself is the giver, or determining cause, of the events sought : but if they depend on self-determination, then God is not the determining or disposing author of them ; and if these things are not of his disposal, then no conjecture can be made, from any revelation he has given, concerning any way or method of his disposal of them.

Yea, on these principles, it will not only follow, that men cannot have any reasonable ground of judgment or conjecture, that their means and endeavours to obtain virtue, or avoid vice, will be successful, but they may be sure they will not ; they may be certain that they will be in vain ; and that if ever the thing, which they seek, comes to pass, it will not be at all owing to the means they use. For means and endeavours can have no effect at all, in order to obtain the end, but in one of those two ways ; either (1.) through a natural tendency and influence to prepare and dispose the mind more to virtuous acts, either by causing the disposition of the heart to be more in favour of such



acts, or by bringing the mind more into the view of powerful motives and inducements ; or (2.) by putting persons more in the way of God's bestowment of the benefit. But neither of these can be the case. *Not the latter*, for, as has been just now observed, it does not consist with the Arminian notion of self-determination, which they suppose essential to virtue, that God should be the bestower, or (which is the same thing) the determining, disposing author of virtue. *Not the former* ; for natural influence and tendency supposes causality and connexion, and supposes necessity of event, which is inconsistent with Arminian liberty. A tendency of means, by biassing the heart in favour of virtue, or by bringing the will under the influence and power of motives in its determinations, are both inconsistent with Arminian liberty of will, consisting in indifference, and sovereign self-determination, as has been largely demonstrated.

But for the more full removal of this prejudice against the doctrine of necessity, which has been maintained, as though it tended to encourage a total neglect of all endeavours as vain ; the following things may be considered.

The question is not, Whether men may not thus improve this doctrine,—we know that many true and wholesome doctrines are abused : but, Whether the doctrine gives any just occasion for such an improvement ; or whether, on the supposition of the truth of the doctrine, such a use of it would not be unreasonable ? If any shall affirm, that it would not, but that the very nature of the doctrine is such as gives just occasion for it, it must be on this supposition ; namely, that such an invariable necessity of all things

already settled, must render the interposition of all means, endeavours, conclusions, or actions of ours, in order to the obtaining any future end whatsoever, perfectly insignificant ; because they cannot in the least alter or vary the course and series of things, in any event or circumstance ; all being already fixed unalterably by necessity ; and that therefore it is folly for men to use any means *for any end* ; but their wisdom to save themselves the trouble of endeavours, and take their ease. No person can draw such an inference from this doctrine, and come to such a conclusion, without contradicting himself, and going counter to the very principles he pretends to act upon ; for he comes to a conclusion, and takes a course, *in order to an end*, even *his ease*, or the saving himself from trouble : he seeks something future, and uses means in order to a future thing, even in his drawing up that conclusion, that he will seek nothing, and use no means in order to any thing in future ; he seeks his future ease, and the benefit and comfort of indolence. If prior necessity, that determines all things, makes vain all actions or conclusions of ours, in order to any thing future ; then it makes vain all conclusions and conduct of ours, in order to our future ease. The measure of our ease, with the time, manner, and every circumstance of it, is already fixed, by all-determining necessity, as much as any thing else. If he says within himself, “ What future happiness or misery I shall have, is already, in effect, determined by the necessary course and connexion of things ; therefore, I will save myself the trouble of labour and diligence, which cannot add to my determined degree of happi-

ness, or diminish my misery ; but will take my ease, and will enjoy the comfort of sloth and negligence.” Such a man contradicts himself ; he says, the measure of his future happiness and misery is already fixed, and he will not try to diminish the one, nor add to the other ; but yet, in his very conclusion, he contradicts this ; for, he takes up this conclusion, *to add to his future happiness*, by the ease and comfort of his negligence ; and to diminish his future trouble and misery, by saving himself the trouble of using means and taking pains.

Therefore, persons cannot reasonably make this improvement of the doctrine of necessity, that they will go into a voluntary negligence of means for their own happiness. For the principles they must go upon, in order to this, are inconsistent with their making any improvement at all of the doctrine ; for to make some improvement of it, is to be influenced by it, to come to some voluntary conclusion, in regard to their own conduct, with some view or aim ; but this, as has been shewn, is inconsistent with the principles they pretend to act upon. In short, the principles are such as cannot be acted upon at all, or, in any respect, consistently. And therefore, in every pretence of acting upon them, or making any improvement at all of them, there is a self-contradiction.

As to that objection against the doctrine, which I have endeavoured to prove, that it makes men no more than mere machines ; I would say, that notwithstanding this doctrine, man is entirely, perfectly, and unspeakably, different from a mere machine, in that he has reason and understanding, and has a faculty of will, and is so

capable of volition and choice; and in that his will is guided by the dictates or views of his understanding; and in that his external actions and behaviour, and, in many respects, also his thoughts, and the exercises of his mind, are subject to his will; so that he has liberty to act according to his choice, and do what he pleases; and, by means of these things, is capable of moral habits and moral acts, such inclinations and actions, as, according to the common sense of mankind, are worthy of praise, esteem, love, and reward; or, on the contrary, of disesteem, detestation, indignation, and punishment.

In these things is all the difference from mere machines, as to liberty and agency, that would be any perfection, dignity, or privilege, in any respect: all the difference that can be desired, and all that can be conceived of; and indeed all that the pretensions of the Arminians themselves come to, as they are forced often to explain themselves. (Though their explications overthrow and abolish the things asserted, and pretended to be explained.) For they are forced to explain a self-determining power of will, by a power in the soul to determine as it chooses or wills; which comes to no more than this, that a man has a power of choosing, and, in many instances, can do as he chooses. Which is quite a different thing from that contradiction, his having power of choosing his first act of choice in the case.

Or, if their scheme makes any other difference than this between men and machines, it is for the worse; it is so far from supposing men to have a dignity and privilege above machines, that it makes the manner of their being deter-

mined still more unhappy. Whereas machines are guided by an understanding cause, by the skilful hand of the workman or owner ; the will of man is left to the guidance of nothing but absolute blind contingency.

#### SECTION VI.

CONCERNING THAT OBJECTION AGAINST THE DOCTRINE WHICH HAS BEEN MAINTAINED, THAT IT AGREES WITH THE STOICAL DOCTRINE OF FATE, AND THE OPINIONS OF MR. HOBBS.

WHEN Calvinists oppose the Arminian notion of the freedom of will, and contingency of volition, and insist that there are no acts of the will, nor any other events whatsoever, but what are attended with some kind of necessity ; their opposers cry out of them, as agreeing with the ancient Stoics in their doctrine of fate, and with Mr. Hobbes in his opinion of necessity.

It would not be worth while to take notice of so impertinent an objection, had it not been urged by some of the chief Arminian writers. There were many important truths maintained by the ancient Greek and Roman philosophers, and especially the Stoics, that are never the worse for being held by them. The Stoic philosophers, by the general agreement of Christian divines, and even Arminian divines, were the greatest, wisest, and most virtuous of all the heathen philosophers ; and in their doctrine and practice came the nearest to Christianity of any of their sects. How frequently are the sayings of these philosophers, in many of the writings and sermons, even of Arminian divines, produced, not as arguments of the falseness of



the doctrines which they delivered, but as a confirmation of some of the greatest truths of the Christian religion, relating to the unity and perfections of the Godhead, a future state, the duty and happiness of mankind, &c. as observing how the light of nature and reason, in the wisest and best of the heathen, harmonised with and confirms the Gospel of Jesus Christ.

And it is very remarkable, concerning Dr. Whitby, that although he alleges the agreement of the Stoics with us, wherein he supposes they maintained the like doctrine with us, as an argument against the truth of our doctrine; yet this very Dr. Whitby alleges the agreement of the Stoics with the Arminians, wherein he supposes they taught the same doctrine with them, as an argument for the truth of their doctrine.\* So that, when the Stoics agree with them, this (it seems) is a confirmation of their doctrine, and a confutation of ours, as shewing that our opinions are contrary to the natural sense and common reason of mankind: nevertheless, when the Stoics agree with *us*, it argues no such thing in our favour; but, on the contrary, is a great argument against us, and shews our doctrine to be heathenish.

It is observed by some Calvinistic writers, that the Arminians symbolise with the Stoics in some of those doctrines wherein they are opposed by the Calvinists; particularly in their denying an original, innate, total corruption and depravity of heart; and in what they held of man's ability to make himself truly virtuous

\* Whitby on the "Five Points," p. 325—327, ed. 3.

and conformed to God; and in some other doctrines.

It may be further observed, it is certainly no better objection against our doctrine, that it agrees, in some respects, with the doctrine of the ancient Stoic philosophers, than it is against theirs, wherein they differ from us, that it agrees, in some respects, with the opinion of the very worst of the heathen philosophers, the followers of Epicurus, that father of atheism and licentiousness, and with the doctrine of the Sadducees and Jesuits.

I am not much concerned to know precisely what the ancient Stoic philosophers held concerning *fate*, in order to determine what is truth; as though it were a sure way to be in the right, to take good heed to differ from them. It seems that they differed among themselves; and probably the doctrine of *fate*, as maintained by most of them, was, in some respects, erroneous. But whatever their doctrine was, if any of them held such a fate as is repugnant to any liberty, consisting in our doing as we please; I utterly deny such a fate. If they held any such fate as is not consistent with the common and universal notions that mankind have of liberty, activity, moral agency, virtue and vice; I disclaim any such thing, and think I have demonstrated that the scheme I maintain is no such scheme. If the Stoics, by *fate* meant any thing of such a nature as can be supposed to stand in the way of the advantage and benefit of the use of means and endeavours, or make it less worth the while for men to desire and seek after any thing wherein their virtue and happiness consists; I hold no

doctrine that is clogged with any such inconvenience, any more than any other scheme whatsoever ; and by no means so much as the Arminian scheme of contingency ; as has been shewn. If they held any such doctrine of universal fatality as is inconsistent with any kind of liberty, that is or can be any perfection, dignity, privilege, or benefit, or any thing desirable, in any respect, for any intelligent creature, or indeed with any liberty that is possible or conceivable ; I embrace no such doctrine. If they held any such doctrine of fate as is inconsistent with the world's being in all things subject to the disposal of an intelligent wise Agent, that presides, not as the *soul* of the world, but as the sovereign *Lord* of the universe, governing all things by proper will, choice, and design, in the exercise of the most perfect liberty conceivable, without subjection to any constraint, or being properly under the power or influence of any thing before, above, or without himself ; I wholly renounce any such doctrine.

As to Mr. Hobbes's maintaining the same doctrine concerning necessity ; I confess it happens I never read Mr. Hobbes. Let his opinion be what it will, we need not reject all truth which is demonstrated by clear evidence, merely because it was once held by some bad man. This great truth, *that Jesus is the Son of God*, was not spoiled because it was once and again proclaimed with a loud voice by the devil. If truth is so defiled, because it is spoken by the mouth, or written by the pen, of some ill-minded mischievous man, that it must never be received, we shall never know when

we hold any of the most precious and evident truths by a sure tenure. And if Mr. Hobbes has made a bad use of this truth, that is to be lamented; but the truth is not to be thought worthy of rejection on that account. It is common for the corruptions of the hearts of evil men to abuse the best things to vile purposes.

I might also take notice of its having been observed, that the Arminians agree with Mr. Hobbes\* in many more things than the Calvinists;—as, in what he is said to hold concerning original sin, in denying the necessity of supernatural illumination, in denying infused grace, in denying the doctrine of justification by faith alone; and other things.

## SECTION VII.

### CONCERNING THE NECESSITY OF THE DIVINE WILL.

SOME may possibly object against what has been supposed of the absurdity and inconsistency of a self-determining power in the will, and the impossibility of its being otherwise than that the will should be determined in every case by some motive, and by a motive which (as it stands in the view of the understanding) is of superior strength to any appearing on the other side; that if these things are true, it will follow, that not only the will of created minds, but the will of *God himself*, is necessary in all its determinations. Concerning which, says the author of the *Essay on the*

\* Dr. Gill, in his answer to Dr. Whitby. Vol. iii. p. 183, &c.

*Freedom of Will in God and in the Creature* (pp. 85, 86). "What strange doctrine is this, contrary to all our ideas of the dominion of God? does it not destroy the glory of his liberty of choice, and take away from the Creator and Governor and Benefactor of the world, that most free and sovereign agent, all the glory of this sort of freedom? does it not seem to make him a kind of mechanical medium of fate, and introduce Mr. Hobbes's doctrine of fatality and necessity into all things that God hath to do with? Does it not seem to represent the blessed God as a being of vast understanding, as well as power and efficiency, but still to leave him without a will to choose among all the objects within his view? In short, it seems to make the blessed God a sort of almighty minister of fate, under its universal and supreme influence; as it was the professed sentiment of some of the ancients, that fate was above the gods."

This is declaiming, rather than arguing; and an application to men's imaginations and prejudices, rather than to mere reason.—But I would calmly endeavour to consider, whether there be any reason in this frightful representation.—But, before I enter upon a particular consideration of the matter, I would observe this: that it is reasonable to suppose, it should be much more difficult to express or conceive things according to exact metaphysical truth, relating to the nature and manner of the existence of things in the Divine understanding and will, and the operation of these faculties (if I may so call them) of the Divine Mind, than in the human mind; which is infinitely



more within our view, and nearer to a proportion to the measure of our comprehension, and more commensurate to the use and import of human speech. Language is indeed very deficient in regard of terms to express precise truth concerning our own minds, and their faculties and operations. Words were first formed to express external things; and those that are applied to express things internal and spiritual, are almost all borrowed, and used in a sort of figurative sense. Whence they are, most of them, attended with a great deal of ambiguity and unfixedness in their signification, occasioning innumerable doubts, difficulties, and confusions, in inquiries and controversies about things of this nature. But language is much less adapted to express things in the mind of the incomprehensible Deity precisely as they are.

We find a great deal of difficulty in conceiving exactly of the nature of our own souls. And notwithstanding all the progress which has been made, in past and present ages, in this kind of knowledge, whereby our metaphysics, as it relates to these things, is brought to greater perfection than once it was; yet, here is still work enough left for future inquiries and researches, and room for progress still to be made, for many ages and generations. But we had need to be infinitely able metaphysicians, to conceive with clearness, according to strict, proper, and perfect truth, concerning the nature of the Divine Essence, and the modes of the action and operation of the powers of the Divine Mind.

And it may be noted particularly, that though

we are obliged to conceive of some things in God as consequent and dependent on others, and of some things pertaining to the Divine nature and will as the foundation of others, and so before others in the order of nature: as, we must conceive of the knowledge and holiness of God as prior, in the order of nature, to his happiness; the perfection of his understanding, as the foundation of his wise purposes and decrees; the holiness of his nature, as the cause and reason of his holy determinations. And yet, when we speak of cause and effect, antecedent and consequent, fundamental and dependent, determining and determined, in the first Being, who is self-existent, independent, of perfect and absolute simplicity and immutability, and the first cause of all things; doubtless there must be less propriety in such representations, than when we speak of derived dependent beings, who are compounded, and liable to perpetual mutation and succession.

Having premised this, I proceed to observe concerning the fore-mentioned author's exclamation about the *necessary determination of God's will*, in all things, by what he sees to be *fittest* and *best*.

That all the seeming force of such objections and exclamations must arise from an imagination that there is some sort of privilege or dignity in being without such a moral necessity as will make it impossible to do any other than always choose what is wisest and best; as though there were some disadvantage, meanness, and subjection, in such a necessity; a thing by which the will was confined, kept under, and held in servitude by something,

which, as it were, maintained a strong and invincible power and dominion over it, by bonds that held him fast, and that he could, by no means, deliver himself from. Whereas, this must be all mere imagination and delusion. It is no disadvantage or dishonour to a being, necessarily to act in the most excellent and happy manner, from the necessary perfection of his own nature. This argues no imperfection, inferiority, or dependence, nor any want of dignity, privilege, or ascendancy.\* It is not

\* “It might have been objected, with more plausibleness, that the Supreme Cause cannot be free, because he must needs do always what is best in the whole. But this would not at all serve Spinoza’s purpose; for this is a necessity, not of nature and of fate, but of fitness and wisdom; a necessity consistent with the greatest freedom and most perfect choice. For the only foundation of this necessity is such an unalterable rectitude of will, and perfection of wisdom, as makes it impossible for a wise being to act foolishly.” — CLARKE’S *Demonstration of the Being and Attributes of God*. Edit. 6. p. 64.

“Though God is a most perfect free agent, yet he cannot but do always what is best and wisest in the whole. The reason is evident; because perfect wisdom and goodness are as steady and certain principles of action as necessity itself; and an infinitely wise and good Being, endued with the most perfect liberty, can no more choose to act in contradiction to wisdom and goodness, than a necessary agent can act contrary to the necessity by which it is acted; it being as great an absurdity and impossibility in choice, for Infinite Wisdom to choose to act unwisely, or Infinite Goodness to choose what is not good, as it would be in nature, for absolute necessity to fail of producing its necessary effect. There was, indeed, no necessity in nature, that God should at first create such beings as he has created, or indeed any being at all; because he is, in himself, infinitely happy and all-sufficient. There was, also, no necessity in nature, that he should preserve and continue things in being, after they were created; because he would be self-sufficient without their continuance, as he was before their creation. But it was fit, and wise, and good,

inconsistent with the absolute and most perfect sovereignty of God. The sovereignty of God is his ability and authority to do whatever pleases him; whereby *he doth according to his will in the armies of heaven, and amongst the inhabitants of the earth; and none can stay his hand, or say unto him, What dost thou?*—The

that Infinite Wisdom should manifest, and Infinite Goodness communicate itself; and therefore it was necessary, in the sense of necessity I am now speaking of, that things should be made, *at such a time*, and continued *so long*, and indeed with various perfections in such degrees, as Infinite Wisdom and Goodness saw it wisest and best that they should.”—*Ibid.* pp. 112, 113.

“It is not a fault, but a perfection of our nature, to desire, will, and act, according to the last result of a fair examination. This is so far from being a restraint or diminution of freedom, that it is the very improvement and benefit of it: it is not an abridgement, it is the end and use of our liberty; and the further we are removed from such a determination, the nearer we are to misery and slavery. A perfect indifference in the mind, not determinable by its last judgment, of the good or evil that is thought to attend its choice, would be so far from being an advantage and excellency of any intellectual nature, that it would be as great an imperfection as the want of indifference to act, or not to act, till determined by the will, would be an imperfection on the other side. It is as much a perfection, that desire, or the power of preferring, should be determined by good, as that the power of acting should be determined by the will: and the certainer such determination is, the greater the perfection. Nay, were we determined by any thing but the last result of our own minds, judging of the good or evil of any action, we were not free. This very end of our freedom being, that we might attain the good we choose; and therefore every man is brought under a necessity by his constitution, as an intelligent being, to be determined in willing, by his own thought and judgment, what is best for him to do; else he would be under the determination of some other than himself, which is want of liberty. And to deny that a man’s will, in every determination, follows his own judgment, is to say, that a man wills and acts for an end that he would not have, at



following things belong to the *sovereignty* of God: viz. (1.) supreme, universal, and infinite power; whereby he is able to do what he pleases, without control, without any confinement of that power, without any subjection, in the least measure, to any other power; and so without any hinderance or restraint, that it

the same time that he wills and acts for it. For if he prefers it in his present thoughts before any other, it is plain he then thinks better of it, and would have it before any other; unless he can have, and not have it; will, and not will it, at the same time; a contradiction too manifest to be admitted. If we look upon those superior beings above us who enjoy perfect happiness, we shall have reason to judge, that they are more steadily determined in their choice of good than we; and yet we have no reason to think they are less happy, or less free, than we are. And if it were fit for such poor finite creatures as we are, to pronounce what Infinite Wisdom and Goodness could do, I think we might say, that God himself cannot choose what is not good. *The freedom of the Almighty hinders not his being determined by what is best.* But, to give a right view of this mistaken part of liberty, let me ask, Would any one be a changeling, because he is less determined by wise determination than a wise man? Is it worth the name of freedom, to be at liberty to play the fool, and draw shame and misery upon a man's self? If to break loose from the conduct of reason, and to want that restraint of examination and judgment that keeps us from doing or choosing the worse, be liberty, true liberty, madmen and fools are the only free men. Yet I think no body would choose to be mad, for the sake of such liberty, but he that is mad already."—LOCKE *on the Hum. Und.* vol. i. edit. 7. pp. 215, 216.

"This Being, having all things always necessarily in view, must always, and eternally will, according to his infinite comprehension of things; that is, must will all things that are wisest and best to be done. There is no getting free of this consequence. If it can will at all, it must will this way. To be capable of knowing, and not capable of willing, is not to be understood. And to be capable of willing otherwise than what is wisest and best, contradicts that knowledge which is infinite. Infinite knowledge must direct the will without



should be either impossible, or at all difficult, for him to accomplish his will; and without any dependence of his power on any other power, from whence it should be derived, or which it should stand in any need of; so far from this, that all other power is derived from him, and is absolutely dependent on him.

(2.) That he has supreme *authority*; absolute and most perfect right to do what he wills, without subjection to any superior authority, or any derivation of authority from any other, or limitation by any distinct independent authority, either superior, equal, or inferior; he being the head of all dominion, and fountain of all authority; and also without restraint by any obligation, implying either subjection, derivation, or dependence, or proper limitation.

error. *Here, then, is the origin of moral necessity, and that is really of freedom.* Perhaps it may be said, when the Divine will is determined, from the consideration of the eternal aptitudes of things, it is as necessarily determined as if it were physically impelled, if that were possible. But it is unskilfulness to suppose this an objection. The great principle is once established, viz. that the Divine will is determined by the eternal reason and aptitudes of things, instead of being physically impelled; and after that, the more strong and necessary this determination is, the more perfect the Deity must be allowed to be: it is this that makes him an amiable and adorable Being, whose will and power are constantly, immutably determined by the consideration of what is wisest and best; instead of a surd Being, with power, but without discerning and reason. *It is the beauty of this necessity, that it is strong as fate itself, with all the advantage of reason and goodness.* It is strange to see men contend, that the Deity is not free, because he is necessarily rational, immutably good and wise; when a man is allowed still the perfecter being, the more fixedly and constantly his will is determined by reason and truth." *Inquiry into the Nature of the Human Soul.* Edit. 3 vol. ii. pp. 403, 404.

(3.) That his *will* is supreme, underived, and independent on any thing without himself; being in every thing determined by his own counsel, having no other rule but his own wisdom; his will not being subject to, or restrained by, the will of any other, and other wills being perfectly subject to his. (4.) That his *wisdom*, which determines his will, is supreme, perfect, underived, self-sufficient, and independent; so that it may be said, as in Isaiah, xl. 14, *With whom took he counsel, and who instructed him, and taught him in the path of judgment, and taught him knowledge, and shewed to him the way of understanding?* — There is no other divine sovereignty but this; and this is properly *absolute sovereignty*: no other is desirable; nor would any other be honourable or happy: and, indeed, there is no other conceivable or possible. It is the glory and greatness of the Divine Sovereign, that God's will is determined by his own infinite, all-sufficient wisdom in every thing; and in nothing at all is either directed by any inferior wisdom, or by no wisdom; whereby it would become senseless arbitrariness, determining and acting without reason, design, or end.

If God's will is steadily and surely determined in every thing by *supreme* wisdom, then it is in every thing necessarily determined to that which is *most* wise. And, certainly, it would be a disadvantage and indignity to be otherwise. For if the Divine will was not necessarily determined to that which, in every case, is wisest and best, it must be subject to some degree of undesigning contingency; and so in the same degree liable to evil. To suppose

the Divine will liable to be carried hither and thither at random, by the uncertain wind of blind contingency, which is guided by no wisdom, no motive, no intelligent dictate whatsoever, (if any such thing were possible,) would certainly argue a great degree of imperfection and meanness, infinitely unworthy of the Deity. If it be a disadvantage for the Divine will to be attended with this moral necessity, then the more free from it, and the more left at random, the greater dignity and advantage. And, consequently, to be perfectly free from the direction of understanding, and universally and entirely left to senseless, unmeaning contingency, to act absolutely at random, would be the supreme glory.

It no more argues any dependence of God's will, that his supremely wise volition is necessary, than it argues a dependence of his being, that his existence is necessary. If it be something too low for the Supreme Being to have his will determined by moral necessity, so as necessarily, in every case, to will in the highest degree holily and happily; then why is it not also something too low for him to have his existence, and the infinite perfection of his nature, and his infinite happiness, determined by necessity? It is no more to God's dishonour to be necessarily wise, than to be necessarily holy. And if neither of them be to his dishonour, then it is not to his dishonour necessarily to act holily and wisely. And if it be not dishonourable to be necessarily holy and wise, in the highest possible degree, no more is it mean and dishonourable, necessarily to act holily and wisely in the highest possible degree; or, which is the

same thing, to do that, in every case, which, above all other things, is wisest and best.

The reason why it is not dishonourable to be necessarily *most* holy, is, because holiness in itself is an excellent and honourable thing. For the same reason, it is no dishonour to be necessarily *most* wise, and, in every case, to act most wisely, or do the thing which is the wisest of all; for wisdom is also in itself excellent and honourable.

The fore-mentioned author of the “Essay on the Freedom of Will,” &c. as has been observed, represents that doctrine of the Divine will’s being in every thing necessarily determined by superior fitness, as making the blessed God a kind of almighty minister and mechanical medium of fate; and he insists, (pp. 93, 94,) that this moral necessity and impossibility is, in effect, the same thing with physical and natural necessity and impossibility; and in pp. 54, 55, he says, “The scheme which determines the will always and certainly by the understanding, and the understanding by the appearance of things, seems to take away the true nature of vice and virtue. For the sublimest of virtues, and the vilest of vices, seem rather to be matters of fate and necessity, flowing naturally and necessarily from the existence, the circumstances, and present situation of persons and things; for this existence and situation necessarily makes such an appearance to the mind; from this appearance flows a necessary perception and judgment concerning these things; this judgment necessarily determines the will; and thus, by this chain of necessary causes, virtue and vice would lose their nature, and become



natural ideas, and necessary things, instead of moral and free actions."

And yet this same author allows, (pp. 30, 31,) that a perfectly wise being will constantly and certainly choose what is most fit; and says, pp. 102, 103, "I grant, and always have granted, that wheresoever there is such antecedent superior fitness of things, God acts according to it, so as never to contradict it; and, particularly, in all his judicial proceedings as a governor, and distributor of rewards and punishments." Yea, he says expressly, (p. 42,) "That it is not possible for God to act otherwise than according to this fitness and goodness in things."

So that, according to this author, putting these several passages of this essay together, there is *no virtue, nor any thing of a moral nature*, in the most sublime and glorious acts and exercises of God's holiness, justice, and faithfulness; and he never does any thing which is in itself supremely worthy, and, above all other things, fit and excellent, but only as a kind of mechanical medium of fate; and in *what he does as the judge and moral governor of the world*, he exercises no moral excellency, exercising no freedom in these things, because he acts by moral necessity, which is, in effect, the same with physical or natural necessity; and therefore he only acts by an Hobbistical fatality; *as a being indeed of vast understanding, as well as power and efficiency* (as he said before), *but without a will to choose, being a kind of almighty minister of fate, acting under its supreme influence*. For he allows, that in all these things, God's will is determined constantly and certainly by a superior fitness, and that it is not possible for



him to act otherwise. And if these things are so, what glory or praise belongs to God for doing holily and justly, or taking the most fit, holy, wise, and excellent course, in any one instance? Whereas, according to the Scriptures, and also the common sense of mankind, it does not, in the least, derogate from the honour of any being, that through the moral perfection of his nature he necessarily acts with supreme wisdom and holiness; but, on the contrary, his praise is the greater; herein consists the height of his glory.

The same author (p. 56,) supposes that herein appears the excellent *character of a wise and good man, that though he can choose contrary to the fitness of things, yet he does not; but suffers himself to be directed by fitness; and that, in this conduct, he imitates the blessed God.* And yet, he supposes it is contrariwise with the blessed God; not that he suffers himself to be directed by fitness, when *he can choose, contrary to the fitness of things, but that he cannot choose contrary to the fitness of things;* as he says, (p. 42) *that it is not possible for God to act otherwise than according to this fitness, where there is any fitness or goodness in things.* Yea, he supposes, (p. 31) that if a man *were perfectly wise and good, he could not do otherwise than be constantly and certainly determined by the fitness of things.*

One thing more I would observe, before I conclude this section; and that is, that if it derogates nothing from the glory of God to be necessarily determined by superior fitness in some things, then neither does it to be thus determined in all things; from any thing in the nature of such necessity, as at all detracting

from God's freedom, independence, absolute supremacy, or any dignity or glory of his nature, state, or manner of acting; or as implying any infirmity, restraint, or subjection. And if the thing be such as well consists with God's glory, and has nothing tending at all to detract from it; then we need not be afraid of ascribing it to God in too many things, lest thereby we should detract from God's glory too much.

### SECTION VIII.

SOME FURTHER OBJECTIONS AGAINST THE MORAL NECESSITY OF GOD'S VOLITIONS CONSIDERED.

THE author last cited, as has been observed, owns that God, being perfectly wise, will constantly and certainly choose what appears most fit, where there is a superior fitness and goodness in things; and that it is not possible for him to do otherwise. So that it is in effect confessed, that in those things where there is any real preferableness, it is no dishonour, nothing in any respect unworthy of God, for him to act from necessity: notwithstanding all that can be objected from the agreement of such a necessity with the fate of the Stoics, and the necessity maintained by Mr. Hobbes. From which it will follow, that if it were so, that in all the different things among which God chooses, there were evermore a superior fitness or preferableness on one side, then it would be no dishonour, or any thing, in any respect, unworthy or unbecoming of God, for his will to be necessarily determined in every thing. And if this be allowed, it is a giving up entirely the argument, from the unsuitableness

of such a necessity to the liberty, supremacy, independence, and glory of the Divine Being; and a resting the whole weight of the affair on the decision of another point wholly diverse, viz. *whether it be so indeed*, that in all the various possible things which are in God's view, and may be considered as capable objects of his choice, there is not evermore a preferableness in one thing above another. This is denied by this author, who supposes that, in many instances, between two or more possible things which come within the view of the Divine mind, there is a perfect indifference and equality, as to fitness or tendency, to attain any good end which God can have in view, or to answer any of his designs. Now, therefore, I would consider whether this be evident.

The arguments brought to prove this are of two kinds. (1.) It is urged, that, in many instances, we must suppose there is absolutely no difference between various possible objects of choice, which God has in view: and, (2.) that the difference between many things is so inconsiderable, or of such a nature, that it would be unreasonable to suppose it to be of any consequence, or to suppose that any of God's wise designs would not be answered in one way as well as the other. Therefore,

I. The first thing to be considered is, whether there are any instances wherein there is a perfect likeness, and absolutely no difference between different objects of choice, that are proposed to the Divine understanding?

And here, in the *first* place, it may be worthy to be considered, whether the contradiction there is in the *terms* of the question proposed,

does not give reason to suspect that there is an inconsistency in the *thing* supposed. It is inquired, whether *different* objects of choice may not be absolutely *without difference*? If they are absolutely *without difference*, then how are they *different* objects of choice? If there be absolutely *no difference*, in any respect, then there is *no variety* or *distinction*; for distinction is only by some difference. And if there be no *variety* among proposed *objects of choice*, then there is no opportunity for *variety of choice*, or difference of determination. For that determination of a thing, which is not different in any respect, is not a different determination, but the same. That this is no quibble, may appear more fully anon.

The arguments to prove that the Most High, in some instances, chooses to do one thing rather than another, where the things themselves are perfectly without difference, are two.

1. That the various parts of infinite time and space, absolutely considered, are perfectly alike, and do not differ at all one from another; and that therefore, when God determined to create the world in such a part of infinite duration and space, rather than others, he determined and preferred, among various objects, between which there was no preferableness, and absolutely no difference.

*Answ.* This objection supposes an infinite length of time before the world was created, distinguished by successive parts, properly and truly so; or a succession of limited and unmeasurable periods of time, following one another, in an infinitely long series: which must needs be a groundless imagination. The eternal dura-



tion which was before the world, being only the eternity of God's existence; which is nothing else but his immediate, perfect, and invariable possession of the whole of his unlimited life, together and at once; *vitæ interminabilis, tota, simul et perfecta possessio*. Which is so generally allowed, that I need not stand to demonstrate it.\*

So, this objection supposes an extent of space beyond the limits of the creation, of an infinite length, breadth, and depth, truly and properly distinguished into different measurable parts, limited at certain stages, one beyond another, in an infinite series. Which notion of absolute and infinite space is doubtless as unreasonable as that now mentioned of absolute and infinite duration. It is as improper to imagine that the immensity and omnipresence of God is distinguished by a series of miles and leagues, one

\* “If all created beings were taken away, all possibility of any mutation or succession of one thing to another, would appear to be also removed. Abstract succession in eternity is scarce to be understood. What is it that succeeds? One minute to another, perhaps, *velut unda supervenit undam*. But when we imagine this, we fancy that the minutes are things separately existing. This is the common notion; and yet it is a manifest prejudice. Time is nothing but the existence of created successive beings, and eternity the necessary existence of the Deity. Therefore, if this necessary Being hath no change or succession in his nature, his existence must of course be unsuccessive. We seem to commit a double oversight in this case; *first*, we find succession in the necessary nature and existence of the Deity himself; which is wrong, if the reasoning above be conclusive. And *then* we ascribe this succession to eternity, considered abstractedly from the Eternal Being; and suppose it, one knows not what, a thing subsisting by itself, and flowing one minute after another. This is the work of pure imagination, and con-



beyond another, as that the infinite duration of God is distinguished by months and years, one after another. A diversity and order of distinct parts, limited by certain periods, is as conceivable, and does as naturally obtrude itself on our imagination, in one case as the other; and there is equal reason in each case, to suppose that our imagination deceives us. It is equally improper to talk of months and years of the Divine existence, and mile-squares of Deity: and we equally deceive ourselves when we talk of the world's being differently fixed, with respect to either of these sorts of measures. I think we know not what we mean, if we say, the world might have been differently placed from what it is, in the broad expanse of infinity; or, that it might have been differently fixed in the long line of eternity: and all arguments and objections, which are built on the imaginations we are apt to have of

trary to the reality of things. Hence the common metaphorical expressions; *Time runs a-pace, let us lay hold on the present minute*, and the like. The philosophers themselves mislead us by their illustration. They compare eternity to the motion of a point running on for ever, and making a traceless infinite line. Here the point is supposed a thing actually subsisting, representing the present minute; and then they ascribe motion or succession to it; that is, they ascribe motion to a mere nonentity, to illustrate to us a successive eternity, made up of finite successive parts.—If once we allow an all-perfect Mind, which hath an eternal immutable, and infinite comprehension of all things always, (and allow it we must), the distinction of past and future vanishes with respect to such a Mind. In a word, if we proceed step by step, as above, the eternity or existence of the Deity will appear to be *vitæ interminabilis, tota, simul et perfecta possessio*; how much soever this may have been a paradox hitherto." — *Inquiry into the Nature of the Human Soul*, vol. ii. pp. 409—411. Edit. 3:

infinite extension or duration, are buildings founded on shadows, or castles in the air.

II. The second argument to prove that the Most High wills one thing rather than another, without any superior fitness or preferableness in the thing preferred, is God's actually placing in different parts of the world particles or atoms of matter that are perfectly equal and alike. The fore-mentioned author says, p. 78, &c. "If one would descend to the minute specific particles of which different bodies are composed, we should see abundant reason to believe that there are thousands of such little particles, or atoms of matter, which are perfectly equal and alike, and could give no distinct determination to the will of God where to place them." He there instances in particles of water, of which there are such immense numbers, which compose the rivers and oceans of this world: and the infinite myriads of the luminous and fiery particles which compose the body of the sun, so many, that it would be very unreasonable to suppose no two of them should be exactly equal and alike.

*Answ.* (1.) To this I answer: that as we must suppose matter to be infinitely divisible, it is very unlikely that any two of all these particles are exactly equal and alike; so unlikely, that it is a thousand to one, yea, an infinite number to one, but it is otherwise: and that although we should allow a great similarity between the different particles of water and fire, as to their general nature and figure; and, however small we suppose those particles to be, it is infinitely unlikely that any two of them should be exactly equal in dimensions and quantity of matter.—

If we should suppose a great many globes of the same nature with the globe of the earth, it would be very strange if there were any two of them that had exactly the same number of particles of dust and water in them. But infinitely less strange than that two particles of light should have just the same quantity of matter. For a particle of light, according to the doctrine of the infinite divisibility of matter, is composed of infinitely more assignable parts than there are particles of dust and water in the globe of the earth. And as it is infinitely unlikely that any two of these particles should be *equal*; so it is, that they should be *alike* in other respects: to instance in the configuration of their surfaces. If there were very many globes, of the nature of the earth, it would be very unlikely that any two should have exactly the same number of particles of dust, water, and stone, in their surfaces, and all posited exactly alike, one with respect to another, without any difference, in any part discernible either by the naked eye or microscope; but infinitely less strange than that two particles of light should be perfectly of the same figure. For there are infinitely more assignable real parts on the surface of a particle of light, than there are particles of dust, water, and stone, on the surface of the terrestrial globe.

*Ans.* (2.) But then, supposing that there are two particles, or atoms of matter, perfectly equal and alike, which God has placed in different parts of the creation; as I will not deny it to be possible for God to make two bodies perfectly alike, and put them in different places; yet it will not follow, that two different or dis-

inct acts or effects of the Divine power have exactly the same fitness for the same ends. For these two different bodies are not different or distinct, in any other respects than those wherein they *differ*; they are two in no other respects than those wherein there is a difference. If they are perfectly equal and alike *in themselves*, then they can be distinguished, or be distinct, only in those things which are called *circumstances*; as place, time, rest, motion, or some other present or past circumstances or relations. For it is difference only that constitutes distinction. If God makes two bodies *in themselves* every way equal and alike, and agreeing perfectly in all other circumstances and relations but only *their place*; then in this only is there any distinction or duplicity. The figure is the same, the measure is the same, the solidity and resistance are the same, and every thing the same but only the place. Therefore what the will of God determines is this, namely, that there should be the same figure, the same extension, the same resistance, &c. in two different places. And for this determination he has some reason. There is some end, for which such a determination and act has a peculiar fitness, above all other acts. Here is no one thing determined without an end, and no one thing without a fitness for that end, superior to any thing else. If it be the pleasure of God to cause the same resistance and the same figure to be in two different places and situations, we can no more justly argue from it, that here must be some determination or act of God's will that is wholly without motive or end, than we can argue, that whenever, in any case, it is a man's



will to speak the same words, or make the same sounds, at two different times, there must be some determination or act of his will, without any motive or end. The difference of place, in the former case, proves no more than the difference of time does in the other. If any one should say, with regard to the former case, that there must be something determined without an end ; viz. that of those two similar bodies, this in particular should be made in this place, and the other in the other, and should inquire why the Creator did not make them in a transposition, when both are alike, and each would equally have suited either place ? The inquiry supposes something that is not true ; namely, that the two bodies differ and are distinct in other respects besides their place. So that, with this distinction *inherent* in them, they might, in their first creation, have been transposed, and each might have begun its existence in the place of the other.

Let us, for clearness' sake, suppose that God had, at the beginning, made two globes, each of an inch diameter, both perfect spheres, and perfectly solid, without pores, and perfectly alike in every respect, and placed them near one to another, one towards the right hand, and the other towards the left, without any difference as to time, motion or rest, past or present, or any circumstance but only their place ; and the question should be asked, Why God in their creation placed them so ? why that which is made on the right hand, was not made on the left, and *vice versá* ? Let it be well considered, whether there be any sense in such a question ; and whether the inquiry does not suppose some-



thing false and absurd. Let it be considered, what the Creator must have done otherwise than he did, what different act of will or power he must have exerted, in order to the thing proposed. All that could have been done, would have been to have made two spheres, perfectly alike, in the same places where he has made them, without any difference of the things made, either in themselves or in any circumstance; so that the whole effect would have been without any difference, and therefore just the same. By the supposition, the two spheres are different in no other respect but their place; and therefore in other respects they are the same. Each has the same roundness; it is not a distinct rotundity, in any other respect but its situation. There are also the same dimensions, differing in nothing but their place. And so of their resistance, and every thing else that belongs to them.

Here, if any chooses to say, “ that there is a difference in another respect, viz. that they are not NUMERICALLY the same; that it is thus with all the qualities that belong to them; that it is confessed they are, in some respects, the same, that is, they are both exactly alike; but yet *numerically* they differ. Thus the roundness of one is not the same *numerical, individual* roundness with that of the other.” Let this be supposed; then the question about the determination of the Divine will in the affair, is, why did God will that this *individual* roundness should be at the right hand, and the other *individual* roundness at the left? why did not he make them in a contrary position? Let any rational person consider, whe-

ther such questions be not words without a meaning; as much as if God should see fit, for some ends, to cause the same sounds to be repeated, or made at two different times; the sounds being perfectly the same in every other respect, but only one was a minute after the other; and it should be asked, upon it, why God caused these sounds, numerically different, to succeed one the other in such a manner? Why he did not make that individual sound, which was in the first minute, to be in the second? and the individual sound of the last minute to be in the first: which inquiries would be even ridiculous; as I think every person must see, at once, in the case proposed of two sounds, being only the same repeated, absolutely without any difference, but that one circumstance of time. If the Most High sees it will answer some good end, that the same sound should be made by lightning at two distinct times, and therefore wills that it should be so, must it needs therefore be, that herein there is some act of God's will without any motive or end? God saw fit often, at distinct times, and on different occasions, to say the very same words to Moses; namely, those, *I am Jehovah*. And would it not be unreasonable to infer, as a certain consequence, from this, that here must be some act or acts of the Divine will, in determining and disposing these words exactly alike, at different times, wholly without aim or inducement? But it would be no more unreasonable, than to say, that there must be an act of God's without any inducement, if he sees it best, and, for some reasons, determines that there

shall be the same resistance, the same dimensions, and the same figure, in several distinct places.

If, in the instance of the two spheres perfectly alike, it be supposed possible that God might have made them in a contrary position ; that which is made at the right hand, being made at the left ; then I ask, whether it is not evidently equally possible, if God had made but one of them, and that in the place of the right-hand globe, that he might have made that numerically different from what it is, and numerically different from what he did make it ; though perfectly alike, and in the same place ; and at the same time, and in every respect, in the same circumstances and relations ? Namely, whether he might not have made it numerically the same with that which he has now made at the left hand ; and so have left that which is now created at the right hand in a state of non-existence ? And if so, whether it would not have been possible to have made one in that place, perfectly like these, and yet numerically differing from both ? And let it be considered, whether, from this notion of a numerical difference in bodies perfectly equal and alike, which numerical difference is something inherent in the bodies themselves, and diverse from the difference of place or time, or any circumstance whatsoever ; it will not follow, that there is an infinite number of numerically different possible bodies, perfectly alike, among which God chooses, by a self-determining power, when he goes about to create bodies.

Therefore let us put the case thus : supposing that God in the beginning had created but one

perfectly solid sphere, in a certain place; and it should be inquired, Why God created that individual sphere, in that place, at that time? And why he did not create another sphere perfectly like it, but numerically different, in the same place, at the same time? Or why he chose to bring into being there that very body, rather than any of the infinite number of other bodies perfectly like it; either of which he could have made there as well, and would have answered his end as well? Why he caused to exist, at that place and time, that individual roundness, rather than any other of the infinite number of individual rotundities just like it? Why that individual resistance, rather than any other of the infinite number of possible resistances just like it? And it might as reasonably be asked, Why, when God first caused it to thunder, he caused that individual sound then to be made, and not another just like it? Why did he make choice of this very sound, and reject all the infinite number of other possible sounds just like it, but numerically differing from it, and all differing one from another? I think every body must be sensible of the absurdity and nonsense of what is supposed in such inquiries. And if we calmly attend to the matter, we shall be convinced, that all such kind of objections as I am answering, are founded on nothing but the imperfection of our manner of conceiving things, and the obscurity of language, and great want of clearness and precision in the signification of terms.

If any shall find fault with this reasoning, that it is going a great length into metaphysical

niceties and subtilties; I answer: the objection which they are in reply to, is a metaphysical subtilty, and must be treated according to the nature of it.\*

II. Another thing alleged is, that innumerable things which are determined by the Divine will, and chosen and done by God, rather than others, differ from those that are not chosen, in so inconsiderable a manner, that it would be unreasonable to suppose the difference to be of any consequence, or that there is any superior fitness or goodness that God can have respect to in the determination.

To which I answer: it is impossible for us to determine, with any certainty or evidence, that because the difference is very small, and appears to us of no consideration, therefore there is absolutely no superior goodness, and no valuable end, which can be proposed by the Creator and Governor of the world, in ordering such a difference. The fore-mentioned author mentions many instances. One is, there being one atom in the whole universe more or less. But I think it would be unreasonable to suppose, that God made one atom in vain, or without any end or motive. He made not one atom but what was a work of his almighty power, as much as the whole globe of the earth, and requires as much of a constant exertion of almighty power to uphold it; and was made and is upheld understandingly, and on design, as much as if no other had been

\* “For men to have recourse to subtilties in raising difficulties, and then complain, that they should be taken off by minutely examining these subtilties, is a strange kind of procedure.”—*Nature of the Human Soul*, vol. ii. p. 331.



made but that. And it would be as unreasonable to suppose that he made it without any thing really aimed at in so doing, as much as to suppose, that he made the planet Jupiter without aim or design.

It is possible that the most minute effects of the Creator's power, the smallest assignable difference between the things which God has made, may be attended, in the whole series of events, and the whole compass and extent of their influence, with very great and important consequences. If the laws of motion and gravitation laid down by Sir Isaac Newton hold universally, there is not one atom, nor the least assignable part of an atom, but what has influence, every moment, throughout the whole material universe, to cause every part to be otherwise than it would be, if it were not for that particular corporeal existence. And however the effect is insensible for the present, yet it may, in length of time, become great and important.

To illustrate this, let us suppose two bodies moving the same way, in straight lines, perfectly parallel one to another; but to be diverted from this parallel course, and drawn one from another, as much as might be by the attraction of an atom, at the distance of one of the furthest of the fixed stars from the earth; these bodies being turned out of the lines of their parallel motion, will, by degrees, get further and further distant one from the other; and though the distance may be imperceptible for a long time, yet at length it may become very great. So, the revolution of a planet round the sun being retarded or accelerated,

and the orbit of its revolution made greater or less, and more or less elliptical, and so its periodical time longer or shorter, no more than may be by the influence of the least atom, might, in length of time, perform a whole revolution sooner or later than otherwise it would have done ; which might make a vast alteration with regard to millions of important events. So, the influence of the least particle may, for ought we know, have such effect on something in the constitution of some human body, as to cause another thought to arise in the mind at a certain time, than otherwise would have been ; which, in length of time (yea, and that not very great), might occasion a vast alteration through the whole world of mankind. And so innumerable other ways might be mentioned, wherein the least assignable alteration may possibly be attended with great consequences.

Another *argument*, which the fore-mentioned author brings against a necessary determination of the Divine will, by a superior fitness, is, that such doctrine derogates from the *freeness* of God's *grace* and *goodness*, in choosing the objects of his favour and bounty, and from the *obligation* upon men to *thankfulness* for special benefits. Page 89, &c.

In answer to this objection, I would observe :

1. That it derogates no more from the goodness of God, to suppose the exercise of the benevolence of his nature to be determined by wisdom, than to suppose it determined by chance, and that his favours are bestowed altogether at random, his will being determined by nothing but perfect accident, without any end or design whatsoever ; which must be the

case, as has been demonstrated, if volition be not determined by a prevailing motive. That which is owing to perfect contingency, wherein neither previous inducement nor antecedent choice has any hand, is not owing more to goodness or benevolence, than that which is owing to the influence of a wise end.

2. It is acknowledged, that if the motive that determines the will of God in the choice of the objects of his favours, be any moral quality in the object, recommending that object to his benevolence above others, his choosing that object is not so great a manifestation of the freeness and sovereignty of his grace, as if it were otherwise. But there is no necessity of supposing this, in order to our supposing that he has some wise end in view, in determining to bestow his favours on one person rather than another. We are to distinguish between the *merit of the object of God's favour*, or a moral qualification of *the object* attracting that favour and recommending to it, and the *natural fitness* of such a determination *of the act of God's goodness*, to answer some wise design of his own, some end in the view of God's omniscience. It is God's own act that is the proper and immediate object of his volition.

3. I suppose that none will deny, but that, in some instances, God acts from wise design in determining the particular subjects of his favours: none will say, I presume, that when God distinguishes, by his bounty, particular societies or persons, he never, in any instance, exercises any wisdom in so doing, aiming at some happy consequence. And, if it be not denied to be so in some instances, then I would

inquire, whether, in these instances, God's goodness is less manifested than in those wherein God has no aim or end at all? and whether the subjects have less cause of thankfulness? And if so, who shall be thankful for the bestowment of distinguishing mercy, with that enhancing circumstance of the distinctions being made without an end? How shall it be known when God is influenced by some wise aim, and when not? It is very manifest, with respect to the apostle Paul, that God had wise ends in choosing him to be a Christian and an apostle, who had been a persecutor, &c. The apostle himself mentions one end. 1 Tim. i. 15, 16: "Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief. Howbeit, for this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first, Jesus Christ might shew forth all long-suffering, for a pattern to them who should hereafter believe on him to life everlasting." But yet the apostle never looked on it as a diminution of the freedom and riches of Divine grace in his election, which he so often and so greatly magnifies. This brings me to observe:

4. Our supposing such a moral necessity in the acts of God's will as has been spoken of, is so far from necessarily derogating from the riches of God's grace to such as are the chosen objects of his favour, that in many instances this moral necessity may arise from goodness, and from the great degree of it. God may choose this object rather than another, as having a superior fitness to answer the ends, designs, and inclinations, of his goodness; being more sinful, and so more miserable and necessitous than others, the inclinations of In-

finite Mercy and Benevolence may be more gratified, and the gracious design of God's sending his Son into the world, may be more abundantly answered, in the exercises of mercy towards such an object, rather than another.

One thing more I would observe, before I finish what I have to say on the head of the necessity of the acts of God's will; and that is, that something much more like a servile subjection of the Divine Being to fatal necessity, will follow from Arminian principles than from the doctrines which they oppose. For they (at least most of them) suppose, with respect to all events that happen in the moral world, depending on the volitions of moral agents, which are the most important events of the universe, to which all others are subordinate; I say, they suppose, with respect to these, that God has a certain foreknowledge of them, antecedent to any purposes or decrees of his about them. And if so, they have a fixed certain futurity, prior to any designs or volitions of his, and independent on them, and to which his volitions must be subject, as he would wisely accommodate his affairs to this fixed futurity of the state of things in the moral world. So that here, instead of a moral necessity of God's will, arising from, or consisting in, the infinite perfection and blessedness of the Divine Being, we have a fixed, unalterable state of things, properly distinct from the perfect nature of the Divine Mind, and the state of the Divine will and design, and entirely independent on these things, and which they have no hand in, because they are prior to them; and which God's will is truly subject to, being obliged to conform or accommodate



himself to it, in all his purposes and decrees, and in every thing he does in his disposals and government of the world; the moral world being the end of the natural; so that all is in vain, that is not accommodated to that state of the moral world, which consists in, or depends upon, the acts and state of the wills of moral agents, which had a fixed futurity from eternity. Such a subjection to necessity as this, would truly argue an inferiority and servitude, that would be unworthy of the Supreme Being; and is much more agreeable to the notion which many of the heathen had of fate, as above the gods, than that moral necessity of fitness and wisdom which has been spoken of; and is truly repugnant to the absolute sovereignty of God, and inconsistent with the supremacy of his will; and really subjects the will of the Most High to the will of his creatures, and brings him into dependence upon them.

#### SECTION IX.

CONCERNING THAT OBJECTION AGAINST THE DOCTRINE  
WHICH HAS BEEN MAINTAINED, THAT IT MAKES GOD  
THE AUTHOR OF SIN.

It is urged by Arminians, that the doctrine of the necessity of men's volitions, or their necessary connexion with antecedent events and circumstances, makes the First Cause, and Supreme Orderer of all things, the author of sin; in that he has so constituted the state and course of things, that sinful volitions become necessary, in consequence of his disposal. Dr. Whitby, in his "Discourse on the Freedom of the Will,"\* cites one of the ancients as on his side, declaring

\* On the Five Points, p. 361.

that this opinion of the necessity of the will “absolves sinners, as doing nothing of their own accord which was evil, and would cast all the blame of all the wickedness committed in the world upon God, and upon his providence, if that were admitted by the assertors of this fate; whether he himself did necessitate them to do these things, or ordered matters so that they should be constrained to do them by some other cause.” And the doctor says, in another place,\* “In the nature of the thing, and in the opinion of philosophers, *causa deficiens, in rebus necessariis, ad causam per se efficientem reducenda est*—in things necessary, the deficient cause must be reduced to the efficient. And in this case the reason is evident; because the not doing what is required, or not avoiding what is forbidden, being a defect, must follow from the position of the necessary cause of that deficiency.”

Concerning this, I would observe the following things:

I. If there be any difficulty in this matter, it is nothing peculiar to this scheme; it is no difficulty or disadvantage, wherein it is distinguished from the scheme of Arminians; and, therefore, not reasonably objected by them.

Dr. Whitby supposes, that if sin necessarily follows from God's withholding assistance, or if that assistance be not given, which is absolutely necessary to the avoiding of evil; then, in the nature of the thing, God must be as properly the author of that evil, as if he were the efficient cause of it. From whence, according to what

\* On the Five Points, p. 486.

he himself says of the devils and damned spirits, God must be the proper author of their perfect unrestrained wickedness : he must be the efficient cause of the great pride of the devils, and of their perfect malignity against God, Christ, his saints, and all that is good, and of the insatiable cruelty of their disposition. For he allows, that God has so forsaken them, and does so withhold his assistance from them, that they are incapacitated from doing good, and determined only to evil.\* Our doctrine, in its consequence, makes God the author of men's sin in this world, no more, and in no other sense, than his doctrine, in its consequence, makes God the author of the hellish pride and malice of the devils. And doubtless the latter is as odious an effect as the former.

Again, if it will *follow at all*, that God is the author of sin, from what has been supposed of a sure and infallible connexion between antecedents and consequents, it will *follow because of this*, viz. that for God to be the author or orderer of those things which he knows beforehand will infallibly be attended with such a consequence, is the same thing, in effect, as for him to be the author of that consequence. But if this be so, this is a difficulty which equally attends the doctrine of Arminians themselves ; at least, of those of them who allow God's certain foreknowledge of all events. For, on the supposition of such a foreknowledge, this is the case with respect to every sin that is committed : God knew, that if he ordered and brought to pass such and such events, such

\* On the Five Points, pp. 302, 305.

sins would infallibly follow. As, for instance, God certainly foreknew, long before Judas was born, that if he ordered things so, that there should be such a man born, at such a time and at such a place, and that his life should be preserved, and that he should, in Divine providence, be led into acquaintance with Jesus; and that his heart should be so influenced by God's Spirit or providence, as to be inclined to be a follower of Christ; and that he should be one of those twelve, which should be chosen constantly to attend him as his family; and that his health should be preserved, so that he should go up to Jerusalem, at the last passover in Christ's life; and it should be so ordered, that Judas should see Christ's kind treatment of the woman which anointed him at Bethany, and have that reproof from Christ which he had at that time, and see and hear other things which excited his enmity against his Master, and other circumstances should be ordered as they were ordered; it would be what would most certainly and infallibly follow, that Judas would betray his Lord, and would soon after hang himself, and die impenitent, and be sent to hell for his horrid wickedness.

Therefore, this supposed difficulty ought not to be brought as an objection against the scheme which has been maintained, as *disagreeing* with the Arminian scheme, seeing it is no difficulty owing to such a *disagreement*; but a difficulty wherein the Arminians share with us. That must be unreasonably made an objection against our differing from them, which we should not escape or avoid at all by agreeing with them.

And therefore I would observe:

II. They who object, that this doctrine makes God the author of sin, ought distinctly to explain what they mean by that phrase, *the author of sin*. I know the phrase, as it is commonly used, signifies something very ill. If by *the author of sin*, be meant *the sinner, the agent, or actor of sin, or the doer of a wicked thing*; so it would be a reproach and blasphemy to suppose God to be the author of sin. In this sense, I utterly deny God to be the author of sin; rejecting such an imputation on the Most High, as what is infinitely to be abhorred; and deny any such thing to be the consequence of what I have laid down. But if, by *the author of sin*, is meant the *permitter, or not a hinderer of sin*; and, at the same time, a disposer of the state of events, in such a manner, for wise, holy, and most excellent ends and purposes, that sin, if it be permitted or not hindered, will most certainly and infallibly follow: I say, if this be all that is meant, by being the author of sin, I do not deny that God is the author of sin (though I dislike and reject the phrase, as that which by use and custom is apt to carry another sense); it is no reproach for the Most High to be thus the author of sin. This is not to be the *actor of sin*, but, on the contrary, *of holiness*. What God doth herein is holy, and a glorious exercise of the infinite excellency of his nature. And I do not deny, that God's being thus the author of sin follows from what I have laid down; and I assert, that it equally follows from the doctrine which is maintained by most of the Arminian divines.

That it is most certainly so, that God is in such a manner the disposer and orderer of sin, is



evident, if any credit is to be given to the Scripture; as well as because it is impossible, in the nature of things, to be otherwise. In such a manner God ordered the obstinacy of Pharaoh, in his refusing to obey God's commands, to let the people go. Exod. iv. 21: "I will harden his heart, and he shall not let the people go." Chap. vii. 2—5: "Aaron thy brother shall speak unto Pharaoh, that he send the children of Israel out of his land. And I will harden Pharaoh's heart, and multiply my signs and my wonders in the land of Egypt. But Pharaoh shall not hearken unto you; that I may lay mine hand upon Egypt, by great judgments," &c. Chap. ix. 12: "And the Lord hardened the heart of Pharaoh, and he hearkened not unto them, as the Lord had spoken unto Moses." Chap. x. 1, 2: "And the Lord said unto Moses, Go in unto Pharaoh; for I have hardened his heart, and the heart of his servants, that I might shew these my signs before him; and that thou mayest tell it in the ears of thy son, and thy son's son, what things I have wrought in Egypt, and my signs which I have done amongst them; that ye may know that I am the Lord." Chap. xiv. 4: "And I will harden Pharaoh's heart, that he shall follow after them: and I will be honoured upon Pharaoh and upon all his host." Verse 8: "And the Lord hardened the heart of Pharaoh king of Egypt, and he pursued after the children of Israel." And it is certain that, in such a manner, God, for wise and good ends, ordered that event, Joseph's being sold into Egypt by his brethren. Gen. xlv. 5: "Now, therefore, be not grieved, nor angry with yourselves, that ye sold me hither; for God did send

me before you to preserve life." Ver. 7, 8. "God did send me before you to preserve a posterity in the earth, and to save your lives by a great deliverance : so that now it was not you that sent me hither, but God." Psalm cvii. 17 : "He sent a man before them, even Joseph, who was sold for a servant." It is certain, that thus God ordered the sin and folly of Sihon king of the Amorites, in refusing to let the people of Israel pass by him peaceably. Deut. ii. 30 : "But Sihon king of Heshbon would not let us pass by him ; for the Lord thy God hardened his spirit, and made his heart obstinate, that he might deliver him into thine hand." It is certain, that God thus ordered the sin and folly of the kings of Canaan, that they attempted not to make peace with Israel, but, with a stupid boldness and obstinacy, set themselves violently to oppose them and their God. Josh. xi. 20 : "For it was of the Lord, to harden their hearts, that they should come against Israel in battle, that he might destroy them utterly, and that they might have no favour ; but that he might destroy them, as the Lord commanded Moses." It is evident, that thus God ordered the treacherous rebellion of Zedekiah against the king of Babylon. Jer. lii. 3 : "For through the anger of the Lord it came to pass in Jerusalem and Judah, until he had cast them out from his presence, that Zedekiah rebelled against the king of Babylon." So, 2 Kings, xxiv. 20. And it is exceeding manifest, that God thus ordered the rapine and unrighteous ravages of Nebuchadnezzar, in spoiling and ruining the nations round about. Jer. xxv. 9 : "Behold, I will send and take all the families of the north, saith the Lord,

and Nebuchadnezzar my servant, and will bring them against this land, and against all the nations round about; and will utterly destroy them, and make them an astonishment, and a hissing, and perpetual desolations." Chap. xliii. 10, 11: "I will send and take Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, my servant; and I will set his throne upon these stones that I have hid, and he shall spread his royal pavilion over them. And when he cometh, he shall smite the land of Egypt, and deliver such as are for death to death, and such as are for captivity to captivity, and such as are for the sword, to the sword." Thus God represents himself as *sending* for Nebuchadnezzar, and *taking* of him and his armies, and *bringing* him against the nations which were to be destroyed by him, to that very end, that he might utterly destroy them, and make them desolate; and as appointing the work that he should do, so particularly, that the very persons were designed that he should kill with the sword, and those that should be killed with famine and pestilence, and those that should be carried into captivity; and that in doing all these things he should act as his servant; by which, less cannot be intended, than that he should serve his purposes and designs. And in Jer. xxvii. 4—6, God declares how he would cause him thus to serve his designs, viz. by bringing this to pass in his sovereign disposals, as the great Possessor and Governor of the universe, that disposes all things just as pleases him. "Thus saith the Lord of Hosts, the God of Israel; I have made the earth, the man and the beast that are upon the ground, by my great power, and by my out-stretched arm, and have

given it unto whom it seemed meet unto me. And now I have given all these lands into the hands of Nebuchadnezzar, MY SERVANT; and the beasts of the field have I given also to serve him." And Nebuchadnezzar is spoken of as doing these things, by having his *arms strengthened* by God, and having *God's sword put into his hands, for this end*. Ezek. xxx. 24—26. Yea, God speaks of his terribly ravaging and wasting the nations, and cruelly destroying all sorts, without distinction of sex or age, as the weapon in God's hand, and the instrument of his indignation, which God makes use of to fulfil his own purposes, and execute his own vengeance. Jer. li. 20, &c. "Thou art my battle-axe and weapons of war: for with thee will I break in pieces the nations; and with thee I will destroy kingdoms; and with thee I will break in pieces the horse and his rider; and with thee I will break in pieces the chariot and his rider; with thee also will I break in pieces man and woman; and with thee will I break in pieces old and young; and with thee will I break in pieces the young man and the maid," &c. It is represented, that the designs of Nebuchadnezzar, and those that destroyed Jerusalem, never could have been accomplished, had not God determined them as well as they. Lam. iii. 37: "Who is he that saith, and it cometh to pass, and the Lord commandeth it not?" And yet the king of Babylon's thus destroying the nations, and especially the Jews, is spoken of as his great wickedness, for which God finally destroyed him. Isa. xiv. 4, 5, 6, 12. Hab. ii. 5—12, and Jer. l. and li. It is most manifest, that God, to serve his own designs, pro-

videntially ordered Shimei's cursing David. 2 Sam. xvi. 10, 11 : "The Lord hath said unto him, Curse David.—Let him curse: for the Lord hath bidden him."

It is certain, that God thus, for excellent, holy, gracious, and glorious ends, ordered the fact which they committed who were concerned in Christ's death; and that therein they did but fulfil God's designs. As, I trust, no Christian will deny it was the design of God, that Christ should *be crucified*, and that for this end he came into the world. It is very manifest, by many Scriptures, that the whole affair of Christ's crucifixion, with its circumstances, and the treachery of Judas, that made way for it, was ordered in God's providence, in pursuance of his purpose; notwithstanding the violence that is used with those plain Scriptures, to obscure and pervert the sense of them. Acts, ii. 23 : "Him,   
 √ being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God,\* ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain." Luke, xxii. 21, 22 : † "But, behold, the hand of

\* "Grotius, as well as Beza, observes, *προγνωσις* must here signify *decree*; and Elsner has shewn that it has that signification in approved Greek writers. And it is certain *εκδοτος* signifies one given up into the hands of an enemy."—DODD-RIDGE *in loc.*

† "As this passage is not liable to the ambiguities which some have apprehended in Acts, ii. 23. and iv. 28. (which yet seem, on the whole, to be parallel to it, in their most natural construction), I look upon it as an evident proof, that those things are, in the language of Scripture, said to be determined or decreed (or exactly bounded and marked out by God, as the word *ἐπέζη* most naturally signifies), which he sees in fact will happen, in consequence of his volitions, without any necessitating agency; as well as those events of which he is properly the author."—*Idem in loc.*



him that betrayeth me is with me on the table. And truly the Son of man goeth as it was determined." Acts, iv. 27, 28: "For of a truth, against thy holy child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel, were gathered together, for to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done." Acts, iii. 17, 18: "And now, brethren, I wot that through ignorance ye did it, as did also your rulers. But those things, which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled." So that what these murderers of Christ did, is spoken of as what God brought to pass, or ordered, and that by which he fulfilled his own word.

In Rev. xvii. 17, *the agreeing of the kings of the earth to give their kingdom to the beast*, though it was a very wicked thing in them, is spoken of as *a fulfilling God's will*, and what *God had put into their hearts to do*. It is manifest, that God sometimes permits sin to be committed, and at the same time orders things so, that if he permits the fact, it will come to pass, because, on some accounts, he sees it needful and of importance that it should come to pass. Matt. xviii. 7: "It must needs be that offences come; but wo to that man by whom the offence cometh." With 1 Cor. xi. 19: "For there must also be heresies among you, that they which are approved may be made manifest among you."

Thus it is certain and demonstrable, from the holy Scriptures, as well as the nature of things, and the principles of Arminians, that God per-

mits sin; and, at the same time, so orders things in his providence, that it certainly and infallibly will come to pass, in consequence of his permission.

I proceed to observe in the next place:

III. That there is a great difference between God's being concerned thus, by his *permission*, in an event and act, which, in the inherent subject and agent of it, is sin, (though the event will certainly follow on his permission), and his being concerned in it by *producing* it and exerting the act of sin; or between his being the *orderer* of its certain existence, by *not hindering* it, under certain circumstances, and his being the proper *actor* or *author* of it, by a *positive agency* or *efficiency*. And this, notwithstanding what Dr. Whitby offers about a saying of philosophers, that *causa deficiens, in rebus necessariis, ad causam per se efficientem reducenda est*. As there is a vast difference between the sun's being the cause of the lightness and warmth of the atmosphere, and brightness of gold and diamonds, by its presence and positive influence; and its being the occasion of darkness and frost in the night, by its motion, whereby it descends below the horizon. The motion of the sun is the occasion of the latter kind of events; but it is not the proper cause, efficient, or producer of them; though they are necessarily consequent on that motion, under such circumstances: no more is any action of the Divine Being the cause of the evil of men's wills. If the sun were the proper *cause* of cold and darkness, it would be the *fountain* of these things, as it is the fountain of light and heat; and then something might be argued from the nature of cold

and darkness, to a likeness of nature in the sun; and it might be justly inferred, that the sun itself is dark and cold, and that his beams are black and frosty. But from its being the cause no otherwise than by its departure, no such thing can be inferred, but the contrary: it may justly be argued, that the sun is a bright and hot body, if cold and darkness are found to be the consequence of its withdrawment; and the more constantly and necessarily these effects are connected with and confined to its absence, the more strongly does it argue the sun to be the fountain of light and heat. So, inasmuch as sin is not the fruit of any positive agency or influence of the Most High, but, on the contrary, arises from the withholding of his action and energy, and, under certain circumstances, necessarily follows on the want of his influence; this is no argument that he is sinful, or his operation evil, or has any thing of the nature of evil; but, on the contrary, that he, and his agency, are altogether good and holy, and that he is the fountain of all holiness. It would be strange arguing, indeed, because men never commit sin, but only when God leaves them *to themselves*, and necessarily sin when he does so, that therefore their sin is not *from themselves*, but from God; and so, that God must be a sinful being: as strange as it would be to argue, because it is always dark when the sun is gone, and never dark when the sun is present, that therefore all darkness is from the sun, and that his disc and beams must needs be black.

IV. It properly belongs to the supreme and absolute Governor of the universe to order all

important events within his dominion by his wisdom : but the events in the moral world are of the most important kind ; such as the moral actions of intelligent creatures, and their consequences.

These events will be ordered by something. They will either be disposed by wisdom, or they will be disposed by chance ; that is, they will be disposed by blind and undesigning causes, if that were possible, and could be called a disposal. Is it not better that the good and evil which happen in God's world, should be ordered, regulated, bounded, and determined, by the good pleasure of an infinitely wise Being, —who perfectly comprehends within his understanding and constant view the universality of things, in all their extent and duration, and sees all the influence of every event, with respect to every individual thing and circumstance throughout the grand system, and the whole of the eternal series of consequences,—than to leave these things to fall out by chance, and to be determined by those causes which have no understanding or aim ? Doubtless, in these important events there is a better and a worse, as to the time, subject, place, manner, and circumstances of their coming to pass, with regard to their influence on the state and course of things. And if there be, it is certainly best that they should be determined to that time, place, &c. which is best. And therefore it is in its own nature fit, that wisdom, and not chance, should order these things. So that it belongs to the Being who is the Possessor of infinite wisdom, and is the Creator and Owner of the whole system of created existences, and has the care of

all; I say it belongs to him to take care of this matter; and he would not do what is proper for him if he should neglect it. And it is so far from being unholy in him to undertake this affair, that it would rather have been unholy to neglect it; as it would have been a neglecting what fitly appertains to him; and so it would have been a very unfit and unsuitable neglect.

Therefore the sovereignty of God doubtless extends to this matter; especially considering, that if it should be supposed to be otherwise, and God should leave men's volitions, and all moral events, to the determination and disposition of blind unmeaning causes, or they should be left to happen perfectly without a cause; this would be no more consistent with liberty, in any notion of it, and particularly not in the Arminian notion of it, than if these events were subject to the disposal of Divine Providence, and the will of man were determined by circumstances which are ordered and disposed by Divine wisdom, as appears by what has been already observed. But it is evident, that such a providential disposing and determining men's moral actions, though it infers a moral necessity of those actions, yet it does not in the least infringe the real liberty of mankind; the only liberty that common sense teaches to be necessary to moral agency, which, as has been demonstrated, is not inconsistent with such necessity.

On the whole it is manifest, that God may be, in the manner which has been described, the orderer and disposer of that event, which, in the inherent subject and agent is moral evil;



and yet his so doing may be no moral evil. He may will the disposal of such an event, and its coming to pass, for good ends, and his will not be an immoral or sinful will, but a perfectly holy will. And he may actually, in his providence, so dispose and permit things, that the event may be certainly and infallibly connected with such disposal and permission, and his act therein not be an immoral or unholy, but a perfectly holy act. Sin may be an evil thing; and yet that there should be such a disposal and permission as that it should come to pass, may be a good thing. This is no contradiction or inconsistency. Joseph's brethren's selling him into Egypt, consider it only as it was acted by them, and with respect to their views and aims, which were evil, was a very bad thing; but it was a good thing, as it was an event of God's ordering, and considered with respect to his views and aims, which were good. Gen. l. 20. "As for you, ye thought evil against me; but God meant it unto good." So the crucifixion of Christ, if we consider only those things which belong to the event as it proceeded from his murderers, and are comprehended within the compass of the affair considered as their act, their principles, dispositions, views, and aims; so it was one of the most heinous things that ever was done, in many respects the most horrid of all acts: but consider it as it was willed and ordered of God, in the extent of his designs and views, it was the most admirable and glorious of all events; and God's willing the event was the most holy volition of God that ever was made known to men; and God's act in ordering it was a divine act, which, above all others,

manifests the moral excellency of the Divine Being.

The consideration of these things may help us to a sufficient answer to the cavils of Arminians, concerning what has been supposed by many Calvinists, of a distinction between a *secret* and *revealed* will of God, and their diversity one from the other; supposing that the Calvinists herein ascribe inconsistent wills to the Most High: which is without any foundation. God's *secret* and *revealed* will, or, in other words, his *disposing* and *perceptive* will, may be diverse, and exercised in dissimilar acts, the one in disapproving and opposing, the other in willing and determining, without any inconsistency. Because, although these dissimilar exercises of the Divine will may, in some respects, relate to the same things, yet, in strictness, they have different and contrary objects, the one evil, and the other good. Thus, for instance, the crucifixion of Christ was a thing contrary to the revealed or perceptive will of God; because, as it was viewed and done by his malignant murderers, it was a thing infinitely contrary to the holy nature of God, and so necessarily contrary to the holy inclination of his heart, revealed in his law. Yet this does not at all hinder but that the crucifixion of Christ, considered with all those glorious consequences which were within the view of the Divine Omniscience, might be indeed, and therefore might appear to God to be, a glorious event; and consequently be agreeable to his will, though this will may be secret, *i. e.* not revealed in God's law. And thus considered, the crucifixion of Christ was not evil, but good.

If the secret exercises of God's will were of a kind that is dissimilar, and contrary to his revealed will respecting the same or like objects; if the objects of both were good, or both evil; then, indeed, to ascribe contrary kinds of volition or inclination to God respecting these objects, would be to ascribe an inconsistent will to God: but to ascribe to him different and opposite exercises of heart respecting different objects, and objects contrary one to another, is so far from supposing God's will to be *inconsistent* with itself, that it cannot be supposed *consistent* with itself any other way. For any being to have a will of choice respecting good, and, at the same time, a will of rejection and refusal respecting evil, is to be very consistent: but the contrary, viz. to have the same will towards these contrary objects, and to choose and love both good and evil at the same time, is to be very inconsistent.

There is no inconsistency in supposing, that God may hate a thing as it is in itself, and considered simply as evil, and yet that it may be his will it should come to pass, considering all consequences. I believe there is no person of good understanding, who will venture to say, he is certain that it is impossible it should be best, taking in the whole compass and extent of existence, and all consequences in the endless series of events, that there should be such a thing as moral evil in the world.\* And if so,

\* Here are worthy to be observed some passages of a late noted writer, of our nation, that nobody who is acquainted with will suspect to be very favourable to Calvinism. "It is difficult," says he, "to handle the *necessity of evil* in such a manner as not to stumble such as are not above

it will certainly follow, that an infinitely wise Being, who always chooses what is best, must choose that there should be such a thing. And if so, then such a choice is not an evil, but a wise and holy choice. And if so, then that providence which is agreeable to such a choice, is a wise and holy providence. Men do *will* sin as sin, and so are the authors and actors of it: they love it as sin, and for evil ends and purposes. God does not will sin as sin, or for the sake of any thing evil; though it be his pleasure so to order things, that, he permitting, sin will come to pass; for the sake of the great good that by his disposal shall be the consequence. His willing to order things so that evil should come to pass, for the sake of the

being alarmed at propositions which have an uncommon sound. But if philosophers will but reflect calmly on the matter, they will find, that, consistently with the unlimited power of the Supreme Cause, it may be said, that in the best-ordered system, *evils* must have place.”—TURNBULL’S *Principles of Moral Philosophy*, pp. 327, 328. He is there speaking of *moral* evils, as may be seen.

Again, the same author, in his second volume, entitled “Christian Philosophy,” p. 35, has these words: “If the Author and Governor of all things be infinitely *perfect*, then whatever is, is *right*; of all possible systems he hath chosen the *best*; and consequently there is *no absolute evil* in the universe. This being the case, all the seeming *imperfections* or *evils* in it are such only in a *partial* view; and, with respect to the *whole* system, they are *goods*.”

“*Whence, then, comes evil?* is the question that hath, in all ages, been reckoned the Gordian knot in philosophy. And indeed, if we own the existence of evil in the world in an *absolute* sense, we diametrically contradict what hath been just now proved of God. For if there be any *evil* in the system, that is not good with respect to the *whole*, then is the *whole* not good, but evil, or, at best, very imperfect: and an *author* must be as his *workmanship* is; as is the effect, such

contrary good, is no argument that he does not hate evil as evil: and if so, then it is no reason why he may not reasonably forbid evil as evil, and punish it as such.

The Arminians themselves must be obliged, whether they will or no, to allow a distinction of God's will, amounting to just the same thing that Calvinists intend by their distinction of a *secret and revealed will*. They must allow a distinction of those things which God thinks best should be, considering all circumstances and consequences, and so are agreeable to his disposing will, and those things which he loves, and are agreeable to his nature, in themselves considered. Who is there that will dare to say, that the hellish pride, malice, and cruelty of devils, are agreeable to God, and what he

is the cause. But the solution of this difficulty is at hand; *that there is no evil in the universe*. What! are there no pains, no imperfections? Is there no misery, no vice, in the world? or, are not these *evils*? Evils indeed they are; that is, those of one sort are hurtful, and those of the other sort are equally hurtful and abominable: but they are *not* evil or mischievous with respect to the *whole*."—*Ibid.* p. 37.

"But He is, at the same time, said to *create* evil, darkness, confusion; and yet to do no evil, but to be the Author of good only. He is called the *Father of lights*; the Author of *every perfect and good gift, with whom there is no variable-ness nor shadow of turning*; who *tempteth no man, but giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not*. And yet, by the prophet Isaiah, He is introduced saying of himself, *I form light, and create darkness; I make peace, and create evil: I the Lord do all these things*. What is the meaning, the plain language of all this, but that the Lord delighteth in goodness, and (as the Scripture speaks) evil is *his strange work*? He intends and pursues the universal *good* of his creation: and the *evil* which happens, is not permitted for its own sake, or through any pleasure in evil, but because it is requisite to the *greater good* pursued."—*Ibid.* p. 42.



likes and approves? And yet, I trust, there is no Christian divine but what will allow, that it is agreeable to God's will so to order and dispose things concerning them, so to leave them to themselves, and give them up to their own wickedness, that this perfect wickedness should be a necessary consequence. Be sure Dr. Whitby's words do plainly suppose and allow it.\*

These following things may be laid down as maxims of plain truth, and indisputable evidence.

1. That God is a *perfectly happy* being, in the most absolute and highest sense possible.

2. That it will follow from hence, that God is free from every thing that is *contrary to happiness*; and so, that in strict propriety of speech, there is no such thing as any pain, grief, or trouble in God.

3. When any intelligent being is really crossed and disappointed, and things are contrary to what he truly desires, he is the *less pleased*, or has *less pleasure*, his *pleasure and happiness is diminished*, and he suffers what is disagreeable to him, or is the subject of something that is of a nature contrary to joy and happiness, even pain and grief.†

From this last axiom it follows, that if no

\* Whitby on the Five Points, edit. 2. pp. 300, 305, 309.

† Certainly it is not less absurd and unreasonable to talk of God's will and desires being truly and properly crossed, without his suffering any uneasiness, or any thing grievous or disagreeable, than it is to talk of something that may be called a *revealed will*, which may, in some respect, be different from a *secret purpose*; which purpose may be fulfilled, when the other is opposed.

distinction is to be admitted between God's hatred of sin, and his will with respect to the event and the existence of sin, as the all-wise Determiner of all events, under the view of all consequences through the whole compass and series of things; I say, then, it certainly follows, that the coming to pass of every individual act of sin is truly, all things considered, contrary to his will, and that his will is really crossed in it; and this in proportion as he hates it. And as God's hatred of sin is infinite, by reason of the infinite contrariety of his holy nature to sin; so his will is infinitely crossed in every act of sin that happens. Which is as much as to say: He endures that which is infinitely disagreeable to him, by means of every act of sin that he sees committed. And therefore, as appears by the preceding positions, he endures truly and really infinite grief or pain from every sin. And so he must be infinitely crossed, and suffer infinite pain every day, in millions of millions of instances: he must continually be the subject of an immense number of *real* and truly infinitely *great* crosses and vexations. Which would be to make him infinitely the most miserable of all beings.

If any objector should say: All that these things amount to is, that *God may do evil that good may come*, which is justly esteemed immoral and sinful in men; and therefore may be justly esteemed inconsistent with the moral perfections of God. I answer: that for God to dispose and permit evil, in the manner that has been spoken of, is not to do evil that good may come; for it is not to do evil at all. In order to a thing's being morally evil, there must be

one of these things belonging to it: either it must be a thing *unfit* and *unsuitable* in its own nature; or it must have a *bad tendency*; or it must proceed from an *evil disposition*, and be done for an evil end. But neither of these things can be attributed to God's ordering and permitting such events, as the immoral acts of creatures, for good ends. (1.) It is not *unfit in its own nature*, that he should do so. For it is in its own nature *fit*, that *infinite wisdom*, and not blind chance, should dispose moral good and evil in the world. And it is *fit*, that the Being who has *infinite wisdom*, and is the Maker, Owner, and supreme Governor of the world, should take care of that matter. And therefore there is no *unfitness* or unsuitableness in his doing it. It may be unfit, and so immoral, for any other beings to go about to order this affair; because they are not possessed of a wisdom, that in any manner fits them for it; and, in other respects, they are not fit to be trusted with this affair; nor does it belong to them, they not being the owners and lords of the universe.

We need not be afraid to affirm, that if a wise and good man knew with absolute certainty, it would be best, all things considered, that there should be such a thing as moral evil in the world, it would not be contrary to his wisdom and goodness, for him to choose that it should be so. It is no evil desire to desire good, and to desire that which, all things considered, is best. And it is no unwise choice, to choose that that should be, which it is best should be; and to choose the existence of that thing concerning which this is known, viz.

that it is best it should be, and so is known in the whole to be most worthy to be chosen. On the contrary, it would be a plain defect in wisdom and goodness, for him not to choose it. And the reason why he might not *order* it, if he were able, would not be because he might not desire it, but only the ordering of that matter does not belong to him. But it is no harm for him who is, by right, and in the greatest propriety, the supreme Orderer of all things, to order every thing in such a manner, as it would be a point of wisdom in him to choose that they should be ordered. If it would be a plain defect of wisdom and goodness in a being, not to choose that that should be, which he certainly knows it would, all things considered, be best should be (as was but now observed), then it must be impossible for a being who has no defect of wisdom and goodness, to do otherwise than choose it should be; and that for this very reason, because he is perfectly wise and good. And if it be agreeable to perfect Wisdom and Goodness for him to choose that it should be, and the ordering of all things supremely and perfectly belongs to him, it must be agreeable to infinite Wisdom and Goodness to order that it should be. If the choice is good, the ordering and disposing things according to that choice must also be good. It can be no harm in one to whom it belongs *to do his will in the armies of heaven, and amongst the inhabitants of the earth*, to execute a good volition. If this will be good, and the object of his will be, all things considered, good and best, then the choosing or willing it, is not *willing evil* that good may come. And, if so, then his ordering

according to that will, is not *doing evil* that good may come.

2. It is not of a *bad tendency*, for the Supreme Being thus to order and permit that moral evil to be, which it is best should come to pass. For that it is of good tendency, is the very thing supposed in the point now in question. Christ's crucifixion, though a most horrid fact in them that perpetrated it, was of most glorious tendency as permitted and ordered of God.

3. Nor is there any need of supposing it *proceeds from any evil disposition or aim*; for by the supposition, what is aimed at is good, and good is the actual issue, in the final result of things.

## SECTION X.

### CONCERNING SIN'S FIRST ENTRANCE INTO THE WORLD.

THE things which have already been offered may serve to obviate or clear many of the objections which might be raised concerning sin's first coming into the world; as though it would follow from the doctrine maintained, that God must be the author of the first sin, through his so disposing things, that it should necessarily follow from his permission, that the sinful act should be committed, &c. I need not, therefore, stand to repeat what has been said already about such a necessity's not proving God to be the author of sin, in any ill sense, or in any such sense as to infringe any liberty of man, concerned in his moral agency, or capacity of blame, guilt, and punishment.

But, if it should nevertheless be said, supposing the case so, that God, when he had made man, might so order his circumstances,



that, from these circumstances, together with his withholding further assistance and Divine influence, his sin would infallibly follow, why might not God as well have first made man with a fixed prevailing principle of sin in his heart?

I answer, 1. It was meet, if sin did come into existence, and appear in the world, it should arise from the imperfection which properly belongs to a creature, as such, and should appear so to do, that it might appear not to be from God as the efficient or fountain. But this could not have been, if man had been made at first with sin in his heart; nor unless the abiding principle and habit of sin were first introduced by an evil act of the creature. If sin had not arose from the imperfection of the creature, it would not have been so visible, that it did not arise from God, as the positive cause, and real source of it.—But it would require room that cannot be here allowed, fully to consider all the difficulties which have been started concerning the first entrance of sin into the world.

And therefore,

2. I would observe, that objections against the doctrine that has been laid down, in opposition to the Arminian notion of liberty, from these difficulties, are altogether impertinent; because no additional difficulty is incurred by adhering to a scheme in this manner differing from theirs, and none would be removed or avoided by agreeing with, and maintaining, theirs. Nothing that the Arminians say about the contingency, or self-determining power of man's will, can serve to explain, with less

difficulty, how the first sinful volition of mankind could take place, and man be justly charged with the blame of it. To say, the will was self-determined, or determined by free choice, in that sinful volition; which is to say, that the first sinful volition was determined by a foregoing sinful volition; is no solution of the difficulty. It is an odd way of solving difficulties, to advance greater, in order to it. To say two and two make nine; or, that a child begat his father, solves no difficulty: no more does it, to say, the first sinful act of choice was before the first sinful act of choice, and chose and determined it, and brought it to pass. Nor is it any better solution, to say, the first sinful volition chose, determined, and produced itself; which is to say, it was before it was. Nor will it go any further towards helping us over the difficulty, to say, the first sinful volition arose accidentally, without any cause at all; any more than it will solve that difficult question, *How the world could be made out of nothing?* to say, it came into being out of nothing, without any cause; as has been already observed. And if we should allow that *that* could be, that the first evil volition should arise by perfect accident, without any cause; it would relieve no difficulty, about God's laying the blame of it to man. For how was man to blame for perfect accident, which had no cause, and which, therefore, he (to be sure) was not the cause of, any more than if it came by some external cause?—Such kind of solutions are no better, than if some person, going about to solve some of the strange mathematical paradoxes about

infinitely great and small quantities ; as, that some infinitely great quantities are infinitely greater than some other infinitely great quantities ; and also that some infinitely small quantities are infinitely less than others, which yet are infinitely little ; in order to a solution, should say, that mankind have been under a mistake, in supposing a greater quantity to exceed a smaller ; and that a hundred multiplied by ten makes but a single unit.

## SECTION XI.

OF A SUPPOSED INCONSISTENCE OF THESE PRINCIPLES  
WITH GOD'S MORAL CHARACTER.

THE things which have been already observed may be sufficient to answer most of the objections, and silence the great exclamations of Arminians against the Calvinists, from the supposed inconsistency of Calvinistic principles with the moral perfections of God, as exercised in his government of mankind. The consistence of such a doctrine of necessity as has been maintained, with the fitness and reasonableness of God's commands, promises, and threatenings, rewards and punishments, has been particularly considered : the cavils of our opponents, as though our doctrine of necessity made God the author of sin, have been answered ; and also their objection against these principles, as inconsistent with God's sincerity in his counsels, invitations, and persuasions, has been already obviated, in what has been observed respecting the consistence of what Calvinists suppose concerning the secret and revealed will of God : by that it appears,

there is no repugnance in supposing it may be the secret will of God, that his ordination and permission of events should be such, that it shall be a certain consequence, that a thing never will come to pass; which yet it is man's duty to do, and so God's perceptive will that he should do; and this is the same thing as to say, God may sincerely command and require him to do it. And if he may be sincere in commanding him, he may, for the same reason, be sincere in counselling, inviting, and using persuasions with him to do it. Counsels and invitations are manifestations of God's perceptive will, or of what God loves, and what is in itself, and as man's act, agreeable to his heart; and not of his disposing will, and what he chooses as a part of his own infinite scheme of things. It has been particularly shewn, Part III. sect. iv. that such a necessity as has been maintained, is not inconsistent with the propriety and fitness of Divine commands; and for the same reason, not inconsistent with the sincerity and invitations and counsels, in the corollary at the end of that section. Yea, it hath been shewn, Part III. sect. vii. corol. 1. that this objection of Arminians, concerning the sincerity and use of Divine exhortations, invitations, and counsels, is demonstrably against themselves.

Notwithstanding, I would further observe, that the difficulty of reconciling the sincerity of counsels, invitations, and persuasions, with such an antecedent known fixedness of all events, as has been supposed, is not peculiar to this scheme, as distinguished from that of the generality of Arminians, which acknow-

ledge the absolute foreknowledge of God : and therefore it would be unreasonably brought as an objection against my differing from them. The main seeming difficulty in the case is this : that God, in counselling, inviting, and persuading, makes a shew of aiming at, seeking, and using endeavours for the thing exhorted and persuaded to ; whereas, it is impossible for any intelligent being truly to seek, or use endeavours for a thing, which he at the same time knows, most perfectly, will not come to pass ; and that it is absurd to suppose, he makes the obtaining of a thing his end, in his calls and counsels, which he, at the same time, infallibly knows will not be obtained by these means. Now, if God knows this, in the utmost certainty and perfection, the way by which he comes by this knowledge makes no difference. If he knows it is by the necessity which he sees in things, or by some other means, it alters not the case. But it is in effect allowed by Arminians themselves, that God's inviting and persuading men to do things which he, at the same time, certainly knows will not be done, is no evidence of insincerity ; because they allow, that God has a certain foreknowledge of all men's sinful actions and omissions. And as this is thus implicitly allowed by most Arminians, so all that pretend to own the Scriptures to be the word of God, must be constrained to allow it. — God commanded and counselled Pharaoh to let his people go, and used arguments and persuasions to induce him to it ; he laid before him arguments taken from his infinite greatness and almighty power, (Exod. vii. 16.) and forewarned him of the fatal



consequences of his refusal, from time to time ; (chap. viii. 1, 2, 20, 21 ; chap. ix. 1—5, 13—17 ; and x. 3, 6.) He commanded Moses, and the elders of Israel, to go and beseech Pharaoh to let the people go ; and at the same time told them, he knew surely that he would not comply to it. Exod. iii. 18, 19 : “And thou shalt come, thou and the elders of Israel, unto the king of Egypt, and you shall say unto him ; The Lord God of the Hebrews hath met with us ; and now let us go, we beseech thee, three days’ journey into the wilderness, that we may sacrifice unto the Lord our God.” And, “I am sure that the king of Egypt will not let you go.” So our blessed Saviour, the evening wherein he was betrayed, knew that Peter would shamefully deny him before the morning ; for he declares it to him with asseverations, to shew the certainty of it ; and tells the disciples, that all of them should be offended because of him that night ; Matt. xxvi. 31—35. John, xiii. 38. Luke, xxii. 31—34. John, xvi. 32. And yet it was their duty to avoid these things ; they were very sinful things, which God had forbidden, and which it was their duty to watch and pray against ; and they were obliged to do so from the *counsels* and *persuasions* Christ used with them, at that very time, so to do ; Matt. xxvi. 41. “Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation.” So that whatever difficulty there can be in this matter, it can be no objection against any principles which have been maintained in opposition to the principles of Arminians ; nor does it any more concern me to remove the difficulty, than it does them, or indeed all that call themselves Christians,

and acknowledge the Divine authority of the Scriptures. Nevertheless, this matter may possibly (God allowing) be more particularly and largely considered, in some future discourse on the doctrine of *predestination*.

But I would here observe, that however the defenders of that notion of liberty of will which I have opposed, exclaim against the doctrine of Calvinists, as tending to bring men into doubts concerning the moral perfections of God; it is their scheme, and not the scheme of Calvinists, that indeed is justly chargeable with this. For it is one of the most fundamental points of their scheme of things, that a freedom of will, consisting in self-determination, without all necessity, is essential to *moral agency*. This is the same thing as to say, that such a determination of the will, without all necessity, must be in all intelligent beings, in those things wherein they are *moral agents*, or in their *moral acts*: and from this it will follow, that God's will is not necessarily determined, in any thing he does, as a *moral agent*, or in any of his *acts* that are of a *moral nature*: so that in all things, wherein he acts *holily, justly, and truly*, he does not act necessarily; or his will is not necessarily determined to act holily and justly; because, if it were necessarily determined, he would not be a *moral agent* in thus acting; his will would be attended with necessity, which, they say, is inconsistent with *moral agency*:—"He can act no otherwise; he is at no liberty in the affair; he is determined by unavoidable, invincible necessity: therefore such agency is no moral agency; yea, no agency at all, properly speak-

ing: a necessary agent is no agent: he being passive, and subject to necessity, what he does is no act of his, but an effect of a necessity prior to any act of his." This is agreeable to their manner of arguing. Now then, what is become of all our proof of the moral perfections of God? How can we prove that God certainly will, in any one instance, do that which is just and holy, seeing his will is determined in the matter by no necessity? We have no other way of proving that any thing *certainly* will be, but only by the necessity of the event. Where we can see no necessity, but that the thing may be, or may not be, there we are unavoidably left at a loss. We have no other way properly and truly to demonstrate the moral perfections of God, but the way that Mr. Chubb proves them, in pp. 252, 261, 262, 263, of his Tracts, viz. that God must necessarily perfectly know what is most worthy and valuable in itself, which, in the nature of things, is best and fittest to be done. And as this is most eligible in itself, he, being omniscient, must see it to be so; and being both omniscient and self-sufficient, cannot have any temptation to reject it; and so must necessarily will that which is best. And thus, by this necessity of the determination of God's will to what is good and best, we demonstrably establish God's moral character.

Corol. From things which have been observed, it appears, that most of the arguments from Scripture, which Arminians make use of to support their scheme, are no other than *begging the question*. For in these their arguments, they determine in the first place, that without

such a freedom of will as they hold, men cannot be proper moral agents, nor the subjects of command, counsel, persuasion, invitation, promises, threatenings, exhortations, rewards, and punishments; and that without such freedom, it is to no purpose for men to take any care, or use any diligence, endeavours, or means, in order to their avoiding sin, or becoming holy, escaping punishment, or obtaining happiness: and having supposed these things, which are grand things in question in the debate, then they heap up Scriptures, containing commands, counsels, calls, warnings, persuasions, exhortations, promises, and threatenings, (as, doubtless, they may find enough such; the Bible is confessedly full of them, from the beginning to the end); and then they glory, how full the Scripture is on their side, how many more texts there are that evidently favour their scheme, than such as seem to favour the contrary. But let them first make manifest the things in question, which they suppose and take for granted, and shew them to be consistent with themselves, and produce clear evidence of their truth; and they have gained their point, as all will confess, without bringing one Scripture. For none denies, that there are commands, counsels, promises, threatenings, &c. in the Bible. But unless they do these things, their multiplying such texts of Scripture is insignificant and vain.

It may further be observed, that such Scriptures as they bring are really against them, and not for them. As it has been demonstrated, that it is their scheme, and not ours, that is inconsistent with the use of motives and



persuasives, or any moral means whatsoever, to induce men to the practice of virtue, or abstaining from wickedness : their principles, and not ours, are repugnant to moral agency, and inconsistent with moral government, with law or precept, with the nature of virtue or vice, reward or punishment, and with every thing whatsoever of a moral nature, either on the part of the moral governor, or in the state, actions, or conduct of the subject.

## SECTION XII.

OF A SUPPOSED TENDENCY OF THESE PRINCIPLES TO  
ATHEISM AND LICENTIOUSNESS.

IF any object against what has been maintained, that it tends to atheism ; I know not on what grounds such an objection can be raised, unless it be, that some atheists have held a doctrine of necessity, which they suppose to be like this. But if it be so, I am persuaded the Arminians would not look upon it just, that their notion of freedom and contingency should be charged with a tendency to all the errors that ever any embraced who have held such opinions. The Stoic philosophers, whom the Calvinists are charged with agreeing with, were no atheists, but the greatest theists, and nearest akin to Christians in their opinions concerning the unity and the perfections of the Godhead, of all the heathen philosophers. And Epicurus, that chief father of atheism, maintained no such doctrine of necessity, but was the greatest maintainer of contingency.

The doctrine of necessity, which supposes a



necessary connexion of all events, on some antecedent ground and reason of their existence, is the only medium we have to prove the being of God. And the contrary doctrine of contingency, even as maintained by Arminians (which certainly implies or infers that events may come into existence, or begin to be, without dependence on any thing foregoing, as their cause, ground, or reason,) takes away all proof of the being of God; which proof is summarily expressed by the apostle in Rom. i. 20. And this is a tendency to atheism with a witness. So that, indeed, it is the doctrine of Arminians, and not of the Calvinists, that is justly charged with a tendency to atheism; it being built on a foundation that is the utter subversion of every demonstrative argument for the proof of a deity; as has been shewn, Part II. sect. iii.

And whereas it has often been said, that the Calvinistic doctrine of necessity saps the foundations of all religion and virtue, and tends to the greatest licentiousness of practice; this objection is built on the pretence, that our doctrine renders vain all means and endeavours in order to be virtuous and religious. Which pretence has been already particularly considered in the fifth section of this Part; where it has been demonstrated, that this doctrine has no such tendency: but that such a tendency is truly to be charged on the contrary doctrine; inasmuch as the notion of contingency, which their doctrine implies, in its certain consequences, overthrows all connexion, in every degree, between endeavour and event, means and end.

And besides, if many other things, which have been observed to belong to the Arminian doctrine, or to be plain consequences of it, be considered, there will appear just reason to suppose that it is *that* which must rather tend to licentiousness. Their doctrine excuses all evil inclinations, which men find to be natural; because in such inclinations they are not self-determined, as such inclinations are not owing to any choice or determination of their own wills:—which leads men wholly to justify themselves in all their wicked actions, so far as natural inclination has had a hand in determining their wills to the commission of them. Yea, these notions, which suppose moral necessity and inability to be inconsistent with blame or moral obligation, will directly lead men to justify the vilest acts and practices, from the strength of their wicked inclinations of all sorts; strong inclinations inducing a moral necessity; yea, to excuse every degree of evil inclination, so far as this has evidently prevailed, and been the thing which has determined their wills: because, so far as antecedent inclination determined the will, so far the will was without liberty of indifference and self-determination. Which, at last, will come to this, that men will justify themselves in all the wickedness they commit. It has been observed already, that this scheme of things does exceedingly diminish the guilt of sin, and the difference between the greatest and smallest offences;\* and if it be pursued in its real consequences, it leaves room for no such thing

\* Part III. sect. vi.

as either virtue or vice, blame or praise, in the world.\* And then, again, how naturally does this notion of the sovereign self-determining power of the will, in all things, virtuous or vicious, and whatsoever deserves either reward or punishment, tend to encourage men to put off the work of religion and virtue, and turning from sin to God; it being that which they have a sovereign power to determine themselves to, just when they please; or if not, they are wholly excusable in going on in sin, because of their inability to do any other.

If it should be said, that the tendency of this doctrine of necessity to licentiousness appears by the improvement many at this day actually make of it, to justify themselves in their dissolute courses; I will not deny that some men do unreasonably abuse this doctrine, as they do many other things which are true and excellent in their own nature: but I deny that this proves the doctrine itself has any tendency to licentiousness. I think, the tendency of doctrines, by what now appears in the world, and in our nation in particular, may much more justly be argued from the general effect which has been seen to attend the prevailing of the principles of Arminians, and the contrary principles; as both have had their turn of general prevalence in our nation. (If it be indeed, as is pretended, that Calvinistic doctrines undermine the very foundation of all religion and morality, and enervate and disannul all rational motives to holy and virtuous prac-

\* Part III. sect. iii. corol. 1. after the first head, sect. vi. and vii.; Part IV. sect. i.

tice; and that the contrary doctrines give the inducements to virtue and goodness their proper force, and exhibit religion in a rational light, tending to recommend it to the reason of mankind, and enforce it in a manner that is agreeable to their natural notions of things: I say, if it be thus, it is remarkable that virtue and religious practice should prevail most, when the former doctrines, so inconsistent with it, prevailed almost universally: and that ever since the latter doctrines, so happily agreeing with it, and of so proper and excellent a tendency to promote it, have been gradually prevailing, vice, profaneness, luxury, and wickedness of all sorts, and contempt of all religion, and of every kind of seriousness and strictness of conversation, should proportionably prevail; and that these things should thus accompany one another, and rise and prevail one with another, now for a whole age together. It is remarkable, that this happy remedy (discovered by the free inquiries, and superior sense and wisdom of this age) against the pernicious effects of Calvinism, so inconsistent with religion, and tending so much to banish all virtue from the earth, should, on so long a trial, be attended with no good effect; but that the consequence should be the reverse of amendment; that in proportion as the remedy takes place, and is thoroughly applied, so the disease should prevail; and the very same dismal effect take place, to the highest degree, which Calvinistic doctrines are supposed to have so great a tendency to; even the banishing of religion and virtue, and the prevailing of unbounded licentiousness of manners. If these things are truly

so, they are very remarkable, and matter of very curious speculation.)

### SECTION XIII.

CONCERNING THAT OBJECTION AGAINST THE REASONING  
BY WHICH THE CALVINISTIC DOCTRINE IS SUPPORTED,  
THAT IT IS METAPHYSICAL AND ABSTRUSE.

It has often been objected against the defenders of Calvinistic principles, that in their reasonings they run into nice scholastic distinctions, and abstruse metaphysical subtilties, and set these in opposition to common sense. And it is possible, that, after the former manner, it may be alleged against the reasoning by which I have endeavoured to confute the Arminian scheme of liberty and moral agency, that it is very abstracted and metaphysical.—Concerning this, I would observe the following things.

I. If that be made an objection against the foregoing reasoning, that it is *metaphysical*, or may properly be reduced to the science of *metaphysics*, it is a very impertinent objection; whether it be so or no, is not worthy of any dispute or controversy. If the reasoning be good, it is as frivolous to inquire what science it is properly reduced to, as what language it is delivered in: and for a man to go about to confute the arguments of his opponent, by telling him his arguments are *metaphysical*, would be as weak as to tell him, his arguments could not be substantial, because they were written in French or Latin. The question is not, whether what is said be metaphysics, physics, logic, or mathematics, Latin, French, English, or Mohawk? But, whether the reasoning



be good, and the arguments truly conclusive? The foregoing arguments are no more metaphysical, than those which we use against the papists, to disprove their doctrine of transubstantiation; alleging, it is inconsistent with the notion of corporeal identity, that it should be in ten thousand places at the same time. It is by metaphysical arguments only we are able to prove, that the rational soul is not corporeal; that lead or sand cannot think; that thoughts are not square or round, or do not weigh a pound. The arguments by which we prove the being of God, if handled closely and distinctly, so as to shew their clear and demonstrative evidence, must be metaphysically treated. It is by metaphysics only, that we can demonstrate that God is not limited to a place, or is not mutable; that he is not ignorant or forgetful; that it is impossible for him to lie, or be unjust; and that there is one God only, and not hundreds or thousands. And, indeed, we have no strict demonstration of any thing, excepting mathematical truths, but by metaphysics. We can have no proof, that is properly demonstrative, of any one proposition, relating to the being and nature of God, his creation of the world, the dependence of all things on him, the nature of bodies or spirits, the nature of our own souls, or any of the great truths of morality and natural religion, but what is metaphysical. I am willing my arguments should be brought to the test of the strictest and justest reason, and that a clear, distinct, and determinate meaning of the terms I use, should be insisted on; but let not the whole be

rejected, as if all were confuted, by fixing on it the epithet *metaphysical*.

II. If the reasoning which has been made use of, be in some sense metaphysical, it will not follow, that therefore it must needs be abstruse, unintelligible, and akin to the jargon of the schools. I humbly conceive, the foregoing reasoning, at least to those things which are most material belonging to it, depends on no abstruse definitions or distinctions, or terms without a meaning, or of very ambiguous and undetermined signification, or any points of such abstraction and subtilty, as tends to involve the attentive understanding in clouds and darkness. There is no high degree of refinement and abstruse speculation, in determining that a thing is not before it is, and so cannot be the cause of itself; or that the first act of free choice has not another act of free choice going before that, to excite or direct it; or in determining, that no choice is made, while the mind remains in a state of absolute indifference; that preference and equilibrium never co-exist; and that therefore no choice is made in a state of liberty consisting in indifference: and that so far as the will is determined by motives, exhibited and operating previous to the act of the will, so far it is not determined by the act of the will itself; that nothing can begin to be, which before was not, without a cause, or some antecedent ground or reason, why it then begins to be; that effects depend on their causes, and are connected with them; that virtue is not the worse, nor sin the better, for the strength of inclination with which it is practised, and

the difficulty which thence arises of doing otherwise; that when it is already infallibly known that the thing will be, it is not a thing contingent whether it will ever be or no; or that it can be truly said, notwithstanding, that it is not necessary it should be, but it either may be, or may not be. And the like might be observed of many other things which belong to the foregoing reasoning.)

If any shall still stand to it, that the foregoing reasoning is nothing but metaphysical sophistry; and that it must be so, that the seeming force of the arguments all depends on some fallacy and wile that is hid in the obscurity which always attends a great degree of metaphysical abstraction and refinement; and shall be ready to say, “Here is indeed something that tends to confound the mind, but not to satisfy it: for who can ever be truly satisfied in it, that men are fitly blamed or commended, punished or rewarded, for those volitions which are not from themselves, and of whose existence they are not the causes. Men may refine as much as they please, and advance their abstract notions, and make out a thousand seeming contradictions, to puzzle our understandings; yet there can be no satisfaction in such doctrine as this: the natural sense of the mind of man will always resist it.”\* I humbly conceive that

\* A certain noted author of the present age says, the arguments for *necessity* are nothing but *quibbling*, or *logomachy*, using words without a meaning, or *begging the question*. I do not know what kind of necessity any authors he may have reference to are advocates for, or whether they have managed their arguments well or ill. As to the arguments I have made use of, if they are *quibbles*, they may be shewn so: such knots

such an objector, if he has capacity, and humility, and calmness of spirit, sufficient impartially and thoroughly to examine himself, will find that he knows not really what he would be at ; and, indeed, his difficulty is nothing but a mere prejudice, from an inadvertent customary use of words, in a meaning that is not clearly understood, nor carefully reflected upon. Let the objector reflect again, if he has candour and patience enough, and does not scorn to be at the trouble of close attention in the affair. He would have a man's volition be *from himself*. Let it be *from himself*, most primarily and originally of any way conceivable ; that is, from his

are capable of being untied, and the trick and cheat may be detected and plainly laid open. If this be fairly done, with respect to the grounds and reasons I have relied upon, I shall have just occasion, for the future, to be silent, if not to be ashamed of my argumentations. I am willing my proofs should be thoroughly examined ; and if there be nothing but *begging the question*, or mere *logomachy*, or dispute of words, let it be made manifest, and shewn how the seeming strength of the argument depends on my *using words without a meaning*, or arises from the ambiguity of terms, or my making use of words in an indeterminate and unsteady manner ; and that the weight of my reasons rests mainly on such a foundation : and then I shall either be ready to retract what I have urged, and thank the man that has done the kind part, or shall be justly exposed for my obstinacy.

The same author is abundant in appealing, in this affair, from what he calls *logomachy and sophistry* to *experience*. A person can experience only what passes in his own mind. But yet, as we may well suppose that all men have the same human faculties, so a man may well argue from his own experience to that of others, in things that shew the nature of those faculties, and the manner of their operation. But then one has as good right to allege his experience as another. As to my own experience, I find that in innumerable things I can do as I will ; that the motions of my body, in many re-

own choice : how will that help the matter, as to his being justly blamed or praised, unless that choice itself be blame or praiseworthy? And how is the choice itself (an ill choice, for instance) blameworthy, according to these principles, unless that be from himself too, in the same manner; that is, from his own choice? But the original and first-determining choice in the affair is not from his choice : his choice is not the cause of it. And if it be from himself some other way, and not from his choice, surely that will not help the matter. If it be not from himself of choice, then it is not from himself

spects, instantaneously follow the acts of my will concerning those motions; and that my will has some command of my thoughts; and that the acts of my will are my own, *i. e.* that they are acts of my will, the volitions of my own mind; or, in other words, that what I will, I will. Which I presume is the sum of what others experience in this affair. But as to finding by experience that my will is originally determined by itself; or that, my will first choosing what volition there shall be, the chosen volition accordingly follows, and that this is the first rise of the determination of my will in any affair, or that any volition rises in my mind contingently; I declare I know nothing in myself by experience of this nature; and nothing that ever I experienced carries the least appearance or shadow of any such thing, or gives me any more reason to suppose or suspect any such thing, than to suppose that my volitions existed twenty years before they existed. It is true, I find myself possessed of my volitions before I can see the effectual power of any cause to produce them (for the power and efficacy of the cause is not seen but by the effect); and this, for aught I know, may make some imagine that volition has no cause, or that it produces itself. But I have no more reason from hence to determine any such thing, than I have to determine that I gave myself my own being, or that I came into being accidentally without a cause, because I first found myself possessed of being, before I had knowledge of a cause of my being.



voluntarily ; and if so, he is surely no more to blame, than if it were not from himself at all. It is a vanity to pretend it is a sufficient answer to this to say, that it is nothing but metaphysical refinement and subtilty, and so attended with obscurity and uncertainty.

If it be the natural sense of our minds, that what is blameworthy in a man must be from himself, then it doubtless is also, that it must be from something *bad* in himself, a *bad choice*, or *bad disposition*. But then our natural sense is, that this bad choice or disposition is evil *in itself*, and the man blameworthy for it, *on its own account*, without taking into our notion of its blameworthiness another bad choice, or disposition going before this, from whence this arises : for that is a ridiculous absurdity, running us into an immediate contradiction, which our natural sense of blameworthiness has nothing to do with, and never comes into the mind, nor is supposed in the judgment we naturally make of the affair. As was demonstrated before, natural sense does not place the moral evil of volitions and dispositions in the cause of them, but the nature of them. An evil thing's being *from* a man, or from something antecedent in him, is not essential to the original notion we have of blameworthiness : but it is its being the choice of the heart ; as appears by this, that if a thing be *from us*, and not from our choice, it has not the nature of blameworthiness or ill-desert, according to our natural sense. When a thing is *from* a man, in that sense, that it is from his will or choice, he is to blame for it, because his will is *IN IT* : so far as the will is *in it*, blame is *in it*, and no further. Neither do we go any further

in our notion of blame, to inquire whether the bad will be FROM a bad will : there is no consideration of the original of that bad will ; because, according to our natural apprehension, blame *originally consists in it*. Therefore a thing's being *from* a man is a secondary consideration in the notion of blame or ill-desert. Because those things, in our *external* actions, are most properly said to be *from* us, which are *from* our choice ; and no other *external* actions, but those that are from us in this sense, have the nature of blame ; and they, indeed, not so properly because they are *from us*, as because we are *in them*, i. e. our wills are in them ; not so much because they are from some *property* of ours, as because they are our *properties*.

However, all these external actions being truly *from us*, as their cause ; and we being so used, in ordinary speech, and in the common affairs of life, to speak of men's actions and conduct that we see, and that affect human society, as deserving ill or well, as worthy of blame or praise ; hence it is come to pass, that philosophers have incautiously taken all their measures of good and evil, praise and blame, from the dictates of common sense, about these *overt acts* of men ; to the running of every thing into the most lamentable and dreadful confusion. And therefore I observe :

III. It is so far from being true (whatever may be pretended) that the proof of the doctrine which has been maintained depends on certain abstruse, unintelligible, metaphysical terms and notions, and that the Arminian scheme, without needing such clouds and darkness for its defence, is supported by the plain

dictates of common sense, that the very reverse is most certainly true, and that to a great degree. It is fact that they, and not we, have confounded things with metaphysical, unintelligible notions and phrases, and have drawn them from the light of plain truth into the gross darkness of abstruse metaphysical propositions, and words without a meaning. Their pretended demonstrations depend very much on such unintelligible metaphysical phrases, as *self-determination* and *sovereignty of the will*; and the metaphysical sense they put on such terms as *necessity*, *contingency*, *action*, *agency*, &c. quite diverse from their meaning as used in common speech; and which, as they use them, are without any consistent meaning, or any manner of distinct consistent ideas; as far from it as any of the abstruse terms and perplexed phrases of the peripatetic philosophers, or the most unintelligible jargon of the schools, or the cant of the wildest fanatics. Yea, we may be bold to say, these metaphysical terms, on which they build so much, are what they use without knowing what they mean themselves; they are pure metaphysical sounds, without any ideas whatsoever in their minds to answer them; inasmuch as it has been demonstrated, that there cannot be any notion in the mind consistent with these expressions, as they pretend to explain them, because their explanations destroy themselves. No such notions as imply self-contradiction and self-abolition, and this a great many ways, can subsist in the mind; as there can be no idea of a whole which is less than any of its parts, or of solid extension without dimensions, or of an effect which is before its cause. Arminians

improve these terms as terms of art, and in their metaphysical meaning, to advance and establish those things which are contrary to common sense, in a high degree. Thus, instead of the plain, vulgar notion of liberty, which all mankind, in every part of the face of the earth, and in all ages, have, consisting in opportunity to do as one pleases, they have introduced a new, strange liberty, consisting in indifference, contingency, and self-determination, by which they involve themselves and others in great obscurity and manifold gross inconsistency. So, instead of placing virtue and vice, as common sense places them very much, in fixed bias and inclination, and greater virtue and vice in stronger and more established inclination; these, through their refinings and abstruse notions, suppose a liberty consisting in indifference, to be essential to all virtue and vice. So they have reasoned themselves, not by metaphysical distinctions, but metaphysical confusion, into many principles about moral agency, blame, praise, reward, and punishment, which are, as has been shewn, exceeding contrary to the common sense of mankind; and perhaps to their own sense, which governs them in common life.

## CONCLUSION.

WHETHER the things which have been alleged are liable to any tolerable answer in the ways of calm, intelligible, and strict reasoning, I must leave others to judge; but I am sensible they are liable to one sort of answer. It is not unlikely, that some, who value themselves on the supposed rational and generous principles of the modern fashionable divinity, will have their indignation and disdain raised at the sight of this discourse, and on perceiving what things are pretended to be proved in it. And if they think it worthy of being read, or of so much notice as to say much about it, they may probably renew the usual exclamations, with additional vehemence and contempt, about the *fate of the heathen*, *Hobbes's necessity*, and *making men mere machines*; accumulating the terrible epithets of *fatal*, *unfrustrable*, *inevitable*, *irresistible*, &c., and, it may be, with the addition of *horrid* and *blasphemous*; and perhaps much skill may be used to set forth things, which have been said, in colours which shall be shocking to the imaginations, and moving to the passions of those who have either too little capacity, or too much confidence of the opinions they have imbibed, and contempt of the contrary, to try the matter by any serious and circumspect examination.\*

\* A writer of the present age, whom I have several times had occasion to mention, speaks once and again of those who



Or, difficulties may be started and insisted on, which do not belong to the controversy; because let them be more or less real, and hard to be resolved, they are not what are owing to any thing distinguishing of this scheme from that of the Arminians, and would not be removed nor diminished by renouncing the former, and adhering to the latter. Or, some particular things may be picked out, which they may think will sound harshest in the ears of the generality; and these may be glossed and descanted on, with tart and contemptuous words; and from thence, the whole treated with triumph and insult.

It is easy to see how the decision of most of the points in controversy between Calvinists and Arminians depends on the determination of this grand article concerning *the freedom of the will requisite to moral agency*; and that by clearing and establishing the Calvinistic doctrine in this point, the chief arguments are ob-

hold the doctrine of *necessity*, as scarcely worthy of the name of *philosophers*.—I do not know whether he has respect to any particular notion of necessity, that some may have maintained; and, if so, what doctrine of necessity it is that he means.—Whether I am worthy of the name of a philosopher, or not, would be a question little to the present purpose. If any, and ever so many, should deny it, I should not think it worth the while to enter into a dispute on that question: though, at the same time, I might expect some better answer should be given to the arguments brought for the truth of the doctrine I maintain; and I might further reasonably desire, that it might be considered, whether it does not become those who are *truly worthy* of the name of philosophers, to be sensible that there is a difference between *argument* and *contempt*; yea, and a difference between the contemptibleness of the *person* that argues, and the inconclusiveness of the *arguments* he offers.

viated by which Arminian doctrines in general are supported, and the contrary doctrines demonstratively confirmed. Hereby it becomes manifest, that God's moral government over mankind, his treating them as moral agents, making them the objects of his commands, counsels, calls, warnings, expostulations, promises, threatenings, rewards, and punishments, is not inconsistent with a *determining disposal* of all events, of every kind, throughout the universe, *in his providence*; either by positive efficiency or permission. Indeed, such a *universal determining providence* infers some kind of necessity of all events, such a necessity as implies an infallible previous fixedness of the futurity of the event: but no other necessity of moral events, or volitions of intelligent agents, is needful in order to this, than *moral necessity*; which does as much ascertain the futurity of the event as any other necessity. But, as has been demonstrated, such a necessity is not at all repugnant to moral agency, and a reasonable use of commands, calls, rewards, punishments, &c. Yea, not only are objections of this kind against the doctrine of a universal *determining Providence*, removed by what has been said; but the truth of such a doctrine is demonstrated. As it has been demonstrated, that the futurity of all future events is established by previous necessity, either natural or moral; so it is manifest, that the sovereign Creator and Disposer of the world has ordered this necessity, by ordering his own conduct, either in designedly acting, or forbearing to act. For, as the being of the world is from God, so the circumstances in

which it had its being at first, both negative and positive, must be ordered by him, in one of these ways ; and all the necessary consequences of these circumstances must be ordered by him. And God's active and positive interpositions, after the world was created, and the consequences of these interpositions ; also every instance of his forbearing to interpose, and the sure consequences of this forbearance ; must all be determined according to his pleasure. And therefore every event, which is the consequence of any thing whatsoever, or that is connected with any foregoing thing or circumstance, either positive or negative, as the ground or reason of its existence, must be ordered of God ; either by a designing efficiency and interposition, or a designed forbearing to operate or interpose. But, as has been proved, all events whatsoever are necessarily connected with something foregoing, either positive or negative, which is the ground of its existence. It follows, therefore, that the whole series of events is thus connected with something in the state of things, either positive or negative, which is *original* in the series ; *i. e.* something which is connected with nothing preceding that, but God's own immediate conduct, either his acting or forbearing to act. From whence it follows, that as God designedly orders his own conduct, and its connected consequences, it must necessarily be, that he designedly orders all things.

The things which have been said obviate some of the chief objections of Arminians against the Calvinistic doctrine of the *total depravity and corruption of man's nature*, whereby his

heart is wholly under the power of sin, and he is utterly unable, without the interposition of sovereign grace, savingly to love God, believe in Christ, or do any thing that is truly good and acceptable in God's sight. For the main objection against this doctrine is, that it is inconsistent with the freedom of man's will, consisting in indifference and self-determining power; because it supposes man to be under a necessity of sinning, and that God requires things of him, in order to his avoiding eternal damnation, which he is unable to do; and that this doctrine is wholly inconsistent with the sincerity of counsels, invitations, &c. Now, this doctrine supposes *no other necessity* of sinning, than a moral necessity; which, as has been shewn, does not at all excuse sin; and supposes *no other inability* to obey any command, or perform any duty, even the most spiritual and exalted, but a moral inability, which, as has been proved, does not excuse persons in the non-performance of any good thing, or make them not to be the proper objects of commands, counsels, and invitations. And, moreover, it has been shewn, that there is not, and never can be, either in existence, or so much as in idea, any such freedom of will consisting in indifference and self-determination, for the sake of which, this doctrine of original sin is cast out; and that no such freedom is necessary, in order to the nature of sin, and a just desert of punishment.

The things which have been observed do also take off the main objections of Arminians against the doctrine of *efficacious grace*; and, at the same time, prove the grace of God in a

sinner's conversion (if there be any grace or Divine influence in the affair) to be *efficacious*, yea, and *irresistible* too; if by irresistible is meant, that which is attended with a moral necessity, which it is impossible should ever be violated by any resistance. The main objection of Arminians against this doctrine is, that it is inconsistent with their self-determining freedom of will; and that it is repugnant to the nature of virtue, that it should be wrought in the heart by the determining efficacy and power of another, instead of its being owing to a self-moving power; that, in that case, the good which is wrought, would not be *our* virtue, but rather *God's* virtue; because it is not the person in whom it is wrought, that is the determining author of it, but God that wrought it in him. But the things which are the foundation of these objections have been considered; and it has been demonstrated, that the liberty of moral agents does not consist in self-determining power; and that there is no need of any such liberty, in order to the nature of virtue; nor does it at all hinder, but that the state or act of the will may be the virtue of the subject, though it be not from self-determination, but the determination of an intrinsic cause; even so as to cause the event to be morally necessary to the subject of it. And as it has been proved, that nothing in the state or acts of the will of man is contingent; but that, on the contrary, every event of this kind is necessary by a moral necessity; and has also been now demonstrated, that the doctrine of a universal determining Providence follows from that doctrine of necessity which was proved before; and so, that God



does decisively, in his providence, order all the volitions of moral agents, either by positive influence or permission ; and it being allowed, on all hands, that what God does in the affair of man's virtuous volitions, whether it be more or less, is by some positive influence, and not by mere permission, as in the affair of a sinful volition : if we put these things together, it will follow, that God's assistance or influence must be determining and decisive, or must be attended with a moral necessity of the event ; and so that God gives virtue, holiness, and conversion to sinners, by an influence which determines the effect, in such a manner, that the effect will infallibly follow by a moral necessity, which is what Calvinists mean by efficacious and irresistible grace.

The things which have been said do likewise answer the chief objections against the doctrine of God's *universal* and *absolute decree*, and afford infallible proof of this doctrine ; and of the doctrine of *absolute, eternal, personal election* in particular. The main objections against these doctrines are, that they infer a necessity of the volitions of moral agents, and of the future moral state and acts of men ; and so are not consistent with those eternal rewards and punishments, which are connected with conversion and impenitence ; nor can be made to agree with the reasonableness and sincerity of the precepts, calls, counsels, warnings, and exhortations of the word of God ; or with the various methods and means of grace which God uses with sinners to bring them to repentance ; and the whole of that moral government which God exercises towards mankind : and that they

infer an inconsistency between the *secret* and *revealed will of God*, and make God the author of sin. But all these things have been obviated in the preceding discourse. And the certain truth of these doctrines concerning God's eternal purposes, will follow from what was just now observed concerning God's universal providence; how it infallibly follows from what has been proved, that God orders all events, and the volitions of moral agents amongst others, by such a decisive disposal, that the events are infallibly connected with his disposal. For if God disposes all events, so that the infallible existence of the events is decided by his providence, then he, doubtless, thus orders and decides things *knowingly*, and *on design*. God does not do what he does, nor order what he orders, accidentally and unawares; either *without* or *beside* his intention. And if there be a foregoing *design* of doing and ordering as he does, this is the same with a *purpose* or *decree*. And as it has been shewn that nothing is new to God, in any respect, but all things are perfectly and equally in his view from eternity; hence it will follow, that his designs or purposes are not things formed anew, founded on any new views or appearances, but are all eternal purposes. And as it has been now shewn how the doctrine of determining efficacious grace certainly follows from things proved in the foregoing discourse; hence will necessarily follow the doctrine of *particular, eternal, absolute election*. For if men are made true saints no otherwise than as God makes them so, and distinguishes them from others, by an efficacious power and influence of his, that decides and fixes the event;

and God thus makes some saints, and not others, on design or purpose, and (as has been now observed) no designs of God are new; it follows, that God thus distinguished from others, all that ever become true saints, by his eternal design or decree. I might also shew how God's certain foreknowledge must suppose an absolute decree, and how such a decree can be proved to a demonstration from it: but that this discourse may not be lengthened out too much, that must be omitted for the present.

From these things it will inevitably follow, that however Christ in some sense may be said to *die for all*, and to redeem all visible Christians, yea, the whole world, by his death; yet there must be something *particular* in the design of his death, with respect to such as he intended should actually be saved thereby. As appears by what has been now shewn, God has the actual salvation or redemption of a certain number in his proper absolute design, and of a certain number only; and therefore such a design only can be prosecuted in any thing God does, in order to the salvation of men. God pursues a proper design of the salvation of the elect in giving Christ to die, and prosecutes such a design with respect to no other, most strictly speaking; for it is impossible that God should prosecute any other design than only such as he has; he certainly does not, in the highest propriety and strictness of speech, pursue a design that he has not. And, indeed, such a particularity and limitation of redemption will as infallibly follow, from the doctrine of God's foreknowledge, as from that of the decree. For it is as impossible, in strictness of speech, that

God should prosecute a design, or aim at a thing, which he at the same time most perfectly knows will not be accomplished, as that he should use endeavours for that which is beside his decree.

By the things which have been proved are obviated some of the main objections against the doctrine of the infallible and necessary *perseverance* of saints, and some of the main foundations of this doctrine are established. The main prejudices of Arminians against this doctrine seem to be these: they suppose such a necessary, infallible perseverance to be repugnant to the freedom of the will; that it must be owing to man's own self-determining power, that he *first becomes* virtuous and holy; and so, in like manner, it must be left a thing contingent, to be determined by the same freedom of will, whether he will *persevere* in virtue and holiness; and that otherwise his continuing steadfast in faith and obedience would not be his virtue, or at all praiseworthy and rewardable; nor could his perseverance be properly the matter of Divine commands, counsels, and promises, nor his apostasy be properly threatened, and men warned against it. Whereas, we find all these things in Scripture: there we find steadfastness and perseverance in true Christianity represented as the virtue of the saints, spoken of as praiseworthy in them, and glorious rewards promised to it; and also find, that God makes it the subject of his commands, counsels, and promises; and the contrary, of threatenings and warnings. But the foundation of these objections has been removed, in its being shewn that moral necessity and infallible certainty of

events is not inconsistent with these things ; and that as to freedom of will lying in the power of the will to determine itself, there neither is any such thing, nor any need of it in order to virtue, reward, commands, counsels, &c.

And as the doctrines of efficacious grace and absolute election do certainly follow from things which have been proved in the preceding discourse ; so some of the main foundations of the doctrine of perseverance are thereby established. If the beginning of true faith and holiness, and a man's becoming a true saint at first, does not depend on the self-determining power of the will, but on the determining efficacious grace of God ; it may well be argued, that it is also with respect to men's being continued saints, or persevering in faith and holiness. The conversion of a sinner being not owing to a man's self-determination, but to God's determination, and eternal election, which is absolute, and depending on the sovereign will of God, and not on the free will of man, as is evident from what has been said ; and it being very evident, from the Scriptures, that the eternal election which there is of saints to faith and holiness, is also an election of them to eternal salvation : hence their appointment to salvation must also be absolute, and not depending on their contingent, self-determining will. From all which it follows, that it is absolutely fixed in God's decree, that all true saints shall persevere to actual eternal salvation.

But I must leave all these things to the consideration of the fair and impartial reader ; and when he has maturely weighed them, I would propose it to his consideration, whether many



of the first reformers, and others that succeeded them, whom God in their day made the chief pillars of his church, and greatest instruments of their deliverance from error and darkness, and of the support of the cause of piety among them, have not been injured, in the contempt with which they have been treated by many late writers, for their teaching and maintaining such doctrines as are commonly called *Calvinistic*. Indeed, some of these new writers, at the same time that they have represented the doctrines of these ancient and eminent divines as in the highest degree ridiculous, and contrary to common sense, in an ostentation of a very generous charity, have allowed that they were honest, well-meaning men : yea, it may be, some of them, as though it were in great condescension and compassion to them, have allowed, that they did pretty well for the day which they lived in, and considering the great disadvantages they laboured under : when, at the same time, their manner of speaking has naturally and plainly suggested to the minds of their readers, that they were persons, who through the lowness of their genius, and greatness of the bigotry with which their minds were shackled and thoughts confined, living in the gloomy caves of superstition, fondly embraced, and demurely and zealously taught, the most absurd, silly, and monstrous opinions, worthy of the greatest contempt of gentlemen possessed of that noble and generous freedom of thought which happily prevails in this age of light and inquiry. When, indeed, such is the case, that we might, if so disposed, speak as big words as they, and on far better grounds. And really

all the Arminians on earth might be challenged, without arrogance or vanity, to make these principles of theirs, wherein they mainly differ from their fathers, whom they so much despise, consistent with common sense; yea, and perhaps to produce any doctrine ever embraced by the blindest bigot of the church of Rome, or the most ignorant Mussulman, or extravagant enthusiast, that might be reduced to more demonstrable inconsistencies, and repugnances to common sense and to themselves; though their inconsistencies indeed may not lie so deep, or be so artfully veiled by a deceitful ambiguity of words, and an indeterminate signification of phrases. I will not deny, that these gentlemen, many of them, are men of great abilities, and have been helped to higher attainments in philosophy than those ancient divines, and have done great service to the church of God in some respects: but I humbly conceive, that their differing from their fathers, with such magisterial assurance, in these points in divinity, must be owing to some other cause than superior wisdom.

It may also be worthy of consideration, whether the great alteration which has been made in the state of things in our nation, and some other parts of the Protestant world, in this and the past age, by the exploding so generally Calvinistic doctrines, that is so often spoken of as worthy to be greatly rejoiced in by the friends of truth, learning, and virtue, as an instance of the great increase of light in the Christian church; I say, it may be worthy to be considered, whether this be indeed a happy change, owing to any such cause as an increase

of true knowledge and understanding in things of religion; or whether there is not reason to fear, that it may be owing to some worse cause.

And I desire it may be considered, whether the boldness of some writers may not be worthy to be reflected on, who have not scrupled to say, that if these and those things are true (which yet appear to be the demonstrable dictates of reason, as well as the certain dictates of the mouth of the Most High), then God is unjust and cruel, and guilty of manifest deceit and double dealing, and the like. Yea, some have gone so far, as confidently to assert, that if any book which pretends to be Scripture, teaches such doctrines, that alone is sufficient warrant for mankind to reject it, as what cannot be the word of God. Some, who have not gone so far, have said, that if the Scripture seems to teach any such doctrines, so contrary to reason, we are obliged to find out some other interpretation of those texts where such doctrines seem to be exhibited. Others express themselves yet more modestly: they express a tenderness and religious fear, lest they should receive and teach any thing that should seem to reflect on God's moral character, or be a disparagement to his methods of administration, in his moral government; and therefore express themselves as not daring to embrace some doctrines, though they seem to be delivered in Scripture, according to the more obvious and natural construction of the words. But indeed it would shew a truer modesty and humility, if they would more entirely rely on God's wisdom and discerning, who knows infinitely better than we what is agreeable to his own perfec-

tions, and never intended to leave these matters to the decision of the wisdom and discerning of men : but by his own unerring instruction, to determine for us what the truth is ; knowing how little our judgment is to be depended on, and how extremely prone vain and blind men are to err in such matters.

The truth of the case is, that if the Scripture plainly taught the opposite doctrines to those that are so much stumbled at, viz. the Arminian doctrine of free will, and others depending thereon, it would be the greatest of all difficulties that attend the Scriptures, incomparably greater than its containing any, even the most mysterious of those doctrines of the first reformers, which our late free-thinkers have so superciliously exploded.—Indeed, it is a glorious argument of the divinity of the holy Scriptures, that they teach such doctrines, which in one age and another, through the blindness of men's minds, and strong prejudices of their hearts, are rejected as most absurd and unreasonable by the wise and great men of the world ; which yet, when they are most carefully and strictly examined, appear to be exactly agreeable to the most demonstrable, certain, and natural dictates of reason. By such things it appears, that the *foolishness of God is wiser than men* ; and God does as is said in I Cor. i. 19, 20 : “ For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Where is the wise ? where is the scribe ? where is the disputer of this world ? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world ? ” And as it is used to be in time past, so it is probable it will

be in time to come, as it is there written, in ver. 27—29. “ But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world, to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world, to confound the things that are mighty; and base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are; that no flesh should glory in his presence.” Amen.

---





## INDEX.

---

ABSTRACTED or abstruse reasoning, whether justly objected against Calvinists, 404.

Action, inconsistency of the Arminian notion of it, 287; and whence this arose, 295; what it is in the common notion of it, 291; and how distinguished from passion, 294.

Activity of the nature of the soul, whether through this, volition can arise without a cause, 68.

Apparent good, the greatest, in what sense it determines the will, 9.

Arminians, obliged to talk inconsistently, 76. 101. 112; where the main strength of their pretended demonstrations lies, 317; their objection from God's moral character considered and retorted, 382-3.

Arminian doctrine, its tendency to supersede all use of means, and make endeavours vain, 323; and, in effect, to exclude all virtue and vice out of the world, 234. 242. 266. 275. 284. 401.

Atheism, the supposed tendency of Calvinistic principles to it, 399; how Arminian principles tend to it, 400.

Attending to motives, of liberty's being supposed to consist in an ability for it, 116.

Atonement. *See* Christ.

Author of sin, whether it would follow from the doctrine here maintained, that God is so, 365.

Blameworthiness, wherein it consists, according to common sense, 307.

Calvinism, consistent with common sense, 298.

Cause, how the word is used in this discourse, 60; no event without one, 61; and effect, a necessary connexion between them, 106; this respects moral as well as natural causes, 60.

Christ, his obedience necessary, yet virtuous and praiseworthy, 201; his atonement excluded in consequence of Arminian principles, 229.

Chubb (Mr.) the inconsistency of his scheme of liberty, &c. 123-142.

Commands consistent with moral necessity and inability, 231. 392; inconsistent with Arminian principles, 234.

Common sense, why the

principles maintained in this discourse appear to some contrary to it, 298; necessary virtue and vice agreeable to it, 307; Arminian tenets opposite to it, 257. 272.

Contingence, 29; the inconsistency of the notion, 65; whether necessary in order to liberty, 105; implied in Arminian liberty, and yet inconsistent with it, 192; Epicurus the greatest maintainer of it, 331. 399.

Corruption of man's nature, 417.

Creation of the world, at such a particular time and place, 348.

Decree absolute, not inferring necessity, any more than certain foreknowledge does, 177; how it follows from things proved in this discourse, 420.

Determination. *See* Will.

Dictates. *See* Understanding.

Effects. *See* Cause.

Efficacious grace, 418.

Election personal. *See* Decree.

Endeavours, what it is for them to be in vain, 319; rendered vain by Arminian principles, 323; but not so by Calvinism, 326. *See* Sincerity.

Entrance of sin into the world, 389.

Equilibrium. *See* Indifference.

Exhortation. *See* Invitation.

Fallen man. *See* Inability.

Fate, stoical, 321.

Fatality, the principles of Arminians inferring that which is most shocking, 331.

Foreknowledge of God, of volitions of moral agents, proved, 142; inconsistent with contingency, 170; proves necessity as much as a decree, 177; the seeming difficulty of reconciling it with the sincerity of his precepts, counsels, &c. not peculiar to the Calvinistic scheme, 393.

God, his being, how known, 62. 400; his moral excellencies necessary, yet virtuous and praiseworthy, 195. 319; the necessity of his volitions, 333; whether the principles maintained in this discourse are inconsistent with his moral character, 392; how Arminianism destroys the evidence of his moral perfections, 396.

Grace of the Spirit excluded by Arminian principles, 230.

Grace, its freeness consistent with the moral necessity of God's will, 361.

Habits virtuous and vicious inconsistent with Arminian principles, 262.

Heathen, of their salvation, 257.

Hobbes, his doctrine of necessity, 332.

Impossibility, the same as negative necessity, 28.

Inability, how the word is

used in common speech, and how by metaphysicians and Arminians, 21. 29. 291 ; natural and moral, 30 ; moral, the several kinds of it, 36. 240 ; of fallen man to perform perfect obedience, 227 ; what does, and what does not excuse men, 224. 243. 299.

Inclinations. *See* Habits.

Indifference, whether liberty consists in it, 91 ; not necessary to virtue, but inconsistent with it, 260.

Indifferent things, those which appear so, never the objects of volition, 9. 82 ; whether the will can determine itself in choosing among such things, 82.

Invitations consistent with moral necessity and inability, 245, 392 ; but not consistent with Arminian principles, 117. 273. 396.

Laws, the end whereof is to bind to one side, rendered useless by Arminian principles, 234.

Liberty, the nature of it, 40 ; the Arminian notion of it, 42 ; this inconsistent with other Arminian notions, 111, &c.

Licentiousness, whether the Calvinistic doctrine tends to it, 400. *See* Endeavours.

Machines, whether Calvinism makes men such, 327.

Means. *See* Endeavours.

Metaphysical reasoning—*see* Asbtracted—to be justly

objected against the Arminian scheme, 411.

Moral agency, its nature, 43.

Motives, what they are, 7, 8 ; the strongest determining the will, 8. 128 ; Arminian principles inconsistent with their influence and use in moral actions, 269. 398.

Natural notions. *See* Common sense.

Necessity, how the term is used in common speech, and how by philosophers, 19. 300 ; philosophical of various kinds, 304 ; natural and moral, 30. 315 ; no liberty without moral necessity, 105 ; necessity and contingency, both inconsistent with Arminian liberty, 189 ; necessity of God's volition, 195. 333 ; this consistent with the freeness of his grace, 361 ; necessity of Christ's obedience, &c. 200 ; of the sin of such as are given up to sin, 221 ; of fallen man in general, 227 ; what necessity wholly excuses men, 244. 299. 311.

Obedience. *See* Christ, Commands, Necessity.

Particles perfectly alike, of the Creator's placing such differently, 351.

Perseverance of saints, 423.

Promises, whether any are made to the endeavours of unregenerate sinners, 256.

Providence, universal and decisive, 416.

Redemption particular, 422.

Reformers, the first, how treated by many late writers, 425.

Saints in heaven, their liberty, 318.

Scripture, of the Arminians' arguments from thence, 397.

Self-determining power of the will, its inconsistency, 46; evasions of the arguments against it considered, 52; shewn to be impertinent, 74.

Sin. *See* Author, Entrance.

Sincerity of desires and endeavours, what is no just excuse, 246; the different sorts of sincerity, 253.

Sloth, not encouraged by Calvinism, 324.

Stoic philosophers great theists, 399. *See* Fate.

Suspending volition, of the liberty of the will supposed to consist in an ability for it, 101. 236. 270.

Tendency of the principles here maintained to atheism

and licentiousness, the objection considered and retorted, 399.

Virtue and vice, the being of neither of them consistent with Arminian principles—*see* Arminian doctrine; their essence not lying in their cause, but their nature, 278.

Understanding, how it determines the will, 17. 110; dictates of the understanding and will, as supposed by some the same, 117.

Uneasiness, as supposed to determine the will, 10.

Volition, not without a cause, 68, 73.

Will, its nature, 1, &c.; its determination, 6, &c.; the very being of such a faculty inconsistent with Arminian principles, 276; of God's secret and revealed, 381; Arminians themselves obliged to allow such a distinction, 384.

Willingness to duty, what is no excuse for the neglect of it. *See* Sincerity.



# REMARKS

ON THE

## ESSAYS ON THE PRINCIPLES OF MORALITY AND NATURAL RELIGION:

IN A LETTER TO A MINISTER OF THE CHURCH OF SCOTLAND.

BY THE REV. MR. JONATHAN EDWARDS,

*President of the College of New Jersey, and Author of the late Inquiry  
into the Modern Notions of the Freedom of Will.*

REV. SIR,

THE intimations you have given me of the use which has, by some, been made of what I have written on the *Freedom of the Will*, &c. to vindicate what is said on the subject of liberty and necessity by the author of the *Essays on the Principles of Morality and Natural Religion*, has occasioned my reading this author's essay on that subject with particular care and attention. And I think it must be evident to every one that has read both his Essay and my Inquiry, that our schemes are exceeding reverse from each other. The wide difference appears particularly in the following things.

This author supposes, that such a necessity takes place with respect to all men's actions, as is inconsistent with liberty,\* and plainly denies that men have any liberty in acting. Thus, in p. 168, after he had been speaking of

\* Pages 160, 161, 164, 165, and many other places.

the necessity of our determinations, as connected with motives, he concludes with saying, "In short, if motives are not under our power or direction, which is confessedly the fact, we can at bottom have NO LIBERTY." Whereas, I have abundantly expressed it as my mind, that man, in his moral actions, has true liberty; and that the moral necessity, which universally takes place, is not in the least inconsistent with any thing that is properly called liberty, and with the utmost liberty that can be desired, or that can possibly exist or be conceived of.\*

I find that some are apt to think, that in that kind of moral necessity of men's volitions, which I suppose to be universal, at least some degree of liberty is denied; that though it be true I allow a sort of liberty, yet those who maintain a self-determining power in the will, and a liberty of contingency and indifference, hold a higher sort of freedom than I do: but I think this is certainly a great mistake.

Liberty, as I have explained it, in p. 40, and other places, is *the power, opportunity, or advantage, that any one has to do as he pleases, or conducting, IN ANY RESPECT, according to his pleasure;* without considering how his pleasure comes to be as it is. It is demonstrable, and I think has been demonstrated, that no necessity of men's volitions that I maintain is inconsistent with this liberty: and I think it is impossible for any one to rise higher in his conceptions of liberty than this. If any imagine they desire higher, and that they conceive of a higher and

\* Inquiry, pp. 40—45, 193, 194, 287—297, 310, 317, 336—346.

greater liberty than this, they are deceived, and delude themselves with confused, ambiguous words, instead of ideas. If any one should here say, "Yes, I conceive of a freedom above and beyond the liberty a man has of conducting in any respect as he pleases, viz. a liberty of *choosing* as he pleases." Such a one, if he reflected, would either blush or laugh at his own instance. For, is not choosing as he pleases, conducting, IN SOME RESPECT, according to his pleasure, and still without determining how he came by that pleasure? If he says, "Yes, I came by that pleasure by my own choice." If he be a man of common sense, by this time he will see his own absurdity: for he must needs see that his notion or conception, even of this liberty, does not contain any judgment or conception how he comes by that choice which first determines his pleasure, or which originally fixed his own will respecting the affair. Or if any shall say, "That a man exercises liberty in this, even in determining his own choice, but not as he pleases, or not in consequence of any choice, preference, or inclination of his own, but by a determination arising contingently out of a state of absolute indifference;" this is not rising higher in his conception of liberty; as such a determination of the will would not be a voluntary determination of it. Surely, he that places liberty in a power of doing something not according to his own choice, or from his choice, has not a higher notion of it, than he that places it in doing as he pleases, or acting from his own election. If there were a power in the mind to determine itself, but not by its choice or according to its pleasure, what advantage would

man derive from it? *man derive from it?*

it give; and what liberty worth contending for would be exercised in it? Therefore, no Arminian, Pelagian, or Epicurean, can rise higher in his conceptions of liberty than the notion of it which I have explained: which notion is apparently, perfectly consistent with the whole of that necessity of men's actions which I suppose takes place. And I scruple not to say, it is beyond all their wits to invent a higher notion, or form a higher imagination of liberty; let them talk of *sovereignty of the will, self-determining power, self-motion, self-direction, arbitrary decision, liberty ad utrumvis, power of choosing differently in given cases, &c. &c.* as long as they will. It is apparent that these men, in their strenuous affirmation, and dispute about these things, aim at they know not what, fighting for something they have no conception of, substituting a number of confused, unmeaning words, instead of things and instead of thoughts. They may be challenged clearly to explain what they would have: they never can answer the challenge.

The author of the Essays, through his whole essay on liberty and necessity, goes on that supposition, that in order to the being of real liberty, a man must have a freedom that is opposed to moral necessity: and yet he supposes, p. 175, that *such a liberty must signify a power in the mind of acting without and against motives, a power of acting without any view, purpose, or design, and even of acting in contradiction to our own desires and aversions, and to all our principles of action; and is an absurdity altogether inconsistent with a rational nature.* Now, who ever imagined such a liberty as this, a higher

sort or degree of freedom, than a liberty of following one's own views and purposes, and acting agreeable to his own inclinations and passions? Who will ever reasonably suppose that liberty, which is an absurdity altogether inconsistent with a rational nature, to be a kind of liberty above that which is consistent with the nature of a rational, intelligent, designing agent.

The author of the *Essays* seems to suppose such a necessity to take place as is inconsistent with some supposable POWER OF ARBITRARY CHOICE;\* or that there is some liberty conceivable, whereby men's own actions might be more PROPERLY IN THEIR POWER,† and by which events might be more DEPENDENT ON OURSELVES;‡-contrary to what I suppose to be evident, in my *Inquiry*.§ What way can be imagined, of our actions being more *in our power, from ourselves, or dependent on ourselves*, than their being from our power to fulfil our own choice, to act from our own inclination, pursue our own views, and execute our own designs? Certainly, to be able to act thus, is as properly having our actions in our power, and dependent on ourselves, as a being liable to be the subjects of acts and events, contingently and fortuitously, *without desire, view, purpose, or design, or any principle of action*, within ourselves; as we must be, according to this author's own declared sense, if our actions are performed with that liberty that is opposed to moral necessity.

This author seems every where to suppose,

\* Page 169.

† Pages 191, 195, 197, 206.

‡ Page 183.

§ Pages 409, 410.



that necessity, most properly so called, attends all men's actions; and that the terms *necessary*, *unavoidable*, *impossible*, &c. are equally applicable to the case of moral and natural necessity. In p. 173, he says, *The idea of necessary and unavoidable equally agrees, both to moral and physical necessity.* And in p. 184, *All things that fall out in the natural and moral world are alike necessary.* P. 174, *This inclination and choice is unavoidably caused or occasioned by the prevailing motive. In this lies the necessity of our actions, that, in such circumstances, it was impossible we could act otherwise.* He often expresses himself in like manner elsewhere, speaking in strong terms of men's actions as *unavoidable*, what they *cannot* forbear, having *no power* over their own actions, the order of them being *unalterably* fixed, and *inseparably* linked together, &c.\*

On the contrary, I have largely declared, that the connexion between antecedent things and consequent ones, which takes place with regard to the acts of men's wills, which is called moral necessity, is called by the name of *necessity* improperly; and that all such terms as *must*, *cannot*, *impossible*, *unable*, *irresistible*, *unavoidable*, *invincible*, &c. when applied here, are not applied in their proper signification, and are either used nonsensically, and with perfect insignificance, or in a sense quite diverse from their original and proper meaning, and their use in common speech:† and that

\* Pages 180, 188, 193, 194, 195, 197, 198, 199, 205, 206.

† Inquiry, pp. 19—29, 33, 34, 36, 38, 39, 241, 298—303, 306, 314—319, 411, 412.

such a necessity as attends the acts of men's wills, is more properly called *certainly* than *necessity*; it being no other than the certain connexion between the subject and predicate of the proposition which affirms their existence.\*

Agreeable to what is observed in my Inquiry,† I think it is evidently owing to a strong prejudice in persons' minds, arising from an insensible habitual perversion and misapplication of such-like terms as *necessary, impossible, unable, unavoidable, invincible, &c.* that they are ready to think, that to suppose a certain connexion of men's volitions, without any foregoing motives or inclinations, or any preceding moral influence whatsoever, is truly and properly to suppose such a strong irrefragable chain of causes and effects, as stands in the way of, and makes utterly vain, opposite desires and endeavours, like immovable and impenetrable mountains of brass; and impedes our liberty like walls of adamant, gates of brass, and bars of iron: whereas, all such representations suggest ideas as far from the truth as the east is from the west. Nothing that I maintain, supposes that men are at all hindered by any fatal necessity, from doing, and even willing and choosing, as they please, with full freedom; yea, with the highest degree of liberty that ever was thought of, or that ever could possibly enter into the heart of any man to conceive. I know it is in vain to endeavour to make some persons believe this, or at least fully and steadily to believe it: for if it be demonstrated to

\* Inquiry, pp. 24—27.

† Pp. 299—303.

them, still the old prejudice remains, which has been long fixed by the use of the terms *necessary, must, cannot, impossible, &c.*; the association with these terms of certain ideas inconsistent with liberty, is not broken, and the judgment is powerfully warped by it; as a thing that has been long bent and grown stiff, if it be straightened, will return to its former curvity again and again.

The author of the *Essays* most manifestly supposes, that if men had the truth concerning the real necessity of all their actions clearly in view, they would not appear to themselves, or one another, as at all praiseworthy or culpable, or under any moral obligation, or accountable for their actions:\* which supposes that men are not to be blamed or praised for any of their actions, and are not under any obligations, nor are truly accountable for any thing they do, by reason of this necessity; which is very contrary to what I have endeavoured to prove throughout the *third part* of my *Inquiry*. I humbly conceive it is there shewn, that this is so far from the truth, that the moral necessity of men's actions, which truly take place, is requisite to the being of virtue and vice, or any thing praiseworthy or culpable: that the liberty of indifference and contingency, which is advanced in opposition to that necessity, is inconsistent with the being of these; as it would suppose that men are not determined in what they do by any virtuous or vicious principles, nor act from any motives, intentions, or aims whatsoever; or have any end, either good

\* Pages 207, 209, and other places.

or bad, in acting. And is it not remarkable, that this author should suppose, that, in order to men's actions truly having any desert, they must be performed *without any view, purpose, design, or desire, or any principle of action, or any thing agreeable to a rational nature?* As it will appear that he does, if we compare pp. 206 and 207 with p. 175. X

The author of the Essays supposes, that God has deeply implanted in man's nature a strong and invincible apprehension, or feeling, as he calls it, of a liberty, and contingency of his own actions, opposite to that necessity which truly attends them; and which in truth does not agree with real fact,\* is not agreeable to strict philosophic truth,† is contradictory to the truth of things,‡ and which truth contradicts,|| not tallying with the real plan:§ and that, therefore, such feelings are deceitful,\*\* are in reality of the delusive kind.†† He speaks of them as a wise delusion,‡‡ as nice artificial feelings, merely that conscience may have a commanding power: |||| meaning plainly, that these feelings are a cunning artifice of the Author of nature, to make men believe they are free, when they are not. §§ He supposes that, by these feelings, the moral world has a disguised appearance. ¶ And other things of this kind he says. He supposes, that all self-approbation, and all remorse of conscience, all commendation or condemnation of ourselves or others, all sense of desert, and all that is connected with this way

\* Page 200. † Page 152. ‡ Page 183. || Page 186.  
§ Page 205. \*\* Pages 203, 204, 211. †† Page 183.  
‡‡ Page 209. |||| Page 211. §§ Page 153. ¶ Page 214.

of thinking, all the ideas which at present are suggested by the words *ought*, *should*, arise from this delusion, and would entirely vanish without it.\*

All which is very contrary to what I have abundantly insisted on and endeavoured to demonstrate in my Inquiry; where I have largely shewn, that it is agreeable to the natural sense of mankind, that the moral necessity or certainty that attends men's actions is consistent with praise and blame, reward and punishment;† and that it is agreeable to our natural notions, that moral evil, with its desert of dislike and abhorrence, and all its other ill-deservings, consists in a certain deformity in the nature of the dispositions and acts of the heart, and not in the evil of something else, diverse from these, supposed to be their cause or occasion.‡

I might well ask here, whether any one is to be found in the world of mankind, who is conscious to a sense or feeling, naturally and deeply rooted in his mind, that, in order to a man's performing any action that is praise or blame-worthy, he must exercise a liberty that implies and signifies a power of acting without any motive, view, design, desire, or principle of action? For such a liberty, this author supposes, that must be which is opposed to moral necessity, as I have already observed once and again. Supposing a man should actually do good, independent of desire, aim, inducement,

\* Pages 160, 194, 199, 205, 206, 207, 209.

† Inquiry, Part IV. sect. iv. throughout.

‡ Idem, Part IV. sect. i. throughout, and pp. 409—411.



principle, or end; is it a dictate of invincible natural sense, that his act is more meritorious or praiseworthy, than if he had performed it for some *good end*, and had been governed in it by *good principles* and *motives*? and so I might ask, on the contrary, with respect to evil actions.\*

The author of the *Essays* supposes that the liberty without necessity, which we have a natural feeling of, implies *contingence*: and, speaking of this contingency, he sometimes calls it by the name of *chance*. And it is evident, that his notion of it, or rather what he says about it, implies things happening *loosely, fortuitously, by accident, and without a cause*.† Now, I conceive the slightest reflection may be sufficient to satisfy any one, that such a contingency of men's actions, according to our natural sense, is so far from being essential to the morality or merit of those actions, that it would destroy it; and that, on the contrary, the dependence of our actions on such causes, as inward inclinations, incitements, and ends, is essential to the being of it. Natural sense teaches men, when they see any thing done by others of a good or evil tendency, to inquire what their intention was; what principles and views they were moved by, in order to judge how far they are to be justified or condemned; and not to determine, that, in order to their being approved or blamed at all, the action must be performed altogether fortuitously, proceeding from nothing, arising from

\* See this matter illustrated in my *Inquiry*, Part IV. sect. iv. especially pp. 312—314.

† Pages 156—159, 177, 178, 181, 183—185.

no cause. Concerning this matter, I have fully expressed my mind in the Inquiry.\*

If the liberty, which we have a natural sense of as necessary to desert, consists in the mind's self-determination, without being determined by previous inclination or motive, then indifference is essential to it, yea, absolute indifference; as is observed in my Inquiry.† But men naturally have no notion of any such liberty as this, as essential to the morality or demerit of their actions; but, on the contrary, such a liberty, if it were possible, would be inconsistent with our natural notions of desert, as is largely shewn in the Inquiry.‡ If it be agreeable to natural sense, that men must be indifferent in determining their own actions; then, according to the same, the more they are determined by inclination, either good or bad, the less they have of desert: the more good actions are performed from good disposition, the less praiseworthy; and the more evil deeds are from evil dispositions, the less culpable; and, in general, the more men's actions are from their hearts, the less they are to be commended or condemned: which all must know is very contrary to natural sense.

Moral necessity is owing to the power and government of the inclination of the heart, either habitual or occasional, excited by motive: but, according to natural and common sense, the more a man does any thing with full inclination of heart, the more is it to be charged to his account for his condemnation, if it be an ill action,

\* Pages 267—270, 276, 312, 313, and other places.

† Pages 92—94. ‡ Especially in Part III. sect. vi. and vii.

and the more to be ascribed to him for his praise, if it be good.

If the mind were determined to evil actions by contingency, from a state of indifference, then, either there would be no fault in them, or else the fault would be in being so perfectly indifferent, that the mind was equally liable to a bad or good determination. And if this indifference be liberty, then the very essence of the blame or fault would lie in the liberty itself, or the wickedness would, primarily and summarily, lie in being a free agent. If there were no fault in being indifferent, then there would be no fault in the determination's being agreeable to such a state of indifference: that is, there could no fault be reasonably found with this, viz. that opposite determinations actually happen to take place *indifferently*, sometimes good and sometimes bad, as contingency governs and decides. And if it be a fault to be indifferent to good and evil, then such indifference is no indifference to good and evil, but is a determination to evil, or to a fault; and such an indifferent disposition would be an evil, faulty disposition, tendency, or determination of mind. So inconsistent are these notions of liberty, as essential to praise or blame.

The author of the *Essays* supposes men's natural delusive sense of a liberty of contingency, to be, in truth, the foundation of all the labour, care, and industry of mankind;\* and that if men's *practical ideas had been formed on the plan of universal necessity, the ignava ratio,*

\* Page 184.

*the inactive doctrine of the Stoics, would have followed; and that there would have been no ROOM for forethought about futurity, or any sort of industry and care;\** plainly implying, that in this case men would see and know that all their industry and care signified nothing, was in vain, and to no purpose, or of no benefit; events being fixed in an irrefragable chain, and not at all DEPENDING on their care and endeavour; as he explains himself, particularly, in the instance of men's use of means to prolong life: † not only very contrary to what I largely maintain in my Inquiry, ‡ but also very inconsistently with his own scheme, in what he supposes of the ends for which God has so deeply implanted this deceitful feeling in man's nature; in which he manifestly supposes men's care and industry not to be in vain and of no benefit, but of great use, yea, of absolute necessity, in order to the obtaining the most important ends and necessary purposes of human life, and to fulfil the ends of action to the BEST ADVANTAGE; as he largely declares.§ Now, how shall these things be reconciled? That, if men had *a clear view of real truth*, they would see that there was no ROOM for their care and industry, because they would see it to be in vain, and of no benefit; and yet that God, by having a clear view of real truth, sees that their being excited to care and industry will be of excellent use to mankind, and greatly for the benefit of the world, yea, absolutely necessary in order to it:

\* Page 189.

† Pages 184, 185.

‡ Especially Part IV. sect. v.

§ Pages 188—192, and in many other places.

and that therefore the great wisdom and goodness of God to men appears, in artfully contriving to put them on care and industry for their good, which good could not be obtained without them; and yet both these things are maintained at once, and in the same sentences and words by this author. The very reason he gives, why God has put this deceitful feeling into men, contradicts and destroys itself; that God in his great goodness to men gave them such a deceitful feeling, because it was very useful and necessary for them, and greatly for their benefit, or excites them to care and industry for their own good, which care and industry is useful and necessary to that end: and yet the very thing that this great benefit of care and industry is given as a reason for, is God's deceiving men in this very point, in making them think their care and industry to be of great benefit to them, when indeed it is of none at all; and if they saw the real truth, they would see all their endeavours to be wholly useless, that there was NO ROOM for them, and that the event does not at all DEPEND upon them.\*

And besides, what this author says, plainly implies (as appears by what has been already observed), that it is necessary men should be deceived, by being made to believe that future events are contingent, and their own future actions free, with such a freedom as signifies that their actions are not the fruit of their own desires, or designs, but altogether contingent, fortuitous, and without a cause. But how

\* Pages 188, 189, &c.



should a notion of liberty, consisting in accident or loose chance, encourage care and industry? I should think it would rather entirely discourage every thing of this nature. For surely, if our actions do not depend on our desires and designs, then they do not depend on our endeavours, flowing from our desires and designs. This author himself seems to suppose, that if men had indeed such a liberty of contingency, it would render all endeavours to determine or move men's future volitions in vain: he says, that, in this case, *to exhort, to instruct, to promise, or to threaten*, would be to no purpose.\* Why? Because (as he himself gives the reason) *then our will would be capricious and arbitrary, and we should be thrown loose altogether, and our arbitrary power could do us good or ill only by accident*. But if such a loose fortuitous state would render vain others' endeavours upon us, for the same reason would it make useless our endeavours on ourselves: for events that are truly contingent and accidental, and altogether loose from and independent of all foregoing causes, are independent on every foregoing cause within ourselves, as well as in others.

I suppose that it is so far from being true, that our minds are naturally possessed with a notion of such liberty as this, so strongly that it is impossible to root it out, that indeed men have no such notion of liberty at all, and that it is utterly impossible, by any means whatsoever, to implant or introduce such a notion into the mind. As no such notions as imply self-contradiction and self-abolition can subsist

\* Pages 178, 213, 214.

in the mind, as I have shewn in my Inquiry;\* I think a mature, sensible consideration of the matter, sufficient to satisfy any one, that even the greatest and most learned advocates themselves for liberty of indifference and self-determination, have no such notion; and that indeed they mean something wholly inconsistent with, and directly subversive of, what they strenuously affirm, and earnestly contend for. By a man's having a power of determining his own will they plainly mean a power of determining his will as he pleases, or as he chooses; which supposes that the mind has a choice, prior to its going about to confirm any action or determination to it. And if they mean that they determine even the original or prime choice, by their own pleasure or choice, as the thing that causes and directs it; I scruple not most boldly to affirm, that they speak they know not what, and that of which they have no manner of idea; because no such contradictory notion can come into, or have a moment's subsistence in, the mind of any man living, as an original or first choice being caused, or brought into being, by choice. After all, they say, they have no higher or other conception of liberty, than that vulgar notion of it, which I contend for, viz. a man's having power or opportunity to do as he chooses: or if they had a notion that every act of choice was determined by choice, yet it would destroy their notion of the contingency of choice; for then no one act of choice would arise contingently, or from a state

\* Pages 266, 267. See also pages 51, 58, 59, 75, 76, 81, 189—194, 290, 291, 308—311.

of indifference, but every individual act, in all the series, would arise from foregoing bias or preference, and from a cause predetermining and fixing its existence; which introduces at once such a chain of causes and effects, each preceding link decisively fixing the following, as they would by all means avoid.

And such kind of delusion and self-contradiction as this, does not arise in men's minds by nature; it is not owing to any natural feeling which God has strongly fixed in the mind and nature of man; but to false philosophy, and strong prejudice, from a deceitful abuse of words. It is *artificial*; not in the sense of the author of the Essays, supposing it to be a deceitful artifice of God; but artificial as opposed to natural, and as owing to an artificial, deceitful management of terms, to darken and confound the mind. Men have no such thing when they first begin to exercise reason; but must have a great deal of time to blind themselves with metaphysical confusion, before they can embrace and rest in such definitions of liberty as are given, and imagine they understand them.

On the whole, I humbly conceive, that whosoever will give himself the trouble of weighing what I have offered to consideration in my Inquiry, must be sensible, that such a moral necessity of men's actions as I maintain, is not at all inconsistent with any liberty that any creature has, or can have, as a free, accountable, moral agent, and subject of moral government; and that this moral necessity is so far from being inconsistent with praise and blame, and the benefit and use of men's own care and

labour, that, on the contrary, it implies the very ground and reason, why men's actions are to be ascribed to them as their own, in that manner as to infer desert, praise and blame, approbation and remorse of conscience, reward and punishment; and that it establishes the moral system of the universe, and God's moral government, in every respect, with the proper use of motives, exhortations, commands, counsels, promises, and threatenings; and the use and benefit of endeavours, care, and industry: and that therefore there is no need that the strict philosophic truth should be at all concealed from men; no danger in *contemplation* and *profound discovery* in these things. So far from this, that the truth in this matter is of vast importance, and extremely needful to be known; and that the more clearly and perfectly the real fact is known, and the more constantly it is in view, the better; and, particularly that the clear and full knowledge of that, which is the true system of the universe, in these respects, would greatly establish the doctrines which teach the true Christian scheme of Divine administration in the city of God, and the Gospel of Jesus Christ, in its most important articles; and that these things never can be well established, and the opposite errors, so subversive of the whole Gospel, which at this day so greatly and generally prevail, be well confuted, or the arguments by which they are maintained answered, till these points are settled: while this is not done, it is, to me, beyond doubt, that the friends of those great Gospel truths will but poorly maintain their controversy with the adversaries of those truths: they will be

obliged often to dodge, shuffle, hide, and turn their backs; and the latter will have a strong fort, from whence they never can be driven, and weapons to use, which those whom they oppose will find no shield to screen themselves from; and they will always puzzle, confound, and keep under the friends of sound doctrine; and glory and vaunt themselves in their advantage over them; and carry their affairs with a high hand, as they have done already for a long time past.

I conclude, sir, with asking your pardon for troubling you with so much said in vindication of myself from the imputation of advancing a scheme of necessity, of a like nature with that of the author of the “*Essays on the Principles of Morality and Natural Religion*.” Considering that what I have said is not only in vindication of myself, but, as I think, of the most important articles of moral philosophy and religion; I trust in what I know of your candour, that you will excuse

Your obliged friend and brother,

J. EDWARDS.

*Stockbridge, July 25, 1757.*

THE END.

LONDON:

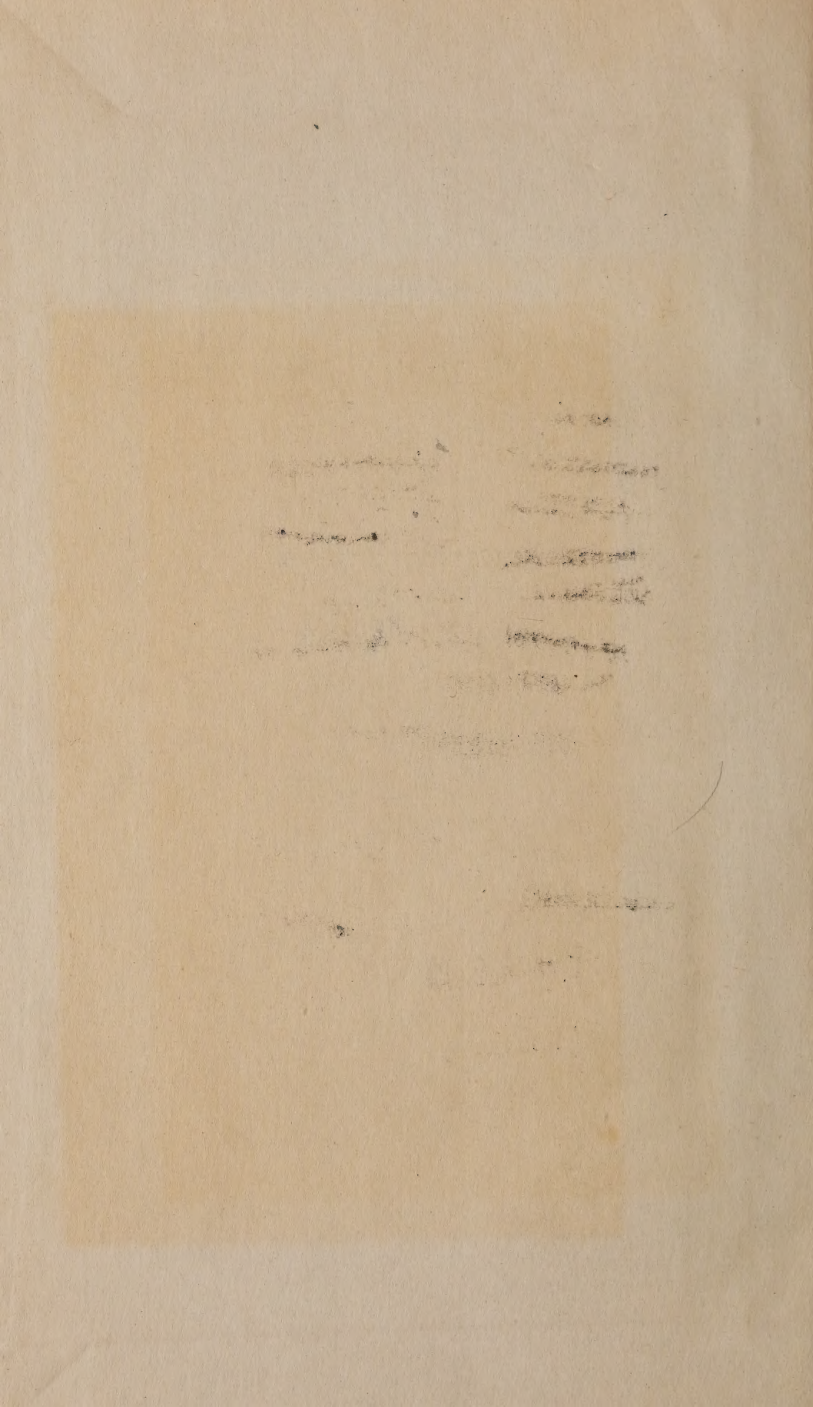
J. MOVES, TOOK'S COURT, CHANCERY LANE.











# DATE DUE

<del>MAR 1 1973</del>			
<del>MAY 2 1971</del>		<del>FEB 07 2000</del>	
<del>SEP 21 82</del>			
<del>MAY 2 9 1995</del>		<del>MAR 13 2000</del>	
<del>SEP 26 1997</del>			
<del>APR 30 1990</del>		<del>MAY 5 2001</del>	
<del>MAY 26 1990</del>			
<del>JUN 1 1997</del>		<del>MAY 11 2001</del>	
		<del>DEC 14 2001</del>	
<del>MAY 23 1993</del>		<del>JAN 11 2002</del>	
<del>SEP 21 1991</del>		<del>FEB 08 2002</del>	
<del>JUN 15 1994</del>			
<del>JUN 15 1995</del>			
<del>JUN 15 1996</del>			
GAYLORD			PRINTED IN U.S.A.



Princeton Theological Seminary-Speer Library



1 1012 01013 6945